

Class PS 92

Book P 3

Copyright No. 1916

COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT.

Pul down a Dumban.  
A Com Song.



INTRODUCTION  
TO  
AMERICAN LITERATURE  
INCLUDING  
ILLUSTRATIVE SELECTIONS  
*WITH NOTES*

*F. N. Painter*  
BY  
F. V. N. PAINTER, A.M., D.D., LITT.D.  
PROFESSOR OF EDUCATION IN ROANOKE COLLEGE  
AUTHOR OF "A HISTORY OF EDUCATION," "HISTORY OF ENGLISH LITERATURE," "INTRODUCTION TO ENGLISH LITERATURE," "ELEMENTARY GUIDE TO LITERARY CRITICISM," "POETS OF THE SOUTH," "POETS OF VIRGINIA," ETC.

*LATEST REVISED EDITION*

SIBLEY & COMPANY  
BOSTON CHICAGO  
1916

P 8192  
P 2 P 3  
1916

COPYRIGHT, 1897  
BY LEACH, SHEWELL & SANBORN

COPYRIGHT, 1903, 1911, 1916  
BY SIBLEY & COMPANY

~~\$1.36~~

DEC 18 1916

© CLA 446886

210.11

## PREFACE

IN sending out a new and revised edition of his Introduction to American Literature, the author wishes, first of all, to express his gratitude to the teachers who in all parts of our country have given a cordial reception to his work. In the present revision he has endeavored to make the book still more worthy of their favor.

The present revision has improved the book in several important particulars. A considerable amount of new material has been added to the Second National Period. The text has been reset; and, most noteworthy of all the improvements, a large number of effective new illustrations has been introduced.

The experience of a great number of teachers has confirmed the author's judgment of years ago that literature cannot be learned from the ordinary manuals, which present only brief biographical facts and fossilized critical estimates. Works of this character are useful for reference, and may possess some value for training the memory, at least till the final examinations are over; but they are feeble instruments of literary culture, which after all is the principal aim in teaching literature.

This revised edition, like the work in its original form, aims to introduce the student to American literature itself, with such helps as will give him an intelligent appreciation of its nature and value. The General Survey of each period presents briefly the social and political conditions under which the various authors wrote. The sketches of the representative writers give with considerable fulness the leading

biographical facts, together with typical extracts and critical estimates of their works. The selections for special study contained in the Second Part, which are chosen to illustrate the distinguishing characteristics of each author, are supplied with explanatory notes to clear up obscurities. In this way, it may be fairly claimed, the student is put in a position to gain a clear and substantial knowledge of our best authors.

In pursuing this method, the student gets something more than a substantial knowledge of our literature. He is trained in correct methods of literary study. His literary taste is developed as he critically examines some of the masterpieces of our prose and poetry; and in his subsequent studies in literature he will be capable, in some measure at least, of forming an intelligent and independent judgment.

The book claims to be nothing more than an introduction to American literature. It is not designed to be a comprehensive manual of reference, though comparatively few writers worthy of note have been omitted from the lists prefixed to each period. It considers at length only the well-defined periods and representative writers. It thus follows what is known as the intensive method.

In using the book in the classroom, for which it is chiefly intended, it is not necessary to restrict the student to the texts supplied. If time permits and the proper books of reference are at hand, the teacher may profitably supplement what is here presented by assigning subjects for the student's independent investigation. To this end a list of topics, which is intended to serve merely the purpose of suggestion, has been appended to the several periods and the discussion of the principal writers.

F. V. N. PAINTER.

ROANOKE COLLEGE,

May 12, 1916.

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	I
 <b>I</b> 	
FIRST COLONIAL PERIOD . . . . .	9
CAPTAIN JOHN SMITH . . . . .	24
COTTON MATHER . . . . .	30
 <b>II</b> 	
SECOND COLONIAL PERIOD . . . . .	39
BENJAMIN FRANKLIN . . . . .	51
JONATHAN EDWARDS . . . . .	62
 <b>III</b> 	
REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD . . . . .	73
THOMAS JEFFERSON . . . . .	89
ALEXANDER HAMILTON . . . . .	100
 <b>IV</b> 	
FIRST NATIONAL PERIOD . . . . .	113
WASHINGTON IRVING . . . . .	147
JAMES FENIMORE COOPER . . . . .	162
WILLIAM CULLEN BRYANT . . . . .	175
EDGAR ALLAN POE . . . . .	192
RALPH WALDO EMERSON . . . . .	208
NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE . . . . .	227
HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW . . . . .	242
JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL . . . . .	261
JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER . . . . .	277
OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES . . . . .	293
 <b>V</b> 	
SECOND NATIONAL PERIOD . . . . .	307

## ILLUSTRATIVE SELECTIONS WITH NOTES

	PAGE
<b>CAPTAIN JOHN SMITH —</b>	
Captured by the Indians . . . . .	387
<b>COTTON MATHER —</b>	
<i>General History of New England</i> Magnalia Christi: The Voyage to New England . . . . .	394
<b>BENJAMIN FRANKLIN —</b>	
Preliminary Address to Poor Richard's Almanac . . . . .	403
<b>JONATHAN EDWARDS —</b>	
Resolutions . . . . .	414
<i>Inquiry into the Freedom of the Will</i>	
<b>THOMAS JEFFERSON —</b>	
Declaration of Independence . . . . .	423
<b>ALEXANDER HAMILTON —</b>	
The Federalist . . . . .	432
<b>WASHINGTON IRVING —</b>	
Rip Van Winkle . . . . .	439
The Broken Heart . . . . .	454
<b>JAMES FENIMORE COOPER —</b>	
Escape from a Panther . . . . .	464
<i>Leaves of Grass</i>	
<b>WILLIAM CULLEN BRYANT —</b>	
Thanatopsis . . . . .	472
To a Waterfowl . . . . .	474
A Forest Hymn . . . . .	475
To the Fringed Gentian . . . . .	478
The Death of the Flowers . . . . .	479
The Evening Wind . . . . .	480
<b>EDGAR ALLAN POE —</b>	
The Raven . . . . .	487
The Masque of the Red Death . . . . .	490
<b>RALPH WALDO EMERSON —</b>	
Art . . . . .	501

## CONTENTS

vii

## NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE —

	PAGE
The Gray Champion . . . . .	514
Fancy's Show-Box . . . . .	521

## HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW —

A Psalm of Life . . . . .	530
Footsteps of Angels . . . . .	531
The Skeleton in Armor . . . . .	532
The Arsenal at Springfield . . . . .	537
The Building of the Ship . . . . .	538

## JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL —

What Mr. Robinson Thinks . . . . .	555
The Present Crisis . . . . .	557
The Vision of Sir Launfal . . . . .	560

## JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER —

Memories . . . . .	576
The Ship-Builders . . . . .	578
Barclay of Ury . . . . .	580
Maud Muller . . . . .	584
Tauler . . . . .	588

## OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES —

Old Ironsides . . . . .	594
The Last Leaf . . . . .	595
The Height of the Ridiculous . . . . .	596
The Chambered Nautilus . . . . .	597
Contentment . . . . .	598
The Deacon's Masterpiece . . . . .	600

## BIBLIOGRAPHY . . . . .

609

## INDEX . . . . .

613



# AMERICAN LITERATURE

---

## *INTRODUCTION*

**1. Importance of Literature.** — No other study is more important than that of literature. It not only supplies the mind with knowledge, but also refines it in thought and feeling. Literature embodies the best thought of the world, a knowledge and appreciation of which is the essential element of culture. Of all literature, that of our native or adopted country stands in closest relation to us, and naturally possesses for us the greatest interest.

**2. Comprehensive Meaning.** — The term literature needs to be carefully considered, and its general and its restricted meaning clearly comprehended. In its widest sense, literature may be regarded as including the aggregate body of printed matter in the world. It is thus a record of the acts, thoughts, and emotions of the human family. Its magnitude renders it absolutely impossible for any man ever to become acquainted with more than a very small part of it. The largest libraries, notably that of the British Museum and the *Bibliothèque Nationale* of Paris, number each more than a million volumes.

**3. National Literature.** — This general or universal literature, of which we have just spoken, is obviously made up of national literatures. A national literature is composed of the literary productions of a particular nation. After reaching

a state of civilization, every nation expresses its thoughts and feelings in writings. Thus we have the literature of Greece, of Rome, of England, of America, and of other nations both ancient and modern.

**4. Restricted Sense.** — But the word literature has also a restricted meaning, which it is important to grasp. In any literary production we may distinguish between the *thoughts* that are presented, and the *manner* in which they are presented. We may say, for example, “The sun is rising;” or, ascending to a higher plane of thought and emotion, we may present the same fact in the language of Thomson: —

“But yonder comes the powerful King of Day,  
Rejoicing in the east. The lessening cloud,  
The kindling azure, and the mountain’s brow  
Illumed with fluid gold, his near approach  
Betoken glad.”<sup>1</sup>

**5. Artistic Form.** — It is thus apparent that the interest and value of literature are largely dependent upon the manner or form in which the facts are presented. In its restricted sense, literature includes only those works that are polished or artistic in form. The classic works of a literature are those which present ideas of general and permanent interest in a highly finished or artistic manner.

**6. Three Potent Influences.** — Literature is influenced or determined by whatever affects the thought and feeling of a people. Among the most potent influences that determine the character of a literature, whether taken in a broad or in a restricted sense, are *race*, *epoch*, and *surroundings*. This fact should be well borne in mind, for it renders a philosophy of literature possible. We cannot fully understand any literature, nor justly estimate it, without an acquaintance with the

<sup>1</sup> The Seasons. Summer, line 81.

national traits of the writers, the general character of the age in which they lived, and the physical and social conditions by which they were surrounded. This fact shows the intimate relation between literature and history.

**7. An American Literature.** — It has been questioned whether we have an American literature. But there is no reasonable ground for doubt. A fair survey of the facts will show that the literature of this country is distinctive in its thought and feeling. Our best works are not an echo of the literature of England, but a new and valuable contribution to the literature of the world. The best of Irving's writings, the tales of Hawthorne, the "Evangeline" and "Hiawatha" of Longfellow, not to mention many others, are filled with American scenery, American thought, and American character.

**8. Work of First Two Centuries.** — During the first two centuries of our history, while Shakespeare, Bacon, Milton, Dryden, Pope, Addison, Johnson, and Goldsmith were adding lustre to English letters, our country produced but few works that deserve a place in classic literature. It could hardly have been otherwise. Our people were devoting their energies chiefly to the great task of subduing a wild continent, building towns and cities, producing mechanical inventions, conquering political independence, and establishing a social order based on the principle of human equality and human freedom. These achievements are no less important than the production of an elegant literature, and really form the basis upon which the arts and sciences naturally rest. Material prosperity and political independence bring the leisure and culture that foster letters. It was so in the age of Pericles, of Augustus, of Elizabeth, and of Louis XIV.

**9. Brief Period of American Literature.** — The literature of America is the youngest of national literatures. While we

must seek its beginnings in the early part of the seventeenth century, it is scarcely more than two generations ago that our literature entered upon a vigorous development. Though there are two great names in the eighteenth century, — those of Franklin and Edwards, — our polite literature really begins with Irving, Bryant, and Cooper, in the first quarter of the nineteenth century. This is a recent date in comparison with the literature of the leading nations of Europe.

**10. Course of Other Literatures.** — The literary history of England extends through no fewer than twelve centuries; and already five hundred years ago it had produced in Chaucer one of the world's great writers. The literary history of France covers an equally extended period; and already in the Middle Ages it counted several famous epics. In Germany the great "Nibelungen Lied" was composed in the twelfth century. While it is true that we are "heirs of all the ages," and as such have inherited the literary treasures of the past, the growth of our literature has been too short to realize the fulness of power that will come with greater maturity of age.

**11. Future Development.** — During the nineteenth century, American literature had a remarkable development. In various departments — history, criticism, poetry — it fairly vied with that of the mother country. Yet our highest literary achievements probably lie in the future. With a territory capable of supporting a population of five hundred millions, the task of the American people is not yet half accomplished. Material interests and social problems will continue, it may be for a long time, to absorb a large part of the best talent of our land. We are at present living our epic poem, — the greatest the world has seen. But after this period of ardent striving and conflict is past, our golden age

will come ; and, having time to listen, we shall, perhaps, encourage some Homer or Milton to sing.

**12. Favorable Conditions.** — No other country seems to present more favorable conditions for the development of a great literature. The most interesting factor in literature is the human element, — the presentation of the thoughts, emotions, and experiences of men. As literature naturally reflects national life, the nature of this element depends upon the culture and experience of the people. Nowhere else has life been more varied and more intense than in America ; and nowhere else, in the years to come, will it afford richer and more picturesque materials.

**13. A Branch of English Literature.** — American literature is an offshoot of English literature, and shares the life of the parent stock. It uses the same language ; and its earliest writers were colonists who had received their education in England. The culture of this country is distinctively English in origin and character ; the differences are but modifications growing out of the new environment. We owe our laws and our religion chiefly to England ; and the political independence achieved through the Revolution did not withdraw us from the humanizing influence of English letters.

**14. Broadened Literary Culture.** — In recent years, through the importation of French, German, and Russian books, our literary culture, as in other progressive countries, has become more cosmopolitan in character. But before that time, our reading was confined almost exclusively to English authors. The great English classics, from Chaucer down, we justly claim as our natural heritage. The leading movements in the literary history of England have been reflected in America. In many cases a similarity of thought and style may be traced, as between Goldsmith and Irving, Scott and Cooper, Carlyle

and Emerson. But this resemblance has not risen from feeble or conscious imitation ; it has not interfered with the individuality of our authors, nor impaired the excellence of their works.

**15. Colonial and Revolutionary Periods.** — The literary history of our country may be divided into several periods, the general character of which is more or less sharply defined, though the limits naturally shade into one another by almost imperceptible degrees. The first period, which includes nearly the whole of the seventeenth century, may be called the First Colonial Period. The principal productions of this period represent, not American, but English, culture, and are concerned chiefly with a description of the New World, with the story of its colonization, or with a discussion of the theological questions that grew out of the great Protestant Reformation in Europe. The next period, beginning with the eighteenth century, and extending to the Revolution, may be known as the Second Colonial Period. In the literature of this period, American life is reflected more fully, and two writers, Franklin and Edwards, stand out with great prominence. Then follows what we may designate the Revolutionary Period, extending from the Revolution to the War of 1812. The dominant influence in this period was the establishment of a new and independent government. Here belong the names of Washington, Jefferson, Hamilton, Madison, and Jay.

**16. Two National Periods.** — This was followed by an era of literary bloom, which may be characterized as the First National Period. It covers the time lying between the War of 1812 and the Civil War, and furnishes the beginning of what is called polite literature, or *belles-lettres*, in this country. To this period belong the greatest names of our literary history, — Irving, Cooper, Bryant, Hawthorne, Longfellow, and others.

Lastly, we have the present period, which for convenience may be called the Second National Period. It begins with the Civil War, and exhibits a broad cosmopolitan tendency. Though it has produced but few writers of pre-eminent ability, it is characterized by unexampled literary activity, and by great excellence of literary form.



## FIRST COLONIAL PERIOD

---

### REPRESENTATIVE WRITERS

JOHN SMITH      COTTON MATHER

(See sketches at the close of this section.)

### OTHER WRITERS

#### VIRGINIA

WILLIAM STRACHEY, born 1585; secretary of the Virginia Colony 1610-1612. Wrote "Wracke and Redemption of Sir Thomas Gates," and "Historie of Travale into Virginia."

GEORGE SANDYS (1577-1644). Removed to America in 1621, and became treasurer of the Virginia Colony. Translated in Virginia ten books of Ovid's "Metamorphoses." (See text.)

ALEXANDER WHITAKER (1588 after 1613). An Episcopal clergyman who came to Virginia in 1611. He baptized Pocahontas, and officiated at her marriage. He wrote "Good Newes from Virginia," one of the first books written in the colony.

#### NEW ENGLAND

WILLIAM BRADFORD (1588-1657). One of the Mayflower colonists, governor of Plymouth for many years. "History of Plymouth Plantation" from 1620 to 1647. "The father of American history."

JOHN WINTHROP (1588-1649). Came to Massachusetts in 1630, and was governor for many years. "History of New England" from 1630 to 1649. A journal of every-day happenings.

JOHN COTTON (1585-1652). Educated at Trinity College, Cambridge. Migrated to Boston in 1633, and became pastor of the First Church. A distinguished preacher. "Singing of Psalms a Gospel Ordinance."

EDWARD JOHNSON (1599-1672). Came to New England in 1630. Was a representative in the General Court or legislature of Massachusetts for several terms. Author of "Wonder-working Providence of Zion's Saviour in New England."

JOHN ELIOT (1604-1690). Graduated at Cambridge in 1623, and came to Boston in 1631. "The Apostle to the Indians," into whose language he translated the Bible. In 1660 he published, in England, "The Christian Commonwealth; or, The Civil Policy of the Rising Kingdom of Jesus Christ."

ANNE BRADSTREET (1612-1672). Wife of Governor Bradstreet. The earliest writer of verse in America. Her first volume was published in England under the title, "The Tenth Muse lately Sprung up in America." (See text.)

INCREASE MATHER (1638-1723). Graduated at Harvard in 1656; took his M.A. degree at Trinity College, Dublin. Pastor of Second Church in Boston; for sixteen years (1685-1701) president of Harvard College. His publications number one hundred and sixty.

#### CONTEMPORARY WRITERS IN ENGLAND

SHAKESPEARE (1564-1616); BACON (1561-1626); MILTON (1608-1674); DRYDEN (1631-1700); RALEIGH (1552-1618); BEN JONSON (1573-1637); JEREMY TAYLOR (1613-1667); EDMUND WALLER (1605-1687); ABRAHAM COWLEY (1618-1667); FRANCIS QUARLES (1592-1644); JOHN BUNYAN (1628-1688); SAMUEL BUTLER (1612-1680).

# I

## *FIRST COLONIAL PERIOD*

(1607-1689)

**17. Colonization of the New World.** — The English were slow in establishing colonies in the New World. While Spain was subduing Mexico and a large part of South America, they remained comparatively inactive. The French were ahead of them in Canada. But when at last the English undertook the work of colonization, the Anglo-Saxon vigor asserted its superiority, and took possession of the fairest part of the American continent. From insignificant and unpromising beginnings, the English colonies rapidly developed into a great nation, rivalling the mother country not only in commercial interests, but also in science and literature.

**18. First English Settlements.** — The English occupation of this country began early in the seventeenth century with the establishment of two colonies, which were as different in character as they were widely removed from each other in space. The first of these colonies was founded in 1607 at Jamestown in Virginia; the other in 1620 at Plymouth in New England.

---

### CONTEMPORARY EVENTS IN ENGLAND

James I, 1603-1625.

The Restoration, 1660.

Charles I, 1625-1649.

Charles II, 1660-1685.

Civil War, 1642-1646.

James II, 1685-1688.

The Commonwealth, 1649-1660.

The Revolution, 1688.

Accession of William and Mary, 1689.

Both settlements, in their subsequent development, were destined to play an important part in the political and literary history of our country. In a measure they represented two different tendencies in politics and religion: the Virginia



JAMESTOWN, VIRGINIA, IN 1622

colonists upholding the Church of England and standing by the king; the New England colonists favoring a change in the English Church, and adhering to the Parliament. The one was thus conservative; the other, progressive,—characteristics that are perceptible at the present day.

## i. Virginia

**19. Early Hardships.** — It is beyond the scope of the present work to follow in detail the various trials and vicissitudes of the young settlement at Jamestown. The story is well known.

Nearly the whole century was consumed in getting the colony firmly on its feet. For a time disease carried off a large number of the colonists and discouraged the rest. The Indians frequently became unfriendly, and made repeated attempts to massacre the colonists. Many of the governors were incompetent and selfish; and the energies of the people were at times wasted by dissension and strife. One man alone, during this early period, was able to plan and execute wisely; and that was Captain John Smith.

**20. Cavalier Tone.** — At various times during the century the colony received new accessions of immigrants. After the Civil War in England, and the establishment of the Protectorate under Cromwell, many of the Royalists, adherents of Charles I, sought a home in the New World, and gave a distinct Cavalier tone to Virginia society. The manners of the mother country were in a measure reproduced. “The Virginian planter was essentially a transplanted Englishman in tastes and convictions, and emulated the social amenities and the culture of the mother country. Thus in time was formed a society distinguished for its refinement, executive ability, and generous hospitality, for which the Ancient Dominion is proverbial.”<sup>1</sup>

**21. Unfavorable Conditions.** — It will be readily understood that the conditions in Virginia during this period were not favorable to the production of literature. For the greater part of the first century, after the planting of the colony, the energies of the people were almost entirely absorbed in the difficult work of establishing for themselves a permanent home. This task included not only the building of houses and the clearing of farms, but also the subduing of hostile and treacherous tribes of Indians. Under the stress of this toil-

<sup>1</sup> Winsor, *Narrative and Critical History of America*, Vol. III, p. 153.

some and dangerous life, there could be but little leisure for the cultivation of literature as an art. The writings of the time were, for the most part, of a practical nature, designed either to preserve the history of the planting of the young nation, or to acquaint the people of the mother country with the wonders of the New World.

**22. Population Agricultural.** — In addition to these unfavorable surroundings, it can hardly be claimed that the social conditions in Virginia, during the period under consideration, were likely to foster literary taste and literary production. The colonists, devoted to tobacco-planting and agriculture, settled on large plantations. There were no towns; and even Jamestown, the capital, had at the close of the century only a state-house, one church, and eighteen private dwellings. But little attention was paid to education. There is scarcely any mention of schools before 1688; and learning fell into such general neglect that Governor Spottswood in 1715 reproached the colonial assembly for having furnished two of its standing committees with chairmen who could not "spell English or write common sense." There was no printing-press in Virginia before 1681; and the printer was required to give bond not to print anything "until his Majesty's pleasure shall be known."

**23. Sir William Berkeley.** — For nearly forty years of this period, from 1641 to 1677, Sir William Berkeley exerted his influence and power "in favor of the fine old conservative policy of keeping subjects ignorant in order to keep them submissive."<sup>1</sup> When questioned in 1670 about the condition of Virginia, he said: "I thank God there are no free schools nor printing; and I hope we shall not have, these hundred years; for learning has brought disobedience, and heresy, and sects

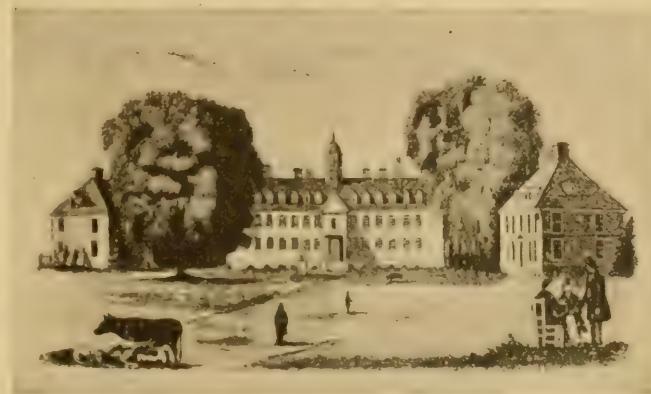
<sup>1</sup> Tyler, History of American Literature, p. 89.

into the world, and printing has divulged them, and libels against the best government. God keep us from both."<sup>1</sup> Surely under these circumstances there was but little encouragement to literature.

**24. College of William and Mary.** — Toward the close of the period before us, a growing interest in higher education resulted, in 1692, in the founding of the College of William and Mary, the oldest institution of learning in the South, and, after Harvard, the oldest in the United States. It received a cordial support not only in Virginia, but also in England. The lieutenant-governor headed the subscription list with a generous gift, and his example was followed by other prominent members of the colony.

After the sum of twenty-five hundred pounds had thus been raised, the Rev. James Blair was sent to England to solicit a charter for the institution. This was readily granted; and as a further evidence of the royal favor, the quit rents yet due in the colony, amounting to nearly two thousand pounds, were turned over to the college. For its further support, twenty thousand acres of land were set apart for its use, and a tax of a penny a pound was laid on all tobacco exported from Virginia and Maryland to other American colonies.

**25. Location and Purpose.** — The college was located at



COLLEGE OF WILLIAM AND MARY, WILLIAMSBURG,  
VIRGINIA

<sup>1</sup> Campbell, History of Virginia, p. 273.

Williamsburg ; and the Rev. James Blair, who had been active in securing its establishment, was chosen as its first president. In the language of the charter, the college was founded " to the end that the Church of Virginia may be furnished with a seminary of ministers of the Gospel, and that the youth may be piously educated in good letters and manners, and that Christian faith may be propagated among the western Indians to the glory of God." The founding of this college, though without influence upon literature during the First Colonial period, supplied in the next century a number of men who became illustrious in the political and literary history of their country.

## 2. New England

**26. Landing of the Puritans.** — Thirteen years after the founding of Jamestown, the Mayflower, with one hundred and two colonists, landed at Plymouth. They were Puritans, who for the sake of conscience first exiled themselves in Holland ; and there considering that their nationality would finally be lost among the hospitable Dutch, they heroically resolved to migrate to the New World. They recognized the difficulties of the undertaking ; but, as one of their number tells us, it was replied that " all great and honorable actions are accompanied with great difficulties, and must be both enterprised and overcome with answerable courages."

**27. The Religious Factor.** — Religion was a dominant factor in the character of the Puritans. In coming to America, they sought a refuge where, to use their own language, they " might glorify God, do more good to their country, better provide for their posterity, and live to be more refreshed by their labors." They were thorough-going Protestants ; but in their adherence to Scripture they fell into Hebrew rigor. They

not only abstained from all forms of immorality, but they dis-countenanced innocent pleasures.

**28. Growth of Colony.** — Notwithstanding the difficulties which attended their settlement, — the rigor of the climate, the hostility of the Indians, and the interference of foes abroad, — the Puritan colony rapidly grew in numbers and influence. The despotism of Charles I and the persecution instigated by Archbishop Laud drove some of the best people of England to seek religious and political freedom in the colony of Massachusetts. By the year 1640 the colony numbered more than twenty thousand persons, distributed in about fifty towns and villages. Tyranny had made them friends of constitutional government.

**29. Popular Intelligence.** — In spite of superstition and religious intolerance — evils belonging to the age — New England was from the start the friend of popular intelligence and social progress. The printing-press was introduced in 1639; and though it was kept under close supervision, it was not allowed to remain entirely inactive. The Puritans deserve the credit of being the first community in Christendom to make ample provision for the instruction of the people. “ In the laws establishing public schools, lies the secret of the success and character of New England. Every child, as it was born into the world, was lifted from the earth by the genius of the country, and, in the statutes of the land, received, as its birth-right, a pledge of the public care of its morals and its mind.”<sup>1</sup>

**30. Establishment of Schools.** — In order that the Scriptures might be properly understood, and that learning might not be buried in the grave of their fathers, as the Act of the General Court stated, it was ordered in 1647 in all the Puritan colonies, “ that every township, after the Lord hath increased

<sup>1</sup> Bancroft, History of the United States, Vol. I, p. 459.

them to fifty householders, shall appoint one to teach all children to write and read; and when any town shall increase to the number of one hundred families, they shall set up a grammar-school; the masters thereof being able to instruct youth so far as they may be fitted for the university."

**31. Harvard College.** — Harvard College, the oldest institution of learning in the United States, was founded in 1636. In that year the Massachusetts assembly "agreed to give four hundred pounds towards a school or college." This appropriation was equivalent to the colony tax for one year, and from



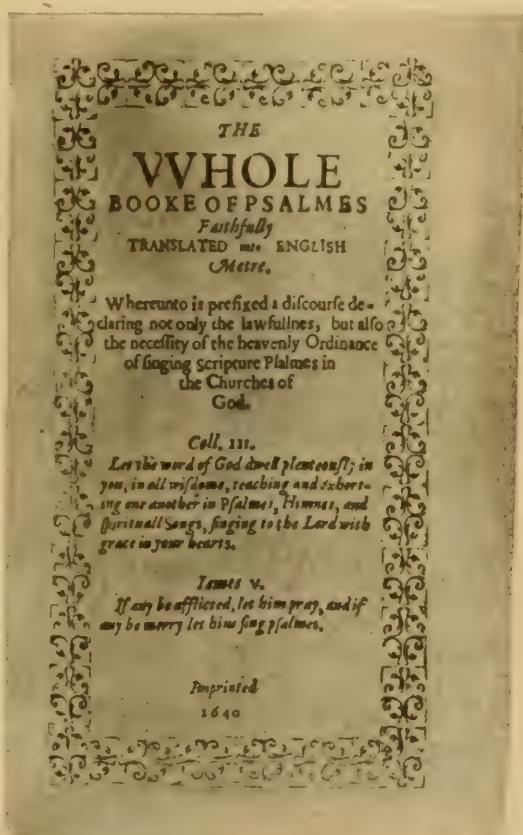
HARVARD COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE, MASSACHUSETTS

this point of view would equal at the present time several millions of dollars. Newtown, which was afterwards changed to Cambridge in memory of the English university town, was chosen as the site of the new college. When John Harvard, who died shortly after the founding of the college, bequeathed

to it his library and one-half of his estate, his name was associated with the institution which was destined to exert an untold influence upon the literary history of our country.

**32. Literary Pre-eminence.** — We can now understand the literary pre-eminence of New England. From the first it was colonized by an earnest body of men of unusual intelligence. They lived together in towns, where perpetual contact sharpened their wits, and kept them in sympathy with subjects of common interest. Their attitude to religion led them to theological discussion. With some conception at least of the magnitude and far-reaching results of their undertaking, they minutely noted the facts of their experience, and sought to build a solid political structure. The tasks imposed upon them, as well as their novel and picturesque surroundings, stimulated their minds to the highest activity. From their surroundings and character we should not expect artistic form. They hardly thought of literature as a fine art. But in their literature we find a manly strength and an intense earnestness of purpose.

**33. The “ Bay Psalm Book.”** — The seventeenth century produced



FAC-SIMILE OF THE BAY PSALM BOOK

a large number of writers in New England. Most of their works, however, are of interest now only to the antiquarian or specialist. No masterpiece of literature, such as the Puritan Milton produced in England, appeared to adorn American letters. The first book printed was the " Bay Psalm Book," a rude rendering of the Hebrew. As the preface informs us, " It hath been one part of our religious care and faithful endeavor to keep close to the original text. If, therefore, the verses are not always so smooth and elegant as some may desire or expect, . . . we have respected rather a plain translation than to smooth our verses with the sweetness of any paraphrase ; and so have attended conscience rather than elegance, fidelity rather than poetry." After this introduction we are not much surprised to read the following version of Psalm XIX :—

"The heavens doe declare  
the majesty of God :  
also the firmament shews forth  
his handywork abroad.  
Day speaks to day, knowledge  
night hath to night declar'd.  
There neither speach nor language is,  
where their voyce is not heard.  
Through all the earth their line  
is gone forth, & unto  
the utmost end of all the world,  
their speaches reach also :  
A Tabernacle hee  
in them pitcht for the Sun,  
Who Bridegroom like from's chamber goes  
glad Giants-race to run.  
From heavens utmost end,  
his course and compassing  
To ends of it, & from the heat  
thereof is hid nothing."

**34. Narrow Range of Literature.** — Both in Virginia and New England the range of subjects is limited. The life of the times, as in every age, is reflected in its literary works. Not aesthetic enjoyment but practical utility is the end aimed at. A glance at the titles of the principal works of this period, as given in the preceding list of writers, will show that narration and description, history, religion and theology, and civil administration were the principal themes. And in their treatment we find abundance and force rather than self-restraint and perfection of form.

**35. George Sandys.** — To these remarks, however, there are at least two important exceptions — one in each colony. Amid the sufferings, hardships, and dangers of establishing a home on this wild continent, two souls still sought opportunity to cultivate the muse of poetry. The first was George Sandys, who, coming to Virginia in 1622, there completed his translation of the fifteen books of Ovid's "Metamorphoses."



GEORGE SANDYS

"This book," to use the words of Tyler, "may well have for us a sort of sacredness, as being the first monu-

ment of English poetry, of classical scholarship, and a deliberate literary art, reared on these shores. And when we open the book, and examine it with reference to its merits, first, as a faithful rendering of the Latin text, and, second, as a specimen of fluent, idiomatic, and musical English poetry, we find that in both particulars it is a work that we may be proud to claim as in some sense our own, and to honor as the morning-star at once of poetry and of scholarship in the new world!" A few lines must suffice for illustration:—

"The Golden Age was first; which uncompeled  
And without rule, in faith and truth exceld,  
As then there was no punishment nor fear;  
Nor threat'ning laws in brass prescribéd were;  
Nor suppliant crouching prisoners shook to see  
Their angrie judge."

**36. Anne Bradstreet.** — The other exception to the prevalent utilitarian authorship was Mrs. Anne Bradstreet of Massachusetts, who was known as "the tenth muse lately sprung up in America." She found time, even among the cares of rearing eight children, to acquire considerable stores of learning. She was well versed in ancient history. In her poetry, learning, it must be confessed, frequently supplanted inspiration. Sometimes we meet with rather a startling piece of realism, as when, in speaking of winter, she says:—

"Beef, brawn, and pork are now in great'st request,  
And solid'st meats our stomachs can digest."

But she loved nature; and in her descriptions of flowers, and birds, and streams, she often reaches the plane of genuine poetry. Her moralizing is naturally in the sombre Puritan

vein. In her "Contemplations," a moral and descriptive poem of no slight excellence, she sings:—

"Under the cooling shade of a stately elm  
Close sate I by a goodly river's side,  
Where gliding streams the rocks did overwhelm;  
A lonely place, with pleasures dignified.  
I once that lov'd the shady woods so well,  
Now thought the rivers did the trees excel,  
And if the sun would ever shine, there would I dwell."

## CAPTAIN JOHN SMITH



CAPTAIN JOHN SMITH

**37. Interesting Career.** — During the early colonial period, the first writer in time, as, perhaps, in prominence, is Captain John Smith of Virginia. His personal history, which he has himself related in full, reads like a romance. Indeed, so interesting and remarkable are the incidents of his life, as given in his several volumes, that it is impossible to escape the suspicion that he has freely supplemented and embellished the facts from the resources of his ample imagination.

Yet, after all due abatement is made, the fact remains incontestable, that his career presented striking vicissitudes of fortune, and that in the midst of trials and dangers he showed himself fertile in resources, and dauntless in courage. In more than one emergency, the colony at Jamestown owed its preservation to his sagacity and courage; and though from the beginning his superior abilities made him an object of envy, he had the magnanimity to extinguish resentment, and the unselfishness to labor for the good of his enemies.

**38. His Youth.** — John Smith was born in Lincolnshire, England, in 1580, the son of a well-to-do farmer. He received a moderate education in the schools of Alford and Louth. His parents died when he was a lad of fifteen; and though they left him a comfortable fortune, he was not content quietly to enjoy it. His youth-

ful heart was set on adventures abroad ; and only his father's death prevented his running away from home and going to sea. He was afterwards bound as an apprentice to Thomas Sendall, a prominent merchant of Lynn ; but his restless disposition could not be satisfied with the unromantic duties of a counting-house, and hence he made his escape to give himself to a life of travel and adventure.

**39. Travel and Adventure.** — The next few years witnessed an astonishing amount of roving adventure. We find him in Europe, Asia, and Africa, and everywhere encountering dangers and making marvellous escapes. He read military science, and disciplined himself to the use of arms. He served under Henry IV of France, and then assisted the Dutch in their struggle against Philip II of Spain. Afterwards, to use his own words, “ He was desirous to see more of the world, and try his fortune against the Turks, both lamenting and repenting to have seen so many Christians slaughter one another.”

**40. Cast Into the Sea.** — Taking ship at Marseilles with a company of pilgrims going to Rome, he was angrily reproached for his Protestant heresy ; and when a storm was encountered, his violent and superstitious fellow-travellers cast him, like another Jonah, into the sea. His good fortune did not desert him in this emergency. He succeeded in reaching a small, uninhabited island, from which he was shortly rescued and taken to Egypt. After other vicissitudes, including the capture of a rich Venetian argosy, he finally reached Vienna, and enlisted under the Emperor Rudolph II against the Turks.

**41. Success and Misfortune.** — In the campaigns that followed, he won the confidence of his commanders. At Regal, in Transylvania, he distinguished himself in the presence of two armies by slaying in succession, in single combat, three Turkish champions. For this deed of prowess he received a patent of nobility, and a pension of three hundred ducats a year. Afterwards he had the misfortune to be wounded in battle, and was captured by the Turks. Having been sold as a slave, he was taken to Constantinople, where he touched the heart of his mistress by relating

to her, like another Othello, the whole story of his adventures. Subsequently, after spending some time in Tartary, he made his escape through Russia, and at length returned to England in 1604. But his spirit of adventure was not yet satiated, and he at once threw himself into the schemes of colonization that were then engaging attention. He was one of the founders of the London Company.

**42. A Colonist at Jamestown.** — The landing of the colony at Jamestown and their early difficulties and trials have already been spoken of. In the language of Smith, "There were never Englishmen left in a foreign country in such misery as we were in this new discovered Virginia. We watched every three nights, lying on the bare cold ground, what weather soever came, and warded all the next day, which brought our men to be most feeble wretches. Our food was but a small can of barley sodden in water to five men a day. Our drink, cold water taken out of the river, which was, at a flood, very salt, at a low tide, full of slime and filth, which was the destruction of many of our men." In less than six months, more than one-half of the colony had perished.

**43. Toil and Exploration.** —

Smith encouraged the disheartened colonists, and wisely directed their labors, always bearing the heaviest part himself. Houses were built, and the land was tilled; and as often as supplies of food were needed, he succeeded in begging or bullying the Indians into furnishing what was needed. As opportunity presented itself, he diligently explored the country. It was on an expedition of discovery up the Chickahominy that he fell into the hands of Powhatan; and



POCAHONTAS

in spite of his fertility in resources, he escaped death only through the well-known intercession and protection of the noble-minded Pocahontas.

In recent years the truth of this story has been questioned; but an examination of the evidence hardly warrants us in pronouncing "the Pocahontas myth demolished." Until a stronger array of facts can be adduced, it must still stand as the most beautiful and most romantic incident connected with the founding of the American colonies.

**44. Dissension and Misfortune.** — While Smith had the direction of the colony as president, it prospered. The Indians were kept in subjection, and the colonists were wisely directed in their labors. But in 1609 a change took place. Five hundred new colonists arrived, and refused to acknowledge his authority. They robbed the Indians, and plotted the murder of Smith. While dangers were thus gathering, an accident changed the course of events. As Smith lay sleeping in his boat, the powder bag at his side exploded, and frightfully burned his body. In his agony he leaped overboard, and narrowly escaped drowning. In his disabled condition and need of medical aid, he returned to England in October, 1609, and never visited Virginia again. His absence was sorely felt. The colonists soon fell into great disorder and distress. "The starving time" came on; and in five months death reduced the number of colonists from four hundred and ninety to sixty.

**45. Contemporary Estimate.** — Two of the survivors of "the starving time" have left a noble estimate of the character of Smith: "What shall I say? but thus we lost him that in all his proceedings made justice his first guide and experience his second; ever hating baseness, sloth, pride, and indignity more than any dangers; that never allowed more for himself than his soldiers with him; that upon no danger would send them where he would not lead them himself; that would never see us want what he either had, or could by any means get us; that would rather want than borrow, or starve and not pay; that loved actions more

than words, and hated cozenage and falsehood more than death; whose adventures were our lives, and whose loss our death."

**46. Explorations in New England.**—The next few years of his life, from 1610 to 1617, Smith spent in voyages to that section of our country which he named New England. While fishing for cod and bartering for furs, his principal object was to explore the coast, with a view to establish a settlement. He explored and mapped the country from the Penobscot to Cape Cod. His explorations in this region earned for him the title of "Admiral of New England." On his last expedition he was captured by a French pirate, and carried prisoner to Rochelle. But soon effecting his escape, he made his way back to England, which he seems never to have left again. The last years of his life were devoted to authorship. Among his numerous works may be mentioned the following: "A True Relation" (1608); "A Description of New England" (1616); "The General History of Virginia" (1624); and "The True Travels" (1630). He died June 21, 1631, and was buried in St. Sepulchre's Church, London.

**47. Summary of his Career.**—He has left us an admirable summary of his remarkable life: "Having been a slave to the Turks; prisoner among the most barbarous savages; after my deliverance commonly discovering and ranging those large rivers and unknown nations with such a handful of ignorant companions that the wiser sort often gave me up for lost; always in mutinies, wants, and miseries; blown up with gunpowder; a long time a prisoner among the French pirates, from whom escaping in a little boat by myself. . . . And many a score of the worst winter months have I lived in the fields; yet to have lived thirty-seven years in the midst of wars, pestilence, and famine, by which many a hundred thousand have died about me, and scarce five living of them that went first with me to Virginia, and yet to see the fruits of my labors thus well begin to prosper (though I have but my labor for my pains), have I not much reason, both privately and publicly, to acknowledge it and give God thanks?"

**48. An Extraordinary Man.**— After all necessary abatement is made in the account he has given of his life, it is apparent that he was no ordinary man. He was great in word and deed. His voluminous writings are characterized by clearness, force, and dramatic energy. His intellect was cast in the large mould of the era to which he belonged. He was a man of broad views. As a leader he displayed courage and executive ability, and few American explorers have shown the same indomitable energy. Though restless, ambitious, and vain, he was noble in aim and generous in disposition. During the first quarter of the seventeenth century "he did more than any other Englishman to make an American nation and an American literature possible."

## COTTON MATHER



COTTON MATHER

pamphlets, there are also among them bulky volumes.

**50. Ancestry and Education.**—He was the third of a line of distinguished ancestors, the relative standing of whom is given in an old epitaph:—

“Under this stone lies Richard Mather,  
Who had a son greater than his father,  
And eke a grandson greater than either.”

This grandson was of course Cotton Mather, who was born Feb. 12, 1663, in Boston. On the side of his mother, who was a daughter of the celebrated pulpit-orator John Cotton, he likewise inherited talents of no usual order. After receiving his

preparatory training in the free school of Boston, he entered Harvard College, at the age of twelve years, with superior attainments. During his collegiate course he was distinguished for his ability and scholarship; and at the time of his graduation, the president of the college, with a reference to his double line of illustrious ancestors, said in a Latin oration: "I trust that in this youth Cotton and Mather will be united and flourish again."

**51. A Type of Puritan Culture.** — He may be regarded as a typical product of the Puritan culture of his time; and with this fact in mind, his life becomes doubly interesting. He possessed a deeply religious nature, which asserted itself strongly even in his youth, and drove him to continual introspection. Troubled with doubts and fears about his salvation, he became serious in manner, and spent much time in prayer and fasting. At the same time he was active in doing good, instructing his brothers and sisters at home, and fearlessly reproving his companions for profanity or immorality.

**52. A Minister of the Gospel.** — After leaving college, Cotton Mather spent several years in teaching. But inheriting two great ecclesiastical names, it was but natural for him to think of the ministry. Unfortunately, he was embarrassed by a strongly marked impediment of speech; but upon the advice of a friend, accustoming himself to "dilated deliberation" in public speaking, he succeeded in overcoming this difficulty. He preached his first sermon at the age of seventeen, and a few months afterwards was called to North Church, the leading congregation in Boston, as associate of his father. His preaching was well received — a fact about which, perhaps, he was unduly concerned. With his habit of dwelling upon his inward states of mind, he noted in his Diary (to which we are much indebted for an insight into his subjective life) a tendency to sinful pride, which he endeavored to suppress by the doubtful expedient of calling himself opprobrious names.

**53. Method of Sermonizing.** — His method of sermonizing and preaching is well worth noting. It was the age of heroic sermons,

the length of which was counted, not by minutes, but by hours. When he was at a loss for a text, "he would make a prayer to the Holy Spirit of Christ, as well to find a text for him as to handle it." But he was far from a lazy reliance upon divine aid. He carefully examined his text in the original language, and consulted the commentaries upon it. He very properly chose his



THE NORTH CHURCH IN BOSTON

subjects, not with a view to display his abilities, but to edify his hearers. Unlike his father, who laboriously committed his sermons to memory, he made use of extended notes, and thus gained both the finish of studied discourse, and the fervor of extemporeaneous speaking.

**54. Married Life.** — The question of marriage was suggested, not by the drawing of a tender, irresistible passion, but by calm, rational considerations of utility. Accordingly, there was nothing

rashly precipitate in his courtship; “he first looked up to heaven for direction, and then asked counsel of his friends.” The person fixed upon at last as his future companion was the daughter of Colonel Philips of Charlestown, to whom he was shortly afterwards married. “She was a comely, ingenious woman, and an agreeable consort.” This union, as also his second marriage, was a happy one; but it is a suggestive fact that his third wife is referred to in his Diary only in Latin. She made his life wretched; and it is still uncertain whether she was the victim of insanity or of a demoniac ill-temper.

**55. Laborious Ambition.** — From childhood, as is the case with most persons of extraordinary gifts, he was conscious of his superior ability, and expected and labored to be a great man. He assiduously employed every moment of time, keeping up a perpetual tension of exertion. Over the door of his library he wrote in capital letters the suggestive legend, “BE SHORT.” His daily life was governed by a mechanical routine; yet, after the Puritanic fashion, he upbraided himself with slothfulness.

**56. Literary Labors.** — He mastered not only Latin, Greek, and Hebrew, which was expected of every scholar of the time, but also Spanish, French, and one of the Indian tongues, in most of which he published books. He had the marvellous power, possessed by Spurgeon, Gladstone, and Macaulay, of mastering the contents of a book with almost incredible rapidity. According to the testimony of his son, “He would ride post through an author.” He had the largest library in New England; and its contents were so at command, that “he seemed to have an inexpressible source of divine flame and vigor.” His literary activity was extraordinary. In a single year, besides keeping twenty fasts and discharging all the duties of a laborious pastorate, he published fourteen books. It is not strange that one of his contemporaries, in the presence of this extraordinary activity, should exclaim:—

“Is the blest Mather necromancer turned?”

**57. "Magnalia Christi."** — Among his numerous works, there is one that stands with monumental pre-eminence; it is the "Magnalia Christi Americana; or, The Ecclesiastical History of New England," from its first planting in the year 1620 to the year of our Lord 1698. It may justly be regarded as the most important book produced in America during the seventeenth century. Its scope will appear from the topics treated of in its seven books. The first book gives an account of the settlement of New England; the second contains "the lives of the governors and the names of magistrates that have been shields unto the churches of New England;" the third recounts "the lives of sixty famous divines, by whose ministry the churches of New England have been planted and continued;" the fourth is devoted to the history of Harvard College, and of "some eminent persons therein educated;" the fifth describes "the faith and order of the churches;" the sixth speaks of "many illustrious discoveries and demonstrations of the divine providence in remarkable mercies and judgments" — the book in which, it is said, his soul most delighted; and the seventh narrates "the afflictive disturbance which the churches of New England have suffered from their various adversaries," namely, impostors, Quakers, Separatists, Indians, and the Devil.

**58. Critique of the "Magnalia."** — The work is a treasure-house of information. No historian was ever better equipped for his work. Besides having access to a multitude of original documents that have since perished, he was acquainted with many of the leading men of New England, and had himself been identified with various important political and ecclesiastical interests. Yet the manner in which he discharged the functions of historian is not altogether satisfactory. Perhaps he was too near the events to be strictly impartial. His personal feelings — his friendships or his animosities — were allowed, perhaps unconsciously, to color his statements; and in regard to his facts, he is open to the very serious charge of being careless and inaccurate. While his work is indispensable for a thorough understanding of New England

history, it is always safe to have his statement of important facts corroborated by collateral testimony.

**59. Philanthropic Labors.** — Notwithstanding his laborious application to reading and study, Cotton Mather was interested in a surprising number of philanthropic undertakings. He wrote a book entitled “Bonifacius, an Essay upon the Good that is to be Devised and Designed, with Proposals of Unexceptionable Methods to do Good in the World,” — a work that places philanthropy upon a business basis, and anticipates many of the benevolent associations of the present day. Of this book Benjamin Franklin says that it “perhaps gave me a turn of thinking, that had an influence on some of the principal future events of my life.”<sup>1</sup> Cotton Mather sought to check the vice of drunkenness, and was perhaps our first temperance reformer. Though he purchased a slave (for slavery then existed in New England), he interested himself in the education of negroes, and at his own expense established a school for their instruction. He wrote a work on the Christianizing of the negroes, and noted in his Diary: “My design is, not only to lodge a copy in every family in New England that has a negro in it, but also to send numbers of them into the Indies.” He took an interest in foreign missions, and proposed to send Bibles and Psalters among the nations.

**60. Work on Witchcraft.** — The darkest feature in the life of Cotton Mather — a feature which avenging critics have by no means lost sight of — is his connection with the witchcraft tragedy. In common with people of every class in his day, he believed in the reality of witchcraft. In 1685, the year he was ordained, he published a work entitled “Memorable Providences relating to Witchcraft,” which had the misfortune of being quoted as an authority in connection with the Salem horrors. Looking upon himself as specially set for the defence of Zion, he gave himself with Old Testament zeal to the extermination of what he believed a work of the Devil.

**61. Attitude toward Vaccination.** — Over against this dreadful delusion should be placed his heroic conduct in advocating vacci-

<sup>1</sup> Autobiography, Chap. I.

nation at a time when it was considered a dangerous and impious innovation. When the smallpox made its appearance in Boston, the physicians, with one honorable exception, were opposed to the newly advocated system of vaccination on the general principle, strange to say, that "it was presumptuous in man to inflict disease on man, that being the prerogative of the Most High." The matter was discussed with great bitterness of feeling; and the mass of people, as well as the civil authorities, were against the new treatment. But Cotton Mather had been convinced of the efficacy of vaccination; and accordingly, though he knew it would cost him his popularity, and perhaps expose him to personal violence, he resolutely faced the popular clamor, and boldly vindicated the truth. It was only after the lapse of considerable time that he had the satisfaction of seeing the popular prejudice give way.

**62. Disappointed Ambition.** — It was a great disappointment to Cotton Mather that he was never chosen president of Harvard College, a position to which he ardently, though as he thought unselfishly, aspired. On two occasions, when he confidently expected election, he was humiliated by seeing less learned men chosen for the place. He attributed his defeat to the influence of his enemies, and never for a moment suspected the real cause, which was a distrust, perhaps too well founded, of his prudence and judgment.

**63. Estimate of his Character.** — He died Feb. 13, 1728. Though not a man of great original genius, his mind was massive and strong. He had the quality which some have held to be the essential thing in genius, — the power of indomitable and systematic industry. His spiritual life, while influenced by Puritanic ideals, was profound; and unbelief has sometimes mocked at experiences which it lacked the capacity to understand. He was followed to the grave by an immense procession, including all the high officers of the Province; and the general feeling was that a great man had fallen, the weight of whose life, in spite of imperfections, had been on the side of righteousness.

## FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

For general bibliography see page 609. *Illustrative annotated selections from Capt. John Smith and Cotton Mather will be found on pages 387-402 of this volume.*

Extracts from the minor writers are given in Stedman and Hutchinson's "Library of American Literature" (15 volumes). Less extended but interesting extracts will be found in Cairns's "Early American Writers," Trent and Wells's "Colonial Prose and Poetry," and Trent's "Southern Writers."

Charles Dudley Warner's "Life of John Smith" (Holt); Captain John Smith, *Harper* 21: 721 (B. J. Lossing), *Atlantic* 76: 350 (John Fiske), *The Pocahontas Myth Exploded*, *North Am. Review* 104: 11 (Herbert Adams). For a defence of the Pocahontas story, see Fiske's "Old Virginia and Her Neighbors."

Barrett Wendell's "Cotton Mather" (Dodd); Cotton Mather, *North Am. Review* 51: 1 (S. F. Haven), and 108: 337 (W. F. Poole).

For the historic background of this period consult the major works on American History given in the bibliography. For a brief survey any of the standard school histories may be used. Fiske's "Old Virginia and Her Neighbors" and "Beginnings of New England," and Lodge's "Short History of the English Colonies in America" will be found of special interest. For contemporary sources, consult Albert B. Hart's "American History Told by Contemporaries" (Macmillan) or MacDonald's "Documentary Source Book of American History" (Macmillan). In Hawthorne's "Grandfather's Chair" will be found many delightful narratives of New England life during this period, among which may be mentioned "The Pine-Tree Shilling," "The Indian Bible," "The Sunken Treasure," "Cotton Mather," "The Provincial Muster," and "The Old-Fashioned School."

Many incidents, scenes, and characters from the First Colonial Period have appealed to our own and to British poets. The following poems are noteworthy: Whittier's "The Norsemen,"

Longfellow's "The Skeleton in Armor," Margaret J. Preston's "The Mystery of Cro-a-tán," James Barron Hope's "John Smith's Approach to Jamestown," Thackeray's "Pocahontas," Geo. P. Morris's "Pocahontas," Longfellow's "The Phantom Ship," Whittier's "The Garrison of Cape Ann," Felicia Hemans's "Landing of the Pilgrims," Wordsworth's "The Pilgrim Fathers," Clinton Scollard's "The First Thanksgiving," Lucy Larcom's "Mistress Hale of Beverley," Whittier's "John Underhill," Stedman's "Salem," Whittier's "St. John," James K. Paulding's "Ode to Jamestown," and Longfellow's "The Courtship of Miles Standish." Many other poems dealing with this period will be found in Stevenson's "Poems of American History" (Houghton).

The following historical novels illustrate this period: Mary Johnston's "To Have and to Hold" (1921), Mrs. J. G. Austin's "Standish of Standish" (about 1920), J. G. Holland's "The Bay Path" (1938), Nathaniel Hawthorne's "Scarlet Letter" (1950), Mary E. Wilkins's "The Heart's Highway" (1982), and Amelia E. Barr's "The Black Shilling" (1991), introducing witchcraft trials at Salem and Boston.

## *SECOND COLONIAL PERIOD*

---

### REPRESENTATIVE WRITERS

BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

JONATHAN EDWARDS

### OTHER WRITERS

### NEW ENGLAND

DAVID BRAINERD (1718-1747). Missionary to the Indians. A man of strong mental powers, fervent zeal, and extensive knowledge. "Mirabilia Dei inter Indicos" and "Divine Grace Displayed" are made up of his missionary journals.

MATHER BYLES (1706-1788). Congregational preacher, poet, and wit, of Boston. He published a volume of poems in 1736.

THOMAS HUTCHINSON (1711-1780). A native and the last royal governor of Massachusetts. The best American historian before the nineteenth century, his greatest work being "The History of the Province of Massachusetts Bay."

SAMUEL SEWALL (1652-1730). A graduate of Harvard, and chief-justice of Massachusetts in 1718. Among his works are "Answer to Queries respecting America," and especially his "Diary," which presents an interesting and graphic account of Puritan life in the seventeenth century.

MICHAEL WIGGLESWORTH (1631-1705). Congregational clergyman at Malden, Mass. His "Day of Doom," an epic of the Last Judgment, was for more than a century the most popular poem in New England. "God's Controversy with New England," written in a time of great drought, is also in verse.

### MIDDLE COLONIES

WILLIAM LIVINGSTON (1723-1790). A statesman, governor of New Jersey 1776-1790. Author of "Philosophic Solitude" in verse, "Military Operations in North America," and a "Digest of the Laws of New York." (See text.)

SAMUEL DAVIES (1724-1761). Presbyterian clergyman, and fourth president of Princeton College. He wrote a number of hymns still in use, and published five volumes of sermons popular in their day.

THOMAS GODFREY (1736-1763). First dramatic author in America. Served as a lieutenant in the colonial militia. Author of "Juvenile Poems on Various Subjects with the Prince of Parthia, a Tragedy." (See text.)

### VIRGINIA AND NORTH CAROLINA

WILLIAM BYRD (1674-1744). Founder of the cities of Richmond and Petersburg. Author of the "History of the Dividing Line" between Virginia and North Carolina — "one of the most delightful of the literary legacies of the colonial age."

JAMES BLAIR (1656-1743). Founder of William and Mary College. Author of "The Present State of Virginia and the College," and "Our Saviour's Divine Sermon on the Mount."

WILLIAM STITH (1689-1755). President of William and Mary College, and author of the "History of the First Discovery and Settlement of Virginia" — "in accuracy of detail not exceeded by any American historical work."

JOHN LAWSON (16—1712). Surveyor-general of North Carolina, burned at the stake by the Indians. The story of his adventures and observations was published under the title "History of North Carolina."

### CONTEMPORARY WRITERS IN ENGLAND

JOHN LOCKE (1632-1704); JOSEPH BUTLER (1692-1752); DANIEL DEFOE (1663-1731); SAMUEL RICHARDSON (1689-1761); HENRY FIELDING (1707-1754); JONATHAN SWIFT (1667-1745); JAMES THOMPSON (1700-1748); EDWARD YOUNG (1681-1765).

## II

### *SECOND COLONIAL PERIOD*

(1689-1763)

**64. Growth of a Nation.** — The early history of America has a peculiar interest for those who perceive the relation of its events to the subsequent development of the country. The growth of a great nation can be clearly traced step by step. Great interests were involved in the success or failure of apparently small enterprises. The life of a nation — principles, upon which the welfare of future millions depended — was often at stake in some obscure and apparently insignificant struggle.

**65. A Guiding Hand.** — The history of this period, with its small exploring parties, savage massacres, and petty military campaigns, seems at first sight to be a confused mass of disconnected events. But in the life of nations, as of individuals, “there is a divinity that shapes our ends;” and throughout all the maze of injustice, tyranny, and bloodshed, it is now possible to discern the divine purpose. God was keeping watch by the cradle of a great people.

---

#### CONTEMPORARY EVENTS IN ENGLAND

William and Mary, 1689-1702.

George I, 1714-1727.

Anne, 1702-1714.

George II, 1727-1760.

King William's War, 1689-1697.

King George's War, 1741-1748.

War of the Spanish Succession, 1701-  
1714.

Seven Years' War, 1756-1763.

Accession of George III, 1760.

**66. New Stage of Progress.** — With the beginning of the eighteenth century, America entered upon a new stage of progress. All the thirteen colonies, except Georgia, had been established. The toil and dangers of early settlement had been overcome. The colonies had largely increased in population; and agriculture, manufacture, and commerce had made a substantial beginning. By the close of the period the population of the colonies had reached more than a million and a half. In 1738 forty-one topsail vessels, averaging a hundred and fifty tons, were built in Boston.

**67. Schools and Newspapers.** — The educational interests of the colonies kept pace with their material advancement. In New England there was not an adult, born in this country, who could not read and write. During this period seven colleges — Yale, Princeton, King's (now Columbia), Brown, Queen's (afterwards Rutgers), Dartmouth, and Hampden-Sidney — were founded. In 1704 the *News-Letter*, the first periodical of the New World, was published in Boston; and before the close of the French and Indian War in 1763, ten other newspapers had made their appearance in various colonies. The press at last became free. Official censorship received its death-blow in New York in 1734, when Andrew Hamilton, an aged lawyer of Philadelphia, addressed the jury in behalf of an imprisoned printer: "The question before you is not the cause of a poor printer, nor of New York alone; it is the best cause — the cause of liberty. Every man who prefers freedom to a life of slavery will bless and honor you as men who, by an impartial verdict, lay a noble foundation for securing to ourselves, our posterity, and our neighbors, that to which nature and the honor of our country have given us a right — the liberty of opposing arbitrary power by speaking and writing truth."

# The Boston News-Letter.

Published by Authority.

From Monday April 17. to Monday April 24. 1704.

London Evening Post from Decemb. 23. to 4th. 1703.

**L**atters from *Scot* and bring us the Copy of a Sheet lately Printed there, Intituled, *A Journal of Affairs in Scotland. In a Letter from a Gentleman in the City, to his Friend in the Country, concerning the present Danger of the Kingdom, and of the secret Raison.*

This Letter takes Notice, That Papists swarm in that Nation, that they traffick more avowedly than formerly, & that of late many Scores of French and Jesuits are come thither from France, and gone to the North, to the Highlands & other parts of the Country. That the Ministers of the Highlands and North gave to large Lists of them to the Committee of the General Assembly, to be laid before the Privy-Council.

It likewise observes, that a great Number of other unaffected persons are come over from France, under promise of accompanying her Majestys Gracious Interinity; but, in reality, to increase Divisions in the Nation, and to entertain a Correspondence with France. It's their ill Intentions are evident from their talking big, their owing the Interest of the pretended King James VIII. their secret Cabals, and their buying up of Arms and Ammunition, wherever they can find them.

To this he adds the late Writings and Actions of some disaffected persons, many of whom are for that Pretender, the greater part of them having declared they had rather embrace Popery than conform to the present Government, than they refuse to pray for the Queen, but use the ambiguous word Sovereign, and some of them pray in express Words for the King and Royal Family; and the charitable and generous Prince who has shew'd them so much Kindness. He likewise takes notice of Letters not long ago found in Cypher, and directed to a person lately come thither from St. Germain.

He says that the greatest Jacobites, who will not swear themselves by taking the Oaths to Her Majesty, do now with the Papists and their Companions from St. Germain set up for the Liberty of the Subject, contrary to their own Principles, but merely to keep up a Division in the Nation. He adds, that they aggravate those things which the People complain of, as to England's refusing to allow them a freedom Trade, &c. and do all they can to ferment Divisions b'twixt the Nations, and to obstruct Redress of those things complain'd of.

The Jacobites, he says, do all they can to persuade the Nation that their pretended King is a Protestant in his Heart, tho' he dares not declare it while under the Power of France; that he is acquainted with the Mistakes of his Father's Go-

From all this he infers, That they have hopes of Assistance from France, otherwise they would never be so impudent, and he gives Reasons for his Apprehensions that the French King may land Troops thither this Winter, 1. Because the English & Dutch will not then be at Sea to oppose them 2. He can then well spare them, the Season of Action beyond Sea being over. 3. The Expectation given him of a considerable number to join them, may encourage him to the undertaking with fewer Men if we can but send over a sufficient number of Officers with Arms and Ammunition.

He endeavours in the rest of his Letters to answer the foolish Pretences of the Pretender's being a Protestant, and that he will govern us according to Law. He says, that being bred up in the Religion and Politicks of France, he is by Education a declared Enemy to our Liberty and Religion. That the Obligations which he and his Family owe to the French King, must necessarily make him to be wholly at his Devotion, and to follow his Example; that if he sit upon the Throne, the three Nations, must be oblig'd to pay the Debt which he owes the French King for the Education of himself, and for Entertaining his supposed Father and His Family. And since the King must restore him by his Troops, if ever he be restored, he will see to securing his own Debts before those Troops leave Britain. The Pretender being a good Proficient in the French and Flemish Schools, he will never think himself sufficiently aveng'd, but by the utter Ruine of his Protestant Subjects, both as Heretics and Traitors. The late Queen, his pretended Mother, who in cold Blood when she was Queen of Britain, advised to turn the Well of Scotland into a hunting Field will be then for doing so by the greatest part of our Nation; and, no doubt, is at Pains to have her pretended Son educated to her own Mind. Therefore, he says, it were a great Madness in the Nation to take a Prince bred up in the horrid School of Ingratitude, Persecution and Cruelty, and filled with Rage and Envy. The Jacobites, his Lays, both in Scotland and at St. Germain, are impatient under their present Straits, and knowing their Circumstances cannot be much worse than they are, at present, as the more inclinable to the Underhand. He adds, that if the French King knows there cannot be a more effectual way for himself to reign over all the Universal Monarchy, and to secure the Protestant Interest, than by setting up the Pretender upon the Throne of Great Britain, he will in all probability attempt it, and tho' he should be perswaded that the Design would miscarry in the clofe, yet he cannot but reap some Advantage by imbroiling the three Nations.

FAC-SIMILE OF THE BOSTON NEWS-LETTER

**68. Sense of Future Greatness.** — It is not strange that the future greatness of America began to dawn upon the minds of men. The world had never before witnessed such a rapid increase of prosperity and power. In contemplating the rising glory of America an Italian poet sang that the spirit of ancient

Rome, immortal and undecayed, was spreading towards the New World. Bishop Berkeley, in prophetic vision, foretold a "golden age," when the arts would flourish, and when the race of "wisest heads and noblest hearts" would be born:—

"Not such as Europe breeds in her decay,  
Such as she bred when fresh and young,  
When heavenly flame did animate her clay,  
By future poets shall be sung.

Westward the course of empire takes its way;  
The first four acts already past,  
A fifth shall close the drama with the day;  
Time's noblest offspring is the last."

**69. Growing National Feeling.** — In England it was believed that the colonial leaders were secretly meditating and planning independence. Though this was undoubtedly a mistake, yet a growing national feeling is clearly discernible in the utterances and relations of the colonies. It could not well be otherwise in the presence of their increasing prosperity and promising future, and of the strengthening ties that bound them together. The colonists were chiefly of Teutonic origin. They came to this country as voluntary exiles in order to escape religious or political oppression, and were thus united by the sympathy of suffering and sacrifice. For the most part they used the English language; and though there were Puritans, Episcopalians, Quakers, Huguenots, and Presbyterians, they were nearly all warm adherents of Protestantism. Yet, in spite of these strong affinities, the colonies were for a long time jealous and distrustful of one another. Their interests were not regarded as common; and without the pressure of external circumstances they would probably have remained a long time separated.

**70. Mistaken Policy of England.** — This external pressure, which was necessary to bring the colonies into closer relationship, was not lacking. It came from two opposite sources. In the first place the policy of England was admirably adapted to develop a spirit of freedom, and to unite the colonies in a common resistance of oppression. At that time it was the prevailing view abroad that the colonies existed solely for the benefit of the mother country. Consequently, the measures of government were adopted, not for the welfare of the colonies, but for the profit of England. This unjust policy naturally provoked opposition in a people who had abandoned home and country for the sake of freedom.

**71. Purpose of France.** — The other influence impelling the colonies to confederation came from the ambitious schemes of France. As will have been noticed, the English colonies extended along the Atlantic seaboard from Maine to Florida. Though their territory theoretically extended across the continent, their settlements did not reach inland more than a hundred miles. To prevent the further extension of the English colonies, the French formed the magnificent plan of occupying the interior of the continent, and thus of confining their enemies to a narrow belt on the Atlantic coast. They already had possession of Canada; and ascending the St. Lawrence, they established forts and trading-posts along the southern shores of the Great Lakes, and thence down the Mississippi to New Orleans. Having discovered the Mississippi, they laid claim to all the territory drained by its waters; that is to say, to the magnificent empire lying between the Allegheny and the Rocky Mountains. "If the French," wrote the governor of New York in 1687, "have all that they pretend to have discovered in these parts, the king of England will not have a hundred miles from the sea anywhere." A conflict between

the English and the French thus became inevitable; and the stake involved was nothing less than the life of the English colonies, and the possession of the American continent. In the presence of this conflict, the instinct of self-preservation drew the colonies into closer sympathy and union.

**72. A Long Struggle.** — The struggle between England and France for the possession of America — a struggle that lasted with intermissions for more than seventy years — began in 1689, the dividing-point between the two colonial periods. First came King William's War, when Louis XIV espoused the cause of James II, and Count Frontenac was sent to be governor of Canada, with orders to conquer New York. Then followed in quick succession Queen Anne's War, or the War of the Spanish Succession; King George's War, or the War of the Austrian Succession; and lastly, the Seven Years' War, or the French and Indian War.

These various wars, as their names generally indicate, grew out of conflicting European interests; but since England and France, as hostile nations, were invariably opposed to each other, their colonies in America were always drawn into the conflict. The course of these successive wars, with their varying fortunes and sickening massacres, cannot here be followed in detail. With the Treaty of Paris in 1763 the conflict in America finally came to an end by the cession of Canada and the Mississippi Valley to England. At one blow the French possessions in America and French schemes for a great western empire were forever swept away.

**73. Results of French Success.** — Had the issue of this protracted struggle been in favor of France, the course of American history and of American literature would have been very different. French colonization in America represented three distinct tendencies, from all of which the English colonists

had broken away. First of all, in direct antagonism against popular government, Louis XIV stood for despotism. His attitude toward France is indicated in his famous saying, "*L'État c'est moi.*" In the second place, the colonization undertaken by the French carried with it the feudal system. Instead of the political and social equality recognized and encouraged in the English colonies, it meant the class system of nobles and inferiors. In the third place, the success of the French meant the establishment of a wholly different form of belief and worship. The most enterprising and devoted of the French explorers were Jesuits, whose self-sacrificing work among the Indians sometimes reached the highest point of heroism. In short, if the French schemes had been successful, the result would have been, as was contemplated, a new mediæval France, which in its development, having possession of the largest and fairest part of the continent, would have driven the English colonies into the Atlantic Ocean.

**74. First Steps towards Union.** — The first step towards a general union of the American colonies was taken in 1684.



NEW YORK ABOUT 1700

The French had encroached upon the territory of the Five Nations in New York; and in preparation for the inevitable

conflict, the Indians desired to form a treaty of peace with the English. Accordingly, a convention composed of delegates from Virginia, Maryland, New York, and Massachusetts, met at Albany. For the first time, the northern and the southern colonies came together to consider the common welfare. The conference resulted in a treaty; and the Mohawk chief at its conclusion spoke better than he knew when he said: "We now plant a tree whose top will reach the sun, and its branches spread far abroad, so that it shall be seen afar off, and we shall shelter ourselves under it, and live in peace without molestation."

**75. Attempts at Federation.** — The necessity of a closer general union gradually became more apparent. In 1698 William Penn proposed a plan of federation. In 1754 the Convention of Albany, composed of representatives from six of the colonies, resolved that a union ought to be formed, and accordingly recommended the adoption of a constitution, the outlines of which had been drawn up by Franklin. But this constitution was disapproved in England, because it allowed too much freedom to the colonies; and it was rejected by the colonies, because it gave too much authority to England. Thus, though the sentiment of union was steadily growing, it did not reach full practical realization. That consummation, which was to mark the birth of the American nation, was reserved for the following period.

**76. Conditions Favorable to Literature.** — The changed conditions of American life during this period exerted a salutary influence upon literature. While the conditions were far from being ideal, they marked a considerable advance upon those of the earlier period, and thus gave a broader scope and better form to literary productions. The hard and unceasing struggle for existence characteristic of the greater part of the first

colonial period had given place to comparative ease and comfort. While there was but little accumulation of wealth, there were, especially in the older colonies, many comfortable homes, in which books and leisure supplied the opportunity for culture. Several considerable cities — Boston, New York, and Philadelphia — served in some degree as literary centres. The growing number of schools added to the popular intelligence. The newspapers furnished topics for general thought and discussion, while the closer relations and larger interests of the colonies gave a wider horizon to the intellectual life of the people.

**77. Literary Expansion.** — As will be seen on examining the list of writers prefixed to this period, the development of American literature followed the growth of the colonies. The middle colonies, New York, New Jersey, and Pennsylvania, now come into prominence. Though Franklin and Edwards, who have been chosen for special study as representative writers, were born in New England, they both ended their lives in the middle colonies. Franklin's great life was spent chiefly in Philadelphia. The tide of authorship extended southward from Virginia; and in the Carolinas and Georgia there were men who could wield the pen as well as the axe and the sword.

**78. Influence of Queen Anne Writers.** — As might be naturally expected, there is a gradual extension of the range of subjects, and a perceptible advancement in the matter of style. Though historical and theological subjects are still predominant, philosophy, science, and literary miscellany receive increasing attention. Authors become more numerous, and the number of writers in verse is surprising. The influence of the Queen Anne writers — Dryden, Pope, Addison — is discernible in an improved literary form. Franklin formed his

style after the *Spectator*, and we catch an echo of Pope in Livingston's "Philosophic Solitude":—

"Let ardent heroes seek renown in arms,  
Pant after fame, and rush to war's alarms;  
To shining palaces let fools resort,  
And dunces cringe to be esteemed at court;  
Mine be the pleasure of a rural life,  
From noise remote, and ignorant of strife;  
Far from the painted belle, and white-gloved beau,  
The lawless masquerade, and midnight show;  
From ladies, lap-dogs, courtiers, garters, stars,  
Fops, fiddlers, tyrants, emperors, and czars."

**79. First American Drama.** — This period saw the birth of the first American drama,— a tragedy entitled "The Prince of Parthia," written by Thomas Godfrey. It is an oriental story of love, lust, jealousy, murder, ruin, cast in the large mould of the Elizabethan dramatists, and its style shows that the author had studied Shakespeare to good purpose. Take the following passage in illustration of its poetic vigor:—

"*Vardanes.* Heaven! what a night is this!

*Lysias.*

'Tis filled with terror;

Some dread event beneath this horror lurks,

Ordained by fate's irrevocable doom; —

Perhaps Arsaces' fall; and angry heaven

Speaks it in thunder to the trembling world.

*Vardanes.* Terror indeed! It seems as sickening Nature  
Had given her order up to general ruin:

The heavens appear as one continued flame;

Earth with her terror shakes; dim night retires,

And the red lightning gives a dreadful day,

While in the thunder's voice each sound is lost.

Fear sinks the panting heart in every bosom;

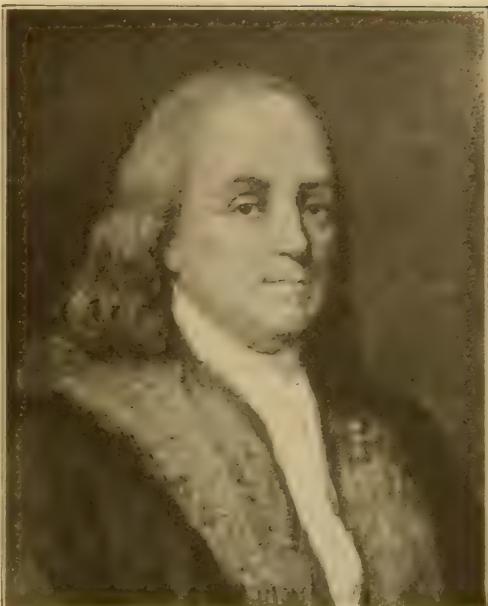
E'en the pale dead, affrighted at the horror,

As though unsafe, start from their marble jails,

And howling through the streets are seeking shelter."

## BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

**80. General Popularity.** — No other American, excepting only the Father of his Country, is more interesting to people of every class than Benjamin Franklin. His popularity has been extraordinary. Since his death, a little more than a hundred years ago, no decade has passed without the publication of a biography or a new edition of his works. His "Autobiography," the most popular historical work of America, possesses a perennial interest. It is replete not only with interesting incident, but also with genial humor and profound practical wisdom.



BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

**81. Youth and Education.** — The facts of his life are so well known that it is not necessary to dwell upon them. He was born in Boston, Jan. 17, 1706 — the youngest of an old-fashioned family of ten children. From his father, who was a candle-maker and soap-boiler, he inherited not only a strong physical constitution, but his "solid judgment in prudential matters." He attended the free grammar schools of Boston about a year, and gave promise of becoming a good scholar; but owing to the straitened circumstances of his father, he was taken away in order to cut wicks, mould candles, and run errands — all which he heartily disliked.

**82. Fondness for Reading.** — From childhood he was passionately fond of reading, and he used the little money that came into his hands to buy books. His first purchase was Bunyan's "Pilgrim's Progress," which after being read and re-read was sold to buy Burton's "Historical Collections" — a class of writings of which he was specially fond. Among the books of this early reading were Plutarch's "Lives" and Mather's "Essay to do Good," which he specially mentions as exerting a salutary influence upon his mind and character. He did not escape the common temptation of bookish youths to attempt poetry, and wrote two ballads which, in spite of a flattering success at the time, he afterwards characterized, and no doubt justly, as "wretched stuff." From the danger of becoming a sorry poet he was timely rescued by his father, who with Philistine coldness called his attention to the fact that "verse-makers were generally beggars."

**83. Fluency and Style.** — But his literary instincts were not to be quenched; and though he gave up poetry, he cultivated prose with great ardor. To increase his fluency, he was accustomed to engage in discussion with another literary lad by the name of Collins; but he had the good sense to escape the disputatious habit which this practice is in danger of developing, and which wise people, he tells us, seldom fall into. He modelled his style after Addison's *Spectator*, which was then a novelty in the colonies. But he had too much force of mind and character to become a mere imitator; and through a laborious apprenticeship he developed a style that is admirable for its simplicity, clearness, and force.

**84. First Literary Effort.** — He was early encouraged in his literary efforts. At the age of twelve he had been apprenticed to his brother James to learn the printing business. Here he worked on the *New England Courant*, the second newspaper that appeared in America. Some of the contributors occasionally met in the office to discuss the little essays that had appeared in the paper. Having caught the mania for appearing in print, and fearing to have his productions rejected if the authorship

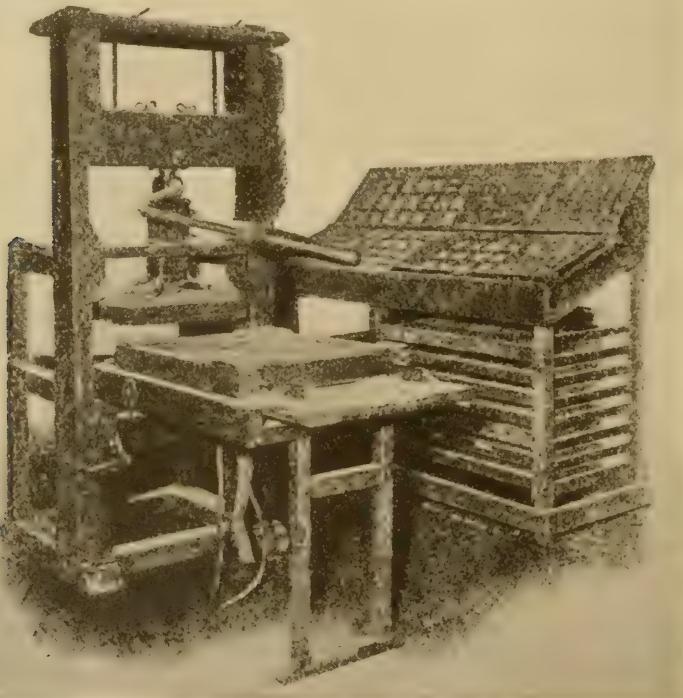
were known, he disguised his hand, wrote an anonymous paper, and slipped it at night under the door of the printing-house. It was found next morning, and discussed by the little company that called in as usual. "They read it," he says, "commented on it in my hearing, and I had the exquisite pleasure of finding it met with their approbation, and that, in their different guesses at the author, none were named but men of some character among us for learning and ingenuity." It is not strange that he continued his anonymous communications for some time.

**85. In Philadelphia.** — The apprenticeship, though not till he had mastered the printer's trade, came to an abrupt termination. Long dissatisfied with the ill-treatment received from his brother, who was a high-tempered, overbearing man, he at last ran away at the age of seventeen. He landed first at New York; and failing to find employment there, he continued his journey to Philadelphia. The figure he cut that first Sunday morning as he walked the streets with a roll under each arm, and excited the laughter of the young lady he afterwards married, is familiar to every one. He found employment, and attracted the notice of Governor Keith, who after a time persuaded him to go to England for a printer's outfit.

**86. In England.** — On reaching England, he found that he had been duped by Keith, who belonged to that class of men lavish in promises but miserly in help. The letter of credit which the governor had promised was wanting. In his embarrassment, Franklin was advised by a prudent business man whom he had met on the vessel, to seek employment at his trade. "Among the printers here," his friend argued, "you will improve yourself, and when you return to America, you will set up to greater advantage." This advice he wisely followed, and successively worked in two large printing-houses, where he used his eyes to good advantage. He practised his usual industry and temperance, and commanded the respect of his associates.

**87. Return to Philadelphia.** — After spending eighteen months in London, where his life morally was far from being a model,

he received an advantageous offer to return to Philadelphia and enter a store as clerk. After a promising beginning, this arrangement was in a few months brought to an end by the merchant's death. Franklin then returned to printing, and engaged with Keimer, for whom he had worked before going to England. The deficiencies of the printing-office were supplied by Franklin's



FRANKLIN'S PRINTING PRESS

ingenuity; for he cast type, prepared engravings, made ink, was "warehouse man, and, in short, quite a *factotum*." But as he taught the other workmen of the office, among whom were "a wild Irishman" and "an Oxford scholar," his services became less necessary; and on the first opportunity his employer provoked a quarrel, and brought the engagement to an end. This led to Franklin's setting up for himself; and he now entered upon a career of uninterrupted prosperity, which was to continue for more than sixty years.

**88. The Junto.** — But in the midst of his business projects, he did not neglect his literary culture. He formed a club, which was called the Junto, and to which most of his friends of literary taste belonged. Its object was mutual improvement by means of essays and discussions. For greater convenience of reference, a library was formed, each member of the club loaning such books as he could spare. Afterwards Franklin started a subscription library, the first of its kind in America. The club continued for nearly forty years, and was the best school of philosophy, morality, and politics in the province.

**89. Self-Control and Humility.** — Beyond most men, Franklin had the power of self-control. He was thus able from early manhood to bring his conduct under the direction of principles which he had deliberately adopted in the light of reason. When he was told by a Quaker friend that he was generally thought to be proud, and when he was satisfied of the fact by the evidence adduced (it would have been hard to convince most men), he at once added humility to the list of virtues in which he was to exercise himself; and he succeeded in acquiring at least its outward expression. He gave up his dogmatical manner in conversation and argument; and in place of positive assertion, he formed the habit of introducing his opinions with modest diffidence. He recognized the truth of Pope's lines: —

“Men must be taught, as if you taught them not,  
And things unknown proposed as things forgot.”

**90. Habit of Modest Statement.** — He accustomed himself to introduce his statements with “I conceive,” “I apprehend,” “It appears to me at present,” and other similar expressions. “And this mode,” he says, “which I at first put on with some violence to natural inclination, became at length easy, and so habitual to me, that perhaps for the last fifty years no one has ever heard a dogmatical expression escape me. And to this habit (after my character of integrity) I think it principally owing that I had early so much weight with my fellow citizens, when I

proposed new institutions, or alterations in the old; and so much influence in public councils, when I became a member; for I was but a bad speaker, never eloquent, subject to much hesitation in my choice of words, hardly correct in language, and yet I generally carried my point." All which is delightfully frank, and takes us, as it were, behind the scenes.

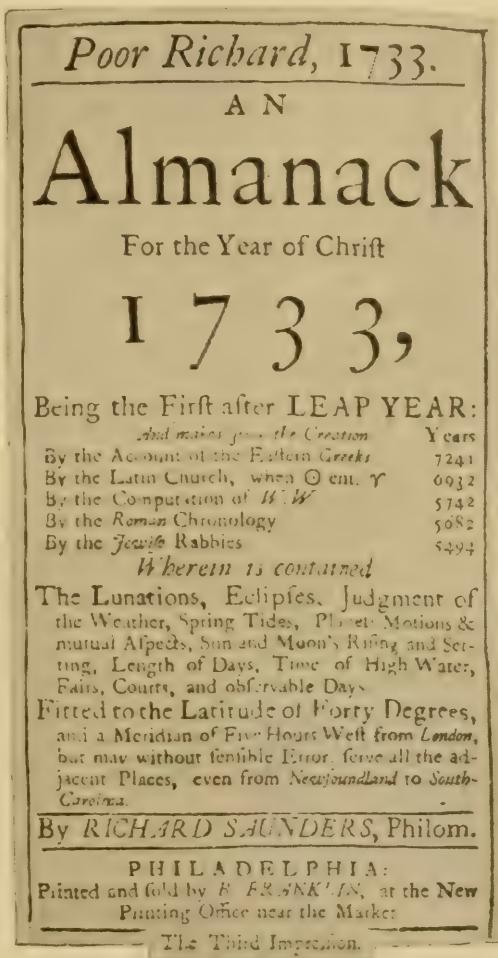
**91. Shrewdness and Industry.** — To return to his printing business, he pushed it with great shrewdness and energy, and with his usual frankness he lets us into what he considers the secret of his success. "In order to secure my credit and character as a tradesman, I took care not only to be in *reality* industrious and frugal, but to avoid the appearances to the contrary. I dressed plain, and was seen at no places of idle diversion. I never went out a fishing or shooting; a book, indeed, sometimes debauched me from my work, but that was seldom, was private, and gave no scandal; and to show that I was not above my business, I sometimes brought home the paper I purchased at the stores, through the streets on a wheelbarrow. Thus being esteemed an industrious, thriving young man, and paying duly for what I bought, the merchants who imported stationery solicited my custom; others proposed supplying me with books, and I went on prosperously."

**92. Newspaper Publisher.** — As opportunity afforded, he judiciously increased his business, publishing a newspaper which became the most influential in the colonies, and opening a stationer's shop. He regarded his newspaper as a means of benefiting the public; and besides reprinting extracts from the *Spectator*, he frequently contributed little essays of his own. Among these he mentions "a Socratic dialogue, tending to prove that, whatever might be his parts and abilities, a vicious man could not properly be called a man of sense."

**93. "Poor Richard's Almanac."** — In 1732 he began the publication of an Almanac under the name of Richard Saunders; it was continued about twenty-five years, and was commonly called "Poor Richard's Almanac." It had an annual sale of about ten

thousand copies, and proved quite a profitable undertaking. Considering it a useful means of conveying instruction to the common people, he filled every available corner "with proverbial sentences, chiefly such as inculcated industry and frugality as the means of procuring wealth, and thereby securing virtue; it being more difficult for a man in want to act always honestly, as, to use here one of those proverbs, *it is hard for an empty sack to stand upright.*"

These proverbs, very few of which were original, represent the practical wisdom of many nations and ages. In 1758 he brought the principal ones together in the form of a connected discourse, which is supposed to be delivered by a wise old man to the crowd attending an auction. "The piece," to give Franklin's account of it, "being universally approved, was copied in all the newspapers of the American continent, reprinted in Britain on a large sheet of paper, to be stuck up in houses; two translations were made of it in France, and great numbers bought by the clergy and gentry, to distribute gratis among their poor parishioners and tenants. In Pennsylvania, as it discouraged useless expense in foreign superfluities, some thought it had its share of influence in producing that growing



FAC-SIMILE OF PAGE OF POOR RICHARD'S ALMANAC

plenty of money, which was observable for several years after its publication."

**94. Interested in Public Affairs.** — By this time Franklin had become a prominent person in the community; and his business success having put him in easier circumstances, he was able to turn his attention more fully to public affairs. In 1736 he was chosen clerk of the General Assembly, and the following year he was appointed postmaster at Philadelphia. As a public-spirited citizen he sought to improve the condition of the city, and to this end he organized a regular police force, supported by taxation, and a voluntary fire company. When the Quaker Assembly refused to pass a militia law during the war of the Spanish Succession, he strongly set forth the defenceless condition of the province, and proposed the organization of a voluntary body of troops. The success of the enterprise was astonishing. At a public meeting in Philadelphia, the enrolment numbered more than five hundred in a single evening; and including the enlistment in the country, the number of volunteers at length reached ten thousand men, who formed themselves into companies and regiments, chose officers, and provided themselves with arms.

**95. Honors and Educational Activity.** — Labors and honors were now heaped upon him. He was appointed postmaster-general for America. Both Harvard and Yale honored him with the master's degree. He was the chief promoter in establishing an academy which afterwards became the University of Pennsylvania. In his educational views he was progressive beyond his time. He deserves a place among educational reformers. While building up his business, he had also gained a reading knowledge of French, Italian, and Spanish. From these he passed to Latin, for which he found the "preceding languages had greatly smoothed the way." Thus he was led by experience to recognize the truth of the maxim of Comenius, that "the nearer should precede the more remote." Hence he argued, as the philosopher Locke had done before him, that the ancient languages should be approached through the study of the modern languages.

**96. Plan for Colonial Union.** — In 1754 he was appointed a delegate to the Albany convention to consult with the Six Nations in regard to the common defence of the country against the French. It was then that he proposed "a plan for the union of all the colonies under one government, so far as might be necessary for defence and other important general purposes." It always remained his opinion that the adoption of this plan of union would have averted or certainly delayed the conflict with the mother country. "The colonies so united," he wrote in his old age, "would have been sufficiently strong to have defended themselves; there would then have been no need of troops from England; of course the subsequent pretext for taxing America, and the bloody contest it occasioned, would have been avoided. But such mistakes are not new; history is full of the errors of states and princes."

'Look round the habitable world, how few  
Know their own good, or knowing it, pursue.'"

**97. Defence of Western Pennsylvania.** — In Braddock's disastrous campaign, Franklin rendered the proud and over-confident general important aid; and if his prudent counsel had been followed, victory would have taken the place of defeat. Later he was commissioned to take charge of the defence of the western frontier of Pennsylvania, and discharged his difficult task in an energetic and successful manner. He knew the art of managing men, and under his direction three forts or stockades were built and provisioned in a short time.

**98. Scientific Experiments.** — In 1746 Franklin began his electrical experiments, which in a few years gave him a reputation abroad as a philosopher. Besides a number of new experiments invented by him, he was the first to point out clearly the existence of positive and negative electricity, and by his well-known experiment with the kite to prove the identity of lightning and electricity. His experiments and conclusions were set forth in various papers with the lucidity characteristic of his thought and style. His essays were read before the Royal Society,

published in England, and afterwards, through the influence of the great naturalist Buffon, also in France.

Though his views were attacked at various times, he abstained from all controversy on principle, and left his conclusions to take care of themselves. When urged, on one occasion, to defend his invention of the lightning-rod, he replied : " I have never entered into any controversy in defence of my philosophical opinions ; I leave them to take their chance in the world. If they are *right*, truth and experience will support them ; if *wrong*, they ought to be refuted and rejected. Disputes are apt to sour one's temper and disturb one's quiet." In recognition of his important contributions to electrical science, he was elected a member of the Royal Society and awarded the Copley medal for the year 1753. Among the scientists of the eighteenth century Franklin occupies a high rank.

**99. Honors Abroad.** — It would extend this sketch too far to trace in detail Franklin's labors abroad, first as the representative of Pennsylvania, and afterwards of the United States. In England he was cordially received as a philosopher and statesman. The universities of St. Andrews and Oxford conferred upon him the degree of Doctor of Laws. Learned societies enrolled his name in their membership. The municipality of Edinburgh gave him the freedom of the city. In France he received a greater ovation than had been accorded Voltaire. The people were enthusiastic ; the nobility *fêted* him, medals and medallions were struck off in great numbers. A Frenchman gave brilliant expression to Franklin's achievements in the famous line : —

"Eripuit coelo fulmen, sceptrumque tyrannis."<sup>1</sup>

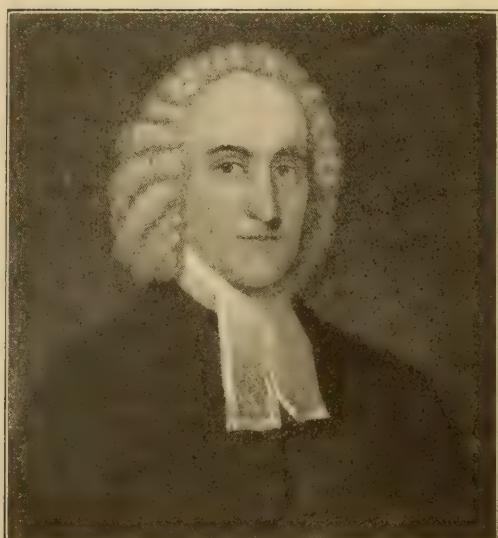
It was chiefly through his influence that the independence of the United States was recognized by France, and that French aid was extended for its achievement. He was one of the five commissioners appointed by Congress to negotiate the peace that put an end to the War of the Revolution in 1783.

<sup>1</sup> He has seized the lightning from heaven, and the sceptre from tyrants.

**100. Governor of Pennsylvania.** — In 1785, at his own request, he was relieved of his duties as minister to France, and returned to his native country. He received an enthusiastic welcome. After his fifty years of public service, it was his desire to spend his few remaining days in quiet. “I am again surrounded by my friends,” he writes, “with a fine family of grandchildren about my knees, and an affectionate, good daughter and son-in-law to take care of me.” His hopes, however, were disappointed. He was called to the gubernatorial chair of Pennsylvania for three successive years — the limit fixed by law. In 1787 he was a member of the convention to frame the Constitution of the United States. It was owing, perhaps, to his influence that the Constitution was unanimously adopted.

**101. Closing Years.** — The two or three last years of his life were a fitting close to his extraordinary career. Though suffering at times much physical pain, he lived in comfortable retirement, in the midst of his grandchildren and the company of friends. He retained his faculties to the last; and that genial humor which characterized his life never deserted him. His manners were easy and obliging; and his large benevolence diffused about him an atmosphere of unrestrained freedom and satisfaction. He looked forward to his approaching end with philosophic composure. “Death I shall submit to,” he said, “with the less regret as, having seen during a long life a good deal of this world, I feel a growing curiosity to be acquainted with some other; and can cheerfully, with filial confidence, resign my spirit to the conduct of that great and good Parent of mankind who has so graciously protected and prospered me from my birth to the present hour.” The end came the 17th of April, 1790, at the age of eighty-four years; and his body, followed by an immense throng of people, was laid to rest by that of his wife in the yard of Christ Church.

## *JONATHAN EDWARDS*



JONATHAN EDWARDS

**102. Standard of Judgment.** — In considering a man's life, we should take into consideration its historic environment. We should judge it, not by the standards of our day, but by the standards then prevailing. Only for moral obliquity must there be small allowance; for whatever may be the laxity of the times, every man has in his breast a monitor against vice.

**103. A Great, Austere Life.** — If we study Jonathan Edwards with proper sympathy, we must pronounce his life a great life. Though his character was colored by Puritan austerity, and his religious experience involved what many believe to have been morbid emotions, there is no questioning the fact of his masterful intellect and his stainless integrity. He certainly was not, what a ferocious critic has styled him, a theological "monomaniac." There is much less reason to dissent from the judgment of another reviewer who says of him: "Remarkable for the beauty of his face and person, lordly in the easy sweep and grasp of his intellect, wonderful in his purity of soul and in his simple devotion to the truth, the world has seldom seen in finer combination all the great qualities of a godlike manhood."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Bibliotheca Sacra*, xxvi. 255.

**104. Parentage and Early Training.** — Jonathan Edwards, who was born at East Windsor, Conn., Oct. 5, 1703, was of excellent Puritan stock. His father, the Rev. Timothy Edwards, was for sixty-four years the honored pastor of the Congregational church of East Windsor; and his mother was the daughter of the Rev. Solomon Stoddard, who was pastor at Northampton, Mass., for more than fifty years, and one of the most eminent ministers of his day. From his mother, who was a woman of superior ability and excellent education, he inherited not only his delicate features and gentle disposition, but also a large measure of his intellectual force. His father, who was distinguished as a Latin, Greek, and Hebrew scholar, was accustomed for many years, in addition to his regular ministerial duties, to prepare young men for college. With no mediæval prejudice against the higher education of woman, he instructed his daughters (there were no fewer than ten of them) in the same studies pursued by the young men. It was in this cultivated and studious home, under the refining influence and instruction of his older sisters, that young Edwards received his preparatory training.

**105. Observation of Nature.** — In his childhood he exhibited extraordinary precocity. He was not, as sometimes happens, so absorbed in his books as to lose taste for the observation of nature. For an English correspondent of his father, he wrote at the age of twelve years an elaborate paper upon spiders, which shows remarkable powers of observation. It is said actually to have enlarged the boundaries of scientific knowledge. Had the young author given himself to natural science, there can be no doubt that he would have stood in the foremost rank.

**106. At Yale.** — In 1716, when in his thirteenth year, young Edwards entered Yale College. It was the day of small things with the institution; and, the president residing at a distance of forty miles, the government and discipline were chiefly in the hands of tutors. The result was, as might be expected, a good deal of idleness and disorder among the students. But such was young Edwards's thirst for knowledge that he not only re-

frained from the insubordination of his fellow-students, but by his scholarship and integrity retained their respect and confidence.

**107. Reading and Study.** — At the age of fourteen he read Locke's "Essay on the Human Understanding"; and though it can hardly be classed as juvenile literature, he declared that in the perusal of it he enjoyed a far higher pleasure "than the most greedy miser finds, when gathering up handfuls of silver and gold from some newly discovered treasure." While proficient in every department of study, he excelled especially in mental science. He had been trained by his father to make much use of the pen in studying; and while still an undergraduate he began to put into clear shape his ideas about the leading terms of mental philosophy, such as cause, existence, space, time, substance, matter, and so on. His notebook of this period shows surprising depth of thought and lucidity of expression. At graduation he stood head and shoulders above his class.

**108. Religious Experience.** — Religion, which became the dominant interest of his subsequent life, engaged his attention toward the end of his college course. He passed through the deep spiritual conflicts that so often, especially under the Puritan type of faith, are associated with profoundly earnest natures. But at last his spiritual struggles issued in a sweet "sense of the glorious majesty and grace of God"—a feeling that added a strange charm to external nature. "The appearance of every thing," he says, "was altered. There seemed to be, as it were, a calm, sweet cast, or appearance of divine glory, in almost every thing."

**109. Preacher and Tutor.** — After graduating, he spent nearly two years at the college in theological study. At the age of nineteen he was licensed to preach the gospel, and sent to New York to minister to a small congregation of Presbyterians. Though he filled the pulpit with great acceptance, the relation did not become permanent, and in 1723 he was elected tutor in Yale College. At this time the office of tutor was a trying position, and it is a significant fact that a year later he wrote: "I have now

abundant reason to be convinced of the troublesomeness and vexation of the world, and that it never will be another kind of a world." But such was his skill in discipline and success in instruction, that President Stiles spoke of him and his associates as "the pillar tutors, and the glory of the college at this critical period."

**110. Seventy Resolutions.** — In his twentieth year, and just before entering upon his tutorship, he drew up seventy resolutions for the government of his heart and life. Though they are tinged with a Puritan austerity, and unduly accentuate, perhaps, the religious element of life, they reveal an extraordinary depth and earnestness of character. He was accustomed to read them over once a week. They are included in the "illustrative selections," as revealing the secret of his earnest, laborious life.

**111. Domestic Life.** — In 1726 Jonathan Edwards was called as pastor to Northampton, where the next twenty-four years of his life were passed. The following year he was married to Miss Pierrepont of New Haven, a lady who added to unusual intellectual gifts and attainments an executive ability and considerate sympathy that fitted her in an eminent degree to be the helpmate of her husband. She relieved him entirely of domestic cares. There is a tradition that he did not know his own cows. Though his constant inattention to the concerns of his household hardly rendered him a model husband, he gave himself with all the more devotion to his sermons and theological studies. He regularly spent thirteen hours a day in his study; and when out for recreation, which was usually on horseback, he carried pen and paper with him to note down such valuable thoughts as might occur to him. In order to keep up the necessary physical strength for his great intellectual labors, he was careful to take regular exercise, and observed the strictest temperance in eating and drinking. He was exceedingly thorough in his methods of study. He could never be satisfied with hasty or superficial work; and as we read his sermons and numerous volumes, his clearness of view, his power of analysis, and his irresistible cogency of reasoning, afford continual astonishment and pleasure.

**112. Pulpit Power.**—Among the many able preachers of America, he stands as one of the greatest. He dwelt habitually on the weightiest doctrines of the Christian faith; and in his treatment of them there is a Miltonic grasp of thought and vigor of language. He was not eloquent in manner or expression; his voice was weak, and he kept his eyes closely fixed on his manuscript; but such was his overpowering spiritual earnestness that his sermons were sometimes startling in their effect. When he preached his famous sermon, “*Sinners in the Hands of an Angry God,*” the feelings of his audience deepened into an insupportable agony; and at last the cry burst forth, “What must we do to be saved?” In those days people did not go to church to be entertained; and with an endurance that seems almost incredible now, they listened, with unflagging attention, to closely reasoned sermons two hours long. It was for audiences of this kind that the sermons of Edwards were prepared; and to such persons as take them up with sufficient determination, and are able to appreciate their powerful reasoning, they appear veritable masterpieces.

**113. “Great Awakening.”**—Under his preaching in 1735 there began at Northampton a new interest in religion, which afterwards extending throughout the American colonies has been known as the “*Great Awakening.*” The celebrated Whitefield contributed much to this revival. Though attended at times with great excitement and extravagance, this movement upon the whole seems to have been helpful to morality and piety. It was in this connection that Edwards wrote “*Some Thoughts concerning the Present Revival of Religion in New England*”—a work of such spiritual discernment, practical wisdom, and conservative judgment, that it has since been regarded as an authority on the subject. He was not friendly to the fanatical tendencies sometimes exhibited during the “*Great Awakening*”; and in order to distinguish between the true and the false evidences of a Christian life, he wrote his “*Treatise concerning the Religious Affections.*” Though defective in style, as indeed are all his

works, it occupies a very high rank as a treatise on practical religion.

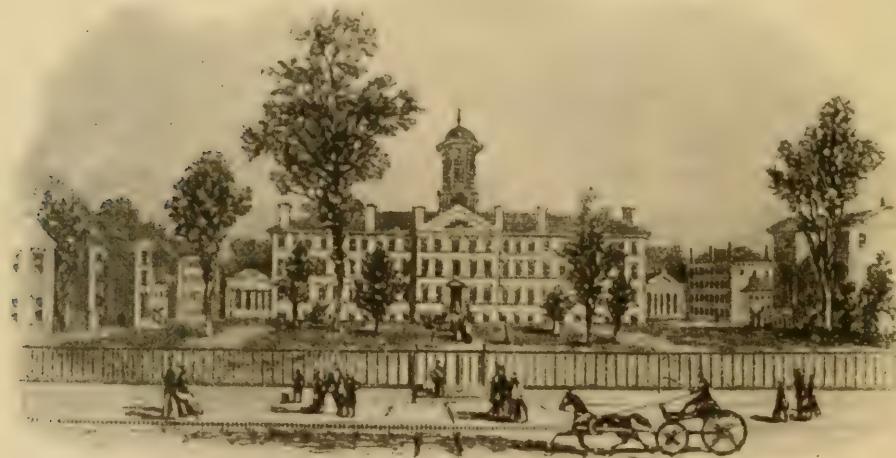
**114. Controversy and Resignation.** — For nearly twenty years Jonathan Edwards had a firm hold upon the affections of his people. Then there came a reaction, which finally resulted in his being ejected from his pastoral charge. Contrary to the prevailing custom at Northampton and in other parts of New England, he maintained that only consistent Christians should be admitted to the Lord's Supper. A bitter controversy followed. Though contending with heroic courage for what he believed to be right, he constantly exhibited the beauty of a meek and forgiving spirit. He was finally forced to resign in 1750.

**115. Missionary Work.** — In 1751 he was called to Stockbridge, forty miles west of Northampton, to serve as pastor to a congregation there, and at the same time to act as missionary to a tribe of Indians in the vicinity. The congregation was small, and the work among the Indians unpromising. It was a field that especially required persistent personal work. Confirmed, as he was, in retiring and studious habits, it is not strange that, in spite of his faithful preaching, he was unsuccessful as a missionary. But among the unfavorable surroundings of a frontier settlement, he continued his literary labors, and composed his ablest works.

**116. "Freedom of the Will."** — In 1754 appeared his famous treatise entitled "Inquiry into the Freedom of the Will." It is his greatest work, the argument of which he had been slowly elaborating for years. It placed him at once, not only at the head of American writers, but among the world's profoundest thinkers. "On the arena of metaphysics," says the great Dr. Chalmers, "he stood the highest of all his contemporaries, and that, too, at a time when Hume was aiming his deadliest thrusts at the foundations of morality, and had thrown over the infidel cause the whole *éclat* of his reputation." According to the judgment of Sir James Mackintosh, "in the power of subtle argument, he was, perhaps, unmatched, certainly unsurpassed among men." Among his other works published while he was at Stockbridge are

"A Dissertation on the Nature of True Virtue," and a treatise on "Original Sin."

**117. President of Princeton.** — In 1758 he was called to the presidency of the College of New Jersey, a position which he accepted with hesitancy and misgivings. He questioned his natural aptitude for the office, and hesitated to assume duties that would interfere with the studious habits of his life. In a letter to the trustees, in which he speaks with great frankness, he furnishes some interesting facts about his manner of life. "My



COLLEGE OF NEW JERSEY IN 1758 (Now Princeton University)

method of study," he says, "from my first beginning the work of the ministry, has been very much by writing; applying myself, in this way, to improve every important hint; pursuing the clue to my utmost, when any thing in reading, meditation, or conversation, has been suggested to my mind, that seemed to promise light in any weighty point; thus penning what appeared to me my best thoughts, on innumerable subjects, for my own benefit." In the same letter he speaks of a great work that he had on his "mind and heart"; namely, his "History of the Work of Redemption."

**118. "History of Redemption."** — The plan, as he outlines it, reminds us of Milton and Dante. "This history," he says "will be carried on with regard to all three worlds, heaven, earth, and hell; considering the connected, successive events and alterations in each so far as the Scriptures give any light; introducing all parts of divinity in that order which is most Scriptural and most natural, a method which appears to me the most beautiful and entertaining, wherein every divine doctrine will appear to the greatest advantage, in the brightest light, and in the most striking manner, showing the admirable contexture and harmony of the world." This work, so grandly outlined, was left unfinished at his death; but the manuscript sermons, which formed the basis of it, were reduced to the form of a treatise by his friend Dr. Erskine of Edinburgh, and the work, which has had a wide circulation, first appeared in that city in 1777.

**119. Last Days.** — He was inaugurated as president of the College of New Jersey in 1758, but performed the duties of his office less than five weeks. The smallpox having made its appearance in Princeton, he deemed it advisable to be inoculated. At that time inoculation was regarded as a more serious thing than at present. The trustees were consulted, and gave their consent. A skilful physician was engaged to come from Philadelphia to perform the operation; but in spite of all precautions, the inoculation terminated fatally. He died March 22, 1758, in the fifty-fifth year of his age. In his last hours he retained the beautiful faith and resignation that had characterized his active life. Shortly before he expired, some friends, not thinking that he heard them, were lamenting the loss that his death would bring to the college and the church. Interrupting them he said, "Trust in God, and ye need not fear." These were his last words.

**120. A Biographer's Estimate.** — "Other men have, no doubt, excelled him in particular qualities or accomplishments. There have been far more learned men; far more eloquent men; far more enterprising and active men, in the out-door work of the sacred office. But, in the assemblage and happy union of those

high qualities, intellectual and moral, which constitute finished excellence, as a man, a Christian, a divine, and a philosopher, he was, undoubtedly, one of the greatest and best men that have adorned this, or any other country, since the Apostolic age."

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

Consult the general bibliography, page 609. *Illustrative annotated selections from Benjamin Franklin and Jonathan Edwards are given on pages 403-422 of this volume.*

Extracts from the minor writers will be found in Stedman and Hutchinson's "Library of American Literature," Cairns's "Early American Writers," Trent and Wells's "Colonial Prose and Poetry," Trent's "Southern Writers," MacDonald's "Documentary Source Book of American History" (1606-1898), and Albert B. Hart's "American History Told by Contemporaries," Vol. II.

Franklin's "Autobiography," J. B. McMaster's "Benjamin Franklin" (American Men of Letters Series), J. T. Morse's "Benjamin Franklin" (American Statesmen Series), P. L. Ford's "The Many Sided Franklin," Miller's "Life of Jonathan Edwards" and A. V. G. Allen's "Life of Jonathan Edwards." In Holmes's "Pages from an Old Volume of Life" will be found an interesting essay on Edwards. Refer to Poole's "Index to Periodical Literature" for numerous magazine and review articles.

For the historical background consult the standard American histories. In addition to the works of Fiske and Lodge previously mentioned (p. 37), Fiske's "The Colonial Era" (Scribners), Thwaites's "The Colonies" (Longmans), and Doyle's "English Colonies in America" (Holt) are recommended.

The following poems deal with incidents of this period: Thos. Dunn English's "The Sack of Deerfield," Longfellow's "Ballad of the French Fleet," and Whittier's "Prophecy of Samuel Sewall."

Historical fiction illustrating the Second Colonial Period: Mary Johnston's "Audrey" (1727), William Gilmore Simms's

"The Yemassee" (1715), Amelia E. Barr's "The Bow of Orange Ribbon" (1706), James Fenimore Cooper's "The Leather-Stocking Tales" (1750-60), Wm. M. Thackeray's "The Virginians" (1756-83), John Esten Cooke's "The Virginia Comedians" (1763-65), and R. W. Chambers's "Cardigan" (1744-73).



## *REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD*

---

### REPRESENTATIVE WRITERS

THOMAS JEFFERSON

ALEXANDER HAMILTON

### OTHER WRITERS

### NEW ENGLAND

**JOHN TRUMBULL** (1750-1831). Born in Connecticut, and graduated at Yale. Wrote essays in the style of the *Spectator*, and in 1782 completed "McFingal," a satire upon the Tories in the manner of Butler's "Hudibras." (See text.)

**JOEL BARLOW** (1754-1812). Poet and politician, born in Connecticut. In 1787 he published an epic poem entitled "The Vision of Columbus," which appeared anew in revised form in 1805 under the title of "The Columbiad." It is a dull epic, but his "Hasty Pudding" is still readable. Ambassador to France in 1811. (See text.)

**TIMOTHY DWIGHT** (1752-1817). President of Yale College from 1795 to the time of his death. A theologian whose works are still instructive. He wrote the hymn, "I love Thy Kingdom, Lord," and the patriotic song "Columbia, Columbia, to Glory Arise."

**JOHN ADAMS** (1735-1826). Born in Massachusetts. A statesman of great ability; ambassador to England in 1785, and second President of the United States in 1797. He published an elaborate "Defense of the Constitution of the United States" (3 vols.) in London in 1787.

**MRS. SUSANNA ROWSON** (1762-1824). A novelist of English birth, residing in Boston. Her "Charlotte Temple" was the most popular story of its day. Besides a half dozen novels, she wrote several dramatic pieces.

**PHILLIS WHEATLEY** (1753-1794). A verse writer of African birth. Brought to this country as a slave, she was purchased by Mrs. Wheatley of Boston, by whom she was well educated. Her "Poems on Various Subjects" were published in London in 1773, and gained a temporary popularity.

## MIDDLE STATES

CHARLES BROCKDEN BROWN (1771-1810). The first American novelist. Born in Philadelphia. He studied law, but abandoned it for literature. He wrote, "Wieland," "Ormond," and "Arthur Mervyn," all of which are characterized by imaginative and sometimes weird ingenuity. (See text.)

FRANCIS HOPKINSON (1737-1791). A lawyer and politician, born in Philadelphia. One of the first graduates of the College of Philadelphia, afterwards the University of Pennsylvania. One of the signers of the Declaration of Independence. He wrote many satires, the best known of which is "The Battle of the Kegs."

JOSEPH HOPKINSON (1770-1842). A distinguished lawyer. He graduated at the University of Pennsylvania, and was a member of Congress in 1815-1819. He is best known as the author of "Hail Columbia," which was written for the benefit of a player at a Philadelphia theatre.

PHILIP FRENEAU (1752-1832). A poet, editor, and political writer, born in New York and educated at the College of New Jersey. Edited several papers, among which were the *N. Y. Daily Advertiser* and the *National Gazette* of Philadelphia. He published several volumes of poems, of which "Lines to a Wild Honeysuckle" and "The Indian Burying Ground" are regarded the best. (See text.)

THOMAS PAINE (1737-1809). A native of England, who came to Philadelphia in 1774. His pamphlet entitled "Common Sense," an able defence of the American Colonies, won him the friendship of Washington, Franklin, and other distinguished American leaders. His "Rights of Man" (1791) is an eloquent defence of the French Revolution. "The Age of Reason," written while in a French prison, favors Deism.

HUGH HENRY BRACKENRIDGE (1748-1816). A lawyer and humorist of Philadelphia, whose works were quite popular in their day. "Modern Chivalry" was his principal work, though he wrote a dramatic poem, "Bunker's Hill," and a few lyrics.

ALEXANDER WILSON (1766-1813). A Scottish poet and ornithologist, who came to this country in 1794. His narrative poem, "Watty and Meg," had in its day an immense vogue — 100,000 copies sold in a few weeks. But his principal work is "American Ornithology."

## VIRGINIA

JAMES MADISON (1751-1836). A great statesman and political writer. He was Secretary of State under Jefferson, and in 1809 became President. One of the authors of "The Federalist."

**JOHN MARSHALL** (1755-1835). A statesman, and Chief Justice of the United States. He was a captain in the American Revolution, and Secretary of State under John Adams. As Chief Justice, to which office he was appointed in 1801, he was said to be "conscience made flesh, reason incarnate." His "Life of Washington" is an elaborate and judicious biography.

**WILLIAM WIRT** (1772-1834). A native of Maryland, he long resided in Virginia, where he practised law and served in the legislature. He was attorney general of the United States, 1817-1829. He afterwards settled in Baltimore. He wrote "Letters of a British Spy," containing sketches of popular orators, and a "Life of Patrick Henry," an excellent biography.

**GEORGE WASHINGTON** (1732-1799). Commander-in-Chief during the Revolution and first President of the United States. His writings, including his diary and correspondence, fill fourteen volumes. His "Farewell Address" would be sufficient to give him a place in the literature of his country.

#### CONTEMPORARY WRITERS IN ENGLAND

RICHARD BRINSLEY SHERIDAN (1751-1816); EDMUND BURKE (1730-1797); EDWARD GIBBON (1737-1794); SAMUEL JOHNSON (1709-1784); WILLIAM COWPER (1731-1800); OLIVER GOLDSMITH (1728-1784); ROBERT BURNS (1759-1796); ANN RADCLIFFE (1764-1823); JANE AUSTEN (1775-1817); ROBERT SOUTHEY (1774-1843).

### III

#### *THE REVOLUTIONARY PERIOD*

(1763-1815)

**121. Two Important Events.** — The Revolutionary Period embraces about fifty years, and includes two events of great importance. The first of these is the War of Independence; the other, the adoption of the Constitution. Around these two events gathers nearly all the literature of the time. This literature can be understood only as we comprehend the spirit and principles of the founders of our republic. No other period better illustrates the relation of literature to prevailing social conditions. For half a century the struggle against British injustice and oppression, and the establishment of a great national government, absorbed a large part of the intellectual energies of the people. Great practical questions were pressing for solution. It was the age of political pamphlets and popular oratory. The literature of the time arose, not to enrich the treasures of artistic expression, but to mould and move popular thought and action.

---

#### CONTEMPORARY EVENTS IN ENGLAND

George III, 1760-1820.	Colonization of Australia, 1802.
Stamp Act, 1765.	Abolition of Slave Trade, 1807.
American War, 1775-1783.	The Peninsular War, 1808-1814.
War with France, 1793.	Second War with America, 1812.
Union of Great Britain and Ireland, 1801.	South Africa Acquired, 1815.

**122. Patriotic Heroism.** — The leaders of the revolutionary movement were heroes. We cannot peruse their determined and often eloquent words without being moved with admiration. There is an ardor in them that kindles anew the spirit of freedom. The deliberate and resolute courage of the Revolutionary patriots has never been surpassed. True to the spirit of their forefathers, who had sought refuge from oppression in the wilds of a new continent, they were bravely jealous of their liberties. With Anglo-Saxon fidelity they were loyal to England until repeated and inexcusable acts of tyranny drove them into resistance. It was only when the hope of receiving justice from the mother country had completely died out, that the desire and purpose of independence arose.

**123. British Tyranny.** — The general cause of the Revolution was the stupid and tyrannical claim of the British government "to bind the colonies in all things whatsoever." The fatal course of George III and of his ministers may be best explained as a madness sent from heaven, like the hardening of Pharaoh's heart, to prepare the way for the coming of a great nation. For many years the British king, supported by Parliament, had pursued a policy of usurpation and tyranny. The list of grievances in the Declaration of Independence, where each statement points to a particular fact, makes up a terrific indictment. Jefferson was only faithful to facts when he declared, "The history of the present king of Great Britain is a history of unremitting injuries and usurpations, among which appears no solitary fact to contradict the uniform tenor of the rest, but all have in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over these states." The petitions and remonstrances of the colonists remained unnoticed. The king demanded absolute and abject submission.

**124. Spirit of Liberty.** — But it was impossible that the people of America should become a race of slaves. Liberty was a part of their inheritance as Englishmen. They cherished the memory of Magna Charta and the Bill of Rights of 1689. The tragic fate of Charles I, brought to the block for his tyranny, was not forgotten. The hardships and dangers connected with the subjugation of an untamed continent had served to develop their native strength, courage, and independence. They were the last people in the world tamely to submit to oppression and wrong. They maintained that, by nature as well as by common law, the right of taxation rests with the people. To take their property by taxation without their consent was justly held to be tyranny. When, in violation of this fundamental principle of civil liberty, the British government persisted in the claim to tax the colonies at pleasure, the inevitable result was united and resolute resistance.

**125. A Group of Statesmen.** — The necessities of the times produced a generation of political thinkers and writers. The Continental Congress of 1774, which included among its members Washington, Jefferson, Franklin, and Adams, was one of extraordinary ability. No abler legislative body ever came together. The leaders of popular thought were forced to reflect upon the fundamental principles of government. The result was a clearness of vision in relation to human rights that is almost without parallel. The discussions and state papers of the time have extorted praise from the ablest European statesmen. Many of the speeches of the time possess an eloquence that compares favorably with the highest oratory of either ancient or modern times. While the *belles-lettres* literature of the Revolutionary Period is insignificant in both quantity and quality, no more interesting or important body of political literature was ever brought together in the same

space of time. It is necessary to mention only the Declaration of Independence, the Constitution, and "The Federalist."

**126. Independence.** — In the beginning of the revolutionary movement, the people of America did not aim at independence. They were loyal to England. At first their object was simply to correct the injustice done them by the British government. Their petitions were accompanied with sincere professions of loyalty to the British crown. But the spirit of independence imperceptibly gained in strength. At last, as the conflict deepened, separation from Great Britain became inevitable. Submission and reconciliation were no longer possible. On the 4th of July, 1776, the representatives of the colonies, in Congress assembled, issued their sublime Declaration of Independence, and America entered upon its career of grandeur and freedom.

**127. Unjust Taxation.** — The Americans based the justice of their cause on two grounds: first, their rights as Englishmen; and second, their natural rights as men. Since the days of the Great Charter, the king had been denied the right of imposing taxes at pleasure. The attempt to do so was an act of tyranny that had already cost one king his head. The colonies maintained that they were not under the jurisdiction of Parliament. They were not represented in that body. The right of taxation rested only with their own popular assemblies. The effort of Parliament to impose taxes upon them was, therefore, an evident usurpation of authority.

**128. Natural Rights.** — But the American colonists went farther than a defence of their rights under the constitution and common law of England. They appealed to their natural rights as men. "Among the natural rights of the colonists," wrote Samuel Adams in 1772, "are these: first, a right to life; secondly, to liberty; thirdly, to property — together

with the right to support and defend them in the best manner they can." In the Declaration of Independence the same appeal is made to fundamental natural principles.

**129. Defect of the Confederation.** — The happy issue of the Revolution in 1783 settled forever the questions which related to British oppression, and which for twenty years had so largely occupied the thought of Americans. Then followed an era of discussion in relation to the form and powers of the national government. During the Revolution there had been no central power. Under the Articles of Confederation adopted in 1778, the colonies were organized into a loose confederacy. Congress was narrowly restricted in its powers, and the ratification of nine States was necessary to complete an act of legislation. "The fundamental defect of the Confederation," says Jefferson, "was that Congress was not authorized to act immediately on the people, and by its own officers. Their power was only requisitory; and these requisitions were addressed to the several legislatures, to be by them carried into execution, without other coercion than the moral principle of duty. This allowed, in fact, a negative to every legislature, on every measure proposed by Congress; a negative so frequently exercised in practice, as to benumb the action of the Federal government, and to render it inefficient in its general objects, and more especially in pecuniary and foreign concerns." During the continuance of the Revolution, the sense of common danger naturally held the colonies together. The requisitions of Congress were generally complied with. But after the war, the country fell into great disorder and distress, and the inadequacy of the Confederation became generally apparent.

**130. Framing the Constitution.** — Accordingly, in 1787, a general convention was held in Philadelphia to revise the Articles of Confederation. Washington was chosen president.

A committee of revision submitted as its report the first draft of the present Constitution of the United States. The discussions, which were secret, lasted for several months; and in view of conflicting opinions and interests, the convention was several times on the point of giving up in despair. The nation trembled on the brink of dissolution and ruin. But in each instance further deliberation resulted in compromise and agreement. When completed, the Constitution did not wholly satisfy any one; it was unanimously accepted, however, as the best result attainable under the circumstances. It remedied the obvious defects of the Articles of Confederation. It established a national government with legislative, executive, and judicial departments; and the results thus far have justified the judgment of Gladstone, that it is "the most wonderful work ever struck off at a given time by the brain and purpose of man."

**131. Federalist and Anti-Federalist.** — After the completion of the work of the convention, the Constitution came before the people of the several States for ratification or rejection. For the first time the American people were divided into two great parties. All local differences were swallowed up in the larger issue relating to the national government. Those who favored the adoption of the Constitution were known as Federalists; those who opposed it were called Anti-Federalists. Political feeling ran high. The question of ratification was discussed in the newspaper and debated in the public assembly. Party opinion was sometimes emphasized by mob violence. In New York the leader of the Anti-Federalists was Governor Clinton. The leader on the opposite side was Hamilton, who, in coöperation with Madison and Jay, largely influenced popular sentiment by the series of powerful essays known collectively as "The Federalist." In Virginia,

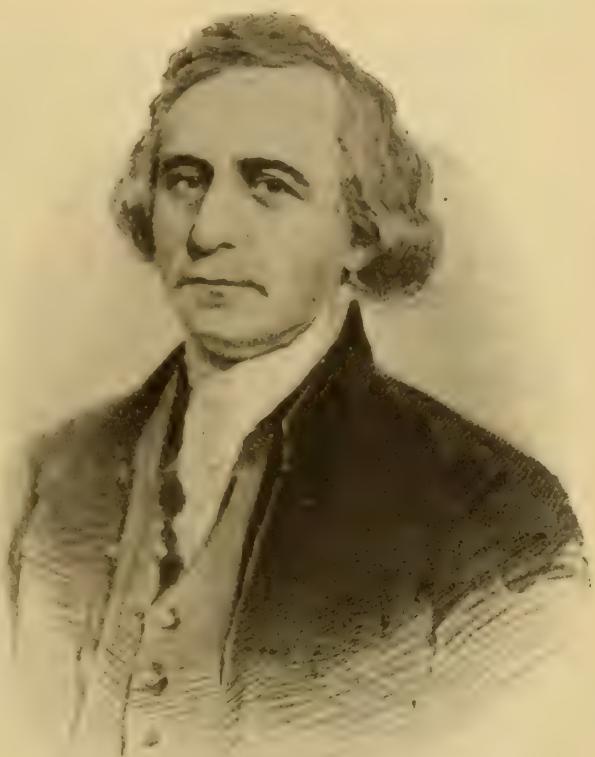
Patrick Henry used all his influence and eloquence to prevent the adoption of the Constitution; but he was successfully opposed by Edmund Randolph, governor of the State.

**132. Grounds of Opposition and Support.** — The general ground of opposition lay, first, in dislike of a strong national government; and secondly, in the absence of sufficient guarantees (since supplied by amendments) to secure the liberties of the people. The reasons in favor of adoption are succinctly stated in the preamble of the Constitution itself: namely, "to form a more perfect union, establish justice, ensure domestic tranquillity, provide for the common defence, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity."

**133. The New Government.** — In spite of the strong feeling against the Constitution, it was ratified by eleven States before the end of 1788. The following year the new government was inaugurated, with Washington as the unanimous choice of the people for president. There remained, however, many perplexing questions to be settled. The financial policy of the government; the relations of the United States with foreign powers; the acquisition of new territory — these were some of the questions that engaged the attention of thoughtful minds. In 1812 it again became necessary to meet British insolence and aggression by force. The ground of hostilities was compressed into the rallying cry of "Free trade and sailors' rights." In a conflict lasting more than two years, England was again defeated. With the happy solution of all these problems, and the rapid development in population and wealth, the United States at last assumed an honorable place among the great family of nations.

**134. Theology and Poetry.** — Such were the prevailing influences controlling literature during the Revolutionary

Period. It would be a mistake, however, to suppose that the entire literary activity of the country was confined to popular oratory, political pamphlets, and official documents. Theology was not entirely neglected; and Timothy Dwight's "Theology Explained and Defended," in a series of sermons, was a standard in its day, and may still be studied with profit. The mighty influences at work naturally sought an auxiliary in poetry. Accordingly, we find a large number of satires, more or less extended, many popular ballads, mostly crude in composition, and at least one pretentious epic, so stately and tedious that it is never read. Here and there we find a poem or other literary production independent of the political controversies of the time. Such is Philip Freneau's "The Wild Honeysuckle":—



PHILIP FRENEAU

"Fair flower, that dost so comely grow,  
Hid in this silent, dull retreat,  
Untouched thy honey'd blossoms blow,

Unseen thy little branches greet:  
No roving foot shall find thee here,  
No busy hand provoke a tear."

**135. Charles Brockden Brown.** — Here should be mentioned the work of Charles Brockden Brown, who among our



CHARLES BROCKDEN BROWN

native authors has the credit of first adopting literature as a profession. His early years were marked by an extraordinary fondness for study and by a rare precocity of genius. Virgil and Homer stirred his poetic impulses, and scarcely out of

school, he planned three epic poems connected with American history. Columbus, Cortez, and Pizarro appealed to him as epic heroes.

He first gave himself to the practice of law ; but like not a few others in the history of American literature, he soon abandoned the bar for the pen. He became a contributor to the periodical literature of New York and Philadelphia, and in 1803, in the latter city, he founded the *Literary Magazine and American Register*, which had a career of five years. He was not indifferent to the political questions of his day ; and in his "Cession of Louisiana to France," he advocated, with decided energy of style, the purchase of that region and the progressive territorial expansion of the United States.

**136. His Various Novels.** — But Brown's principal claim to a place in the history of our literature depends upon his fiction. In spite of his feeble health, which necessitated the utmost care in diet and exercise, he wrote no fewer than six novels, among which "Wieland," "Ormond," "Arthur Mervyn" and "Edgar Huntley" deserve special mention. He was influenced in his matter and style by the English novelist William Godwin, in whose "Caleb Williams" he finds "transcendent merits as compared to the mass of novels." He deals with the mysterious ; but in spite of their improbability, his novels still possess an unmistakable power. Though lacking in the delineation of character, he has something of Poe's power in describing weird scenes and morbid psychologic conditions.

**137. A Political Satire.** — The principal satire of the period is John Trumbull's "McFingal," which was undertaken, as he tells us, "with a political view, at the instigation of some leading members of the first Congress," and was published in part in Philadelphia in 1775. It is written in imitation of

Butler's " Hudibras," and does not suffer in comparison with that famous satire upon the Puritans of England. Some of its

lines are easily mistaken for Butler's, and have been so quoted; for example: —

"A thief ne'er felt the  
halter draw  
With good opinion of  
the law."

Or this, —

"For any man with half  
an eye  
What stands before him  
may espy  
But optics sharp it needs,  
I ween,  
To see what is not to be  
seen."

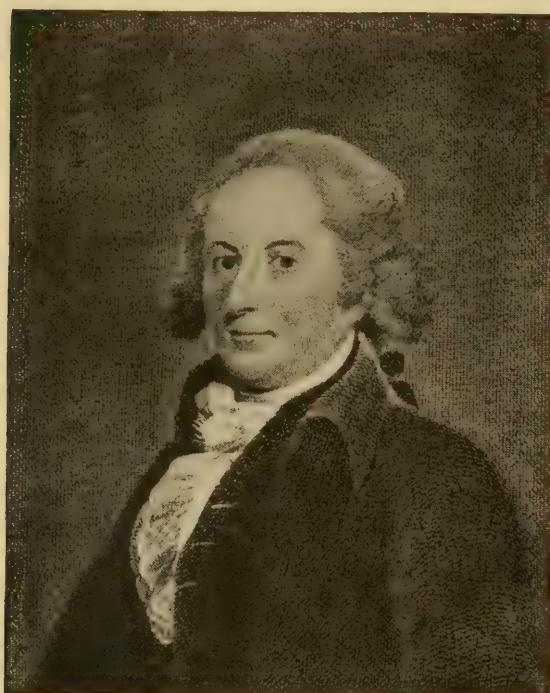
Trumbull does not always spare his coun-

trymen. In the following lines there is a very good hit at slavery. After describing the erection of a liberty-pole, he continues: —

"And on its top, the flag unfurled  
Waved triumph o'er the gazing world,  
Inscribed with inconsistent types  
Of liberty and thirteen stripes."

The hero McFingal is a Tory squire, who in resisting the Whigs comes to grief, and suffers the peculiar revolutionary punishment of tar and feathers.

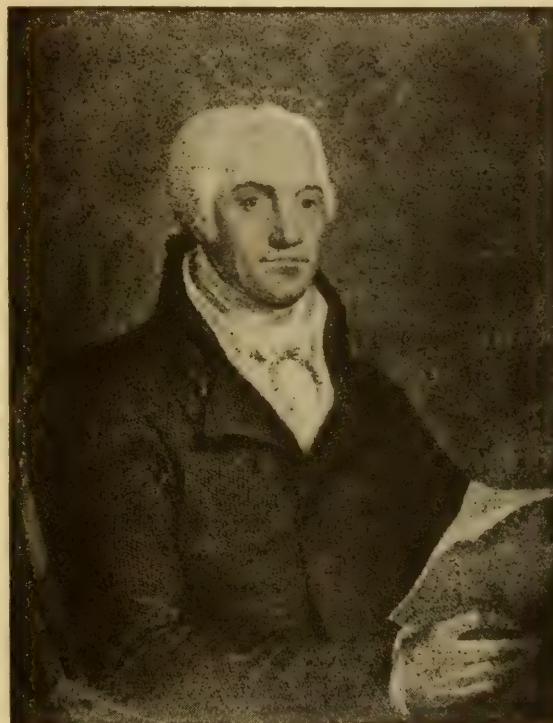
**138. " Yankee Doodle."** — " Yankee Doodle " belongs to this period. The tune is an old one; and the hero himself,



JOHN TRUMBULL

who had previously figured in Holland and England may be regarded as American only by adoption. The song was first used in derision of the motley troops of the colonies; but like many another term of reproach, Yankee Doodle was taken up by the American soldiery, and made a designation of honor. The first complete set of words appears to date from 1775, and is entitled "The Yankee's Return from Camp."

"Father and I went down  
to camp  
Along with Captain  
Gooding  
And there we see the  
men and boys  
As thick as hasty-  
pudding."



JOEL BARLOW

### 139. Our First Epic.

— In 1807 "The Columbiad," an epic poem in ten books, by Joel Barlow, made its appearance in a sumptuous edition. It is our first epic

poem, and this fact constitutes its principal claim upon our attention. The plan of the work is very simple. While Columbus is lying in prison, the victim of his country's ingratitude, Hesper appears, and conducts him to the "hill of vision" commanding the western continent. Here the celestial visitant unfolds to the great discoverer the history of America, including the conquest of Mexico by Cortez, the

establishment of the English colonies, the French and Indian War, and the Revolution. Last of all, "the progress and influences of modern art and science are pointed out, the advantages of the federal government, and of a larger confederation of nations, with an assimilation and unity of languages; and abandonment of war, and a final blaze of rockets over the emancipation of the world from prejudice, and general millennium of philosophic joy and freedom."

## *THOMAS JEFFERSON*

**140. Men and Epochs.**—Do great epochs make great men, or do great men make great epochs? This question has often been discussed; and the consideration of every important era is likely to start it afresh. Neither question is true to the exclusion of the other. Great epochs and great men go together, each exerting an influence upon the other. In a nation, as in an individual, there is usually a large amount of ability unutilized. Under ordinary conditions it lies latent.

When there comes that conflict of ideas, and often of physical force, which marks a new stage in human progress, the latent energies of the people are roused to action: great men rise to meet the responsibilities and to seize the opportunities presented to them. They often succeed in directing or controlling the new movement, and out of chaos they bring forth order and beauty.

**141. Jefferson's Rank.**—Among the great men developed and brought into prominence by the conflict with Great Britain, a very high place must be assigned to Thomas Jefferson. After Washington, whom a grateful country has invested with an almost ideal beauty, he must be ranked with Adams, Franklin, and Hamilton, as one of the founders of our republic. Among



THOMAS JEFFERSON

the many distinguished sons whom Virginia has given to America, Jefferson stands very close after "the father of his country." His labors in the Legislature of Virginia, in the Continental Congress, and afterwards in the president's chair, displayed the wisdom and the patriotism of a great statesman.

**142. Ancestry.** — Thomas Jefferson was born in Albemarle County, April 2, 1743. His father, who was of Welsh descent, was a man of no great learning, but of excellent judgment and great physical strength. His mother, who was a Randolph, belonged to one of the most distinguished Virginia families. The Randolphs traced their pedigree to noble families in England and Scotland — a fact "to which," says Jefferson in his "Autobiography," "let every one ascribe the faith and merit he chooses." Considering the mental and physical traits of his father and mother, we see that Jefferson was fortunate in his parentage.

**143. At College.** — After an excellent preparatory training, including English, French, Latin, and Greek, Jefferson entered William and Mary College, which was generally patronized at that time by the aristocratic families of Virginia. He was a diligent student, often working, as he tells us, fifteen hours a day. He united a decided taste for both mathematics and the classics. He had little taste for fiction, and it is said that "Don Quixote" is the only novel he ever keenly relished or read a second time. He delighted in poetry, and read Homer, Horace, Tasso, Molière, Shakespeare, Milton, and Pope. For a time he was extravagantly fond of Ossian, and "was not ashamed to own that he thought this rude bard of the North the greatest poet that had ever existed." But many years before his death he formed a juster estimate of Macpherson's forgeries. He took no interest in metaphysical studies, and frequently expressed "unmitigated contempt for Plato and his writings."

**144. A Student of Law.** — While in Williamsburg, at that time the capital of the State, Jefferson became a law student under George Wythe, one of the ablest and purest lawyers Virginia has produced. He won the favor of Governor Fauquier, at whose

table he was a frequent guest. "With him," Jefferson writes, "Dr. Small and Mr. Wythe, his *amici omnium horarum*, and myself formed a *partie quarrée*, and to the habitual conversations on these occasions I owed much instruction." This intimate fellowship with learned and distinguished men while he was yet scarcely out of his teens, indicates the presence of no ordinary intellectual and social gifts.

**145. Legal Career.** — In 1767, at the age of twenty-four, Jefferson entered upon the practice of law. His preparation had been thorough, and he was eminently successful from the start. Though he was not, like his friend Patrick Henry, an eloquent speaker, he was a man of excellent judgment and untiring industry. While capable of seizing at once upon the strong points of a case, he had a genius for details. Nothing can surpass the minuteness of his observations, and the patience of his methodical classification. He was rapidly advancing to a prominent place among the ablest lawyers of Virginia, when the struggle with Great Britain called him to a wider and more important field of action.

**146. In the House of Burgesses.** — In 1769 Jefferson was elected a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses for his native county. The aristocratic class, to which he belonged by birth and association, was generally conservative. They were loyal to the English crown and to the English church. It speaks forcibly for Jefferson's patriotism and for his noble independence of character, that he threw off his inherited prejudices and sided with the colonies. At this meeting of the House of Burgesses resolutions were passed boldly declaring that the right of levying taxes in Virginia belonged to themselves; that they possessed the privilege of petitioning the king for a redress of grievances; and that the transportation to England of persons accused of treason in the colonies, in order to be tried there, was unconstitutional and unjust. In advocating these resolutions, Jefferson took a decided and prominent part.

**147. Marriage.** — In 1772 Jefferson married Mrs. Martha Skelton, a young widow of great attractions in person, mind,

and estate. She was of frank, warm-hearted disposition; and "last, not least, she had already proved a true daughter of the Old Dominion in the department of house-wifery." She added to her husband's estate, which was already very large, about forty thousand acres of land and one hundred and thirty-five slaves. Thus they were unembarrassed by those disagreeable domestic economies that sometimes interfere with wedded bliss; and



MONTICELLO, HOME OF THOMAS JEFFERSON

Monticello became as noted for bounteous hospitality as for domestic felicity.

**148. Committee of Correspondence.** — In 1773 Jefferson was again in the House of Burgesses. The gathering storm became more threatening. A resolution, ordering the appointment of a committee of correspondence with the other colonies, was passed. Jefferson was a leading member of this committee, and its duties were promptly and ably discharged. The result was of the highest importance. Similar committees were appointed in the other colonies; and thus a means of communication was opened

among them, the feeling of common interest was strengthened, and a general congress met the following year to consider the great questions that were agitating the continent.

**149. A Day of Fasting and Prayer.** — In 1774 the British Parliament, in retaliation for the famous “Tea Party,” passed the Boston Port Bill, which aimed to deprive that town of its foreign trade. When the news of this bill reached Williamsburg, the patriot leaders, Jefferson, Henry, the Lees, and others, met as usual for consultation, and resolved to take steps to rouse the “people from the lethargy into which they had fallen.” A day of fasting and prayer was agreed on as the best expedient to accomplish their object. Accordingly, a resolution was “cooked up,” to use Jefferson’s rather irreverent phrase, “appointing the first day of June, on which the Port Bill was to commence, for a day of *fasting, humiliation, and prayer*, to implore Heaven to avert from us the evils of civil war, to inspire us with firmness in the support of our rights, and to turn the hearts of the king and parliament to moderation and justice.” The scheme was successfully carried through. The day was fittingly observed; and the effect throughout the colony was like an electric shock, arousing every man to a sense of the situation.

**150. “Rights of British America.”** — Jefferson was prevented by illness from attending the convention which met several months later to elect delegates to the first general congress. But he forwarded a paper which he proposed as instructions for their guidance. The paper was regarded as too strong for formal adoption by the convention; but it was ordered to be printed in pamphlet form, under the title of “A Summary View of the Rights of British America.” It is a production remarkable for its strong statement of the natural and constitutional rights of the colonies, and for a particular enumeration of the various acts of injustice and tyranny on the part of the British government. It supplied principles, facts, and phrases for the Declaration of Independence two years later.

**151. A Member of Congress.** — In June, 1775, Jefferson took his seat in the Continental Congress. He was then thirty-two

years old — the youngest member but one in that illustrious body. His reputation as a writer and patriot had preceded him, and he accordingly met with a flattering reception. He now entered upon that larger sphere of action that closely identified him for many years with his country's history. On the floor of Congress he spoke but little, for he was neither an orator nor a debater. But he was so clear in his convictions, and so active in committee and in his personal relations with his fellow-members, that he exerted a strong influence. "Prompt, frank, explicit, and decisive" are the terms in which John Adams described him at this period. He had been in Congress but five days when he was appointed on a committee to prepare a report on "the causes of taking up arms against England." Here, as in the Virginia legislature, he showed himself bold, resolute, and defiant.

**152. Declaration of Independence.** — Events of great importance now followed one another in rapid succession. The blood shed at Lexington and Bunker Hill had thoroughly roused the American people. Reconciliation was recognized, even by the most conservative, as no longer possible. The colonies, throwing off British rule, were organizing independent governments. On the 7th of June, Richard Henry Lee, acting under instructions from the Virginia convention, offered in Congress a resolution declaring that the "United States are, and of a right ought to be, free and independent states." As it seemed impossible to secure unanimity of action at that time, a final vote was postponed till the first of July. Meanwhile, a committee, consisting of Thomas Jefferson, John Adams, Benjamin Franklin, Roger Sherman, and Robert Livingston, was appointed to prepare a suitable Declaration of Independence. The preparation of this important document devolved upon Jefferson. Adams and Franklin made a few verbal changes. When taken up in Congress, it was discussed for two days, and numerous changes and omissions were made. Finally, on July 4, 1776, it was almost unanimously adopted, and the foundation of a great republic was laid.

**153. Law of Religious Freedom.** — A new government had been established in Virginia, and Jefferson elected a member of the legislature. Believing that he could render important service to his native State, where there were "many very vicious points which urgently required reformation," he resigned his seat in Congress. He became once more a leading spirit in the legislature of Virginia, and carried through several bills which changed in large measure the subsequent social condition of the State. Among these was a bill abolishing the system of entails, and another establishing religious freedom,— one of the three great acts of his life for which he wished to be remembered.

**154. Educational System.** — It was also in connection with a bill requiring a general revision of the laws that Jefferson proposed his educational system, providing for the establishment of schools of every grade. Had it been carried out, it would have contributed immeasurably to the intelligence of the people and the prosperity of the State. His plan contemplated, to use his own words, "1st. Elementary schools, for all children generally, rich and poor. 2d. Colleges for a middle degree of instruction, calculated for the common purposes of life, and such as would be desirable for all who were in easy circumstances. And 3d. An ultimate grade for teaching the sciences generally, and in their highest degree." The support of these schools was to be provided by general taxation. But inasmuch as the system thus threw on the rich and aristocratic classes, who had the law-making power in their hands, a large part of the burden of educating the poor, it was never carried into effect.

**155. Varied Public Services.** — It is beyond the limits of this sketch to trace at any length the subsequent public career of Jefferson. In 1779 he was elected governor of Virginia, and discharged the duties of that office, at a difficult period, with fidelity and ability. In 1783 he was again elected a delegate to Congress. The currency of the country coming under discussion, Jefferson proposed the dollar as our unit of account and payment, and its subdivision into dimes, cents, and mills in the

decimal ratio — the system, it is needless to say, that was adopted. In 1784 he was appointed to go to France, for the purpose of negotiating, in connection with Franklin and Adams, treaties of commerce. After a time he was appointed minister at the Court of Versailles, where his talents, culture, and character reflected credit upon his country.

**156. Secretary of State.** — In 1789 Jefferson received permission to return to this country. During his absence the Constitution had been adopted, and the new government inaugurated, with Washington as President. Jefferson accepted a place in the cabinet as Secretary of State. He reached New York, the seat of government at that time, in March, 1790. Having left France the first year of its Revolution, he was filled with ardor for the natural rights of man. He was therefore surprised and grieved to find, as he thought, a sentiment prevailing in favor of a consolidated or even monarchical form of government.

**157. An Advocate of State Rights.** — This introduces us to a new phase in Jefferson's life. With immovable convictions in favor of democratic principles, he opposed with all his might the tendency to consolidate or centralize the federal government. He became the recognized leader of the party in favor of State rights and a general government of restricted and carefully defined powers. His opponent in the cabinet was Alexander Hamilton, a man of extraordinary ability and energy, who for a time exerted great influence upon the policy of the government. In spite of Washington's effort to preserve harmony, the irreconcilable conflict of principles between the Secretary of State and the Secretary of the Treasury degenerated into bitter personal hostility. At length, in December, 1793, Jefferson carried out his long-cherished purpose of resigning.

**158. In the White House.** — During the next several years, Jefferson lived upon his estate at Monticello, engaged in the agricultural pursuits for which he had longed for many years. But he was not to spend the rest of his life in retirement. In the election of 1801, which was attended with extraordinary excitement,

and danger to the republic, the Federalists, who had controlled the government for twelve years, were defeated. Their party was divided, and the Alien and Sedition Laws were not sustained by public sentiment. Jefferson, the candidate of the Republican or Democratic party, was chosen President. In his inaugural address he laid down an admirable summary of principles, among which were "equal and exact justice to all men, of whatever state or persuasion, religious or political; peace, commerce, and honest friendship with all nations; entangling alliances with none; absolute acquiescence in the decisions of the majority; and economy in the public expense, that labor may be lightly burdened."

**159. His Administration.** — His administration, in conformity with the principles he had announced, was a brilliant one. He introduced republican simplicity in place of the stately formalities of previous administrations. He greatly reduced the public debt; the territorial area of the United States was doubled; taxes were decreased; a war with France and Spain was honorably averted; the Barbary pirates were subdued; and the internal prosperity of the country vastly increased. His popularity became second only to that of Washington himself. He was accordingly re-elected for a second term, throughout which he continued, likewise, to administer the affairs of the government with great wisdom and broad statesmanship.

**160. The University of Virginia.** — In 1809, after witnessing the inauguration of his successor, Madison, Jefferson left Washington for Monticello. After forty years of political turmoil and strife, he retired finally to the seclusion of private life. During this closing period, which was burdened by financial embarrassment, he gave much time and labor to the founding of the University of Virginia. He planned the buildings, designated the departments of instruction, and framed the laws for its government. As president of the Board, he exerted a controlling influence for a number of years. The scheme of government at first proposed, which included a co-operative feature, did not come

up to his expectations. It erred on the side of laxity; and very soon a spirit of riot and insubordination among the students brought the university to the verge of dissolution. Stricter regulations were afterwards adopted, and the university entered upon its career of usefulness and honor.

**161. His Death.** — With advancing years naturally came increased infirmity. As the end drew near in the summer of 1826, he earnestly desired to see one more return of the day that commemorated the Declaration of Independence. His prayer was heard. He passed away on the morning of July 4, fifty years after the adoption of his immortal Declaration. A nation mourned his death. The voice of partisan prejudice was lost for a time in the general homage paid to his life and character. He was buried at Monticello, where a modest granite shaft marks his resting-place. It bears the inscription composed by himself and found among his papers: —

HERE LIES BURIED  
THOMAS JEFFERSON,  
AUTHOR OF THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE,  
OF THE STATUTE OF VIRGINIA FOR RELIGIOUS FREEDOM,  
AND FATHER OF THE UNIVERSITY OF VIRGINIA.

**162. Estimate of His Character.** — The general features of his character have been brought out in the course of this sketch. He was a frank and honest man; and as he expressed himself freely in his writings, we have ample facilities for knowing him well. His intellect was capacious, penetrating, and strong. To the refinement of a superior literary culture he added rich stores of general information. He was singularly independent in thought and action — a natural leader among men. He was a prince among statesmen. The services he rendered his country are second only to those of Washington. His fundamental political faith was that all legitimate government is based on the consent of the governed. He had faith in humanity, and was opposed to

aristocratic institutions of every kind. He was the friend of popular liberty. His integrity was above reproach. He loved a life of simplicity and retirement; and nowhere else does he appear more admirable than in the patriarchal dignity with which he presided over his large estate and numerous dependents at Monticello.

## ALEXANDER HAMILTON



ALEXANDER HAMILTON

**163. Influence of Heredity.** — It is not without reason that we inquire after the ancestry of our great men. The transmission of personal and national traits from parents to children is a well-established fact. While heredity does not explain every peculiarity in offspring, it often furnishes us a key to leading traits. In order to understand any character thoroughly, it is necessary to know his antecedents. All this is illustrated in Alexander Hamilton.

Hamilton, who was born on the island of Nevis, Jan. 11, 1757. "From his father, a cool, deliberate, calculating Scotchman, he inherited the shrewdness, the logical habits of thought, which constitute the peculiar glory of the Scottish mind. From his mother, a lady of French extraction, and the daughter of a Huguenot exile, he inherited the easy manners, the liveliness and vivacity, the keen sense of humor, the desire and the ability to please, which so eminently distinguish the children of the Celtic race."<sup>1</sup>

**164. Youthful Ambition.** — When yet a mere boy, he was placed in a clerkship, and entrusted with the management of important interests. He met the responsibilities thrown upon him

<sup>1</sup> McMaster, History of the People of the United States.

with extraordinary ability. But he was not at peace in the drudgery of his position. He felt in himself, as many other great men have felt in youth, the promise of higher things. In a letter preserved to us from this period, he says: "I condemn the grovelling condition of a clerk, or the like, to which my fortune condemns me, and would willingly risk my life, though not my character, to exalt my station. I am confident, Ned, that my youth excludes me from any hopes of immediate preferment, nor do I desire it; but I mean to prepare the way for futurity." This ambitious purpose in a boy of thirteen contains the promise of future distinction.

**165. Education.** — He had a decided bent for literature. Pope and Plutarch were at that time his favorite authors. His unusual



KING'S COLLEGE ABOUT 1760 (Now Columbia University)

abilities began to attract attention, and finally funds were provided to send him to America, where a wider field of opportunity was open to him. He reached Boston in October, 1772, and thence went to New York. By the advice of judicious friends, he entered a grammar school at Elizabethtown, where he pursued his studies with restless energy. His literary instinct found vent in both prose and poetry, which possessed noteworthy merit.

At the end of a year he entered King's (afterwards Columbia) College, where he continued his studies with characteristic vigor. "In the debating club," it has been said, "he was the most effective speaker; in the recitation-room, the most thorough scholar; on the green, the most charming friend; in the trial of wit, the keenest satirist." Those who knew "the young West Indian," as he was called, recognized something extraordinary in him, and vaguely speculated about his promising future.

**166. A Colonial Patriot.** — The colonies were now deeply stirred over their relations with England. The Revolutionary storm was gathering fast. Which side of the conflict was the promising young collegian to espouse? His inclinations were at first on the side of Great Britain; but it was not long "until he became convinced," to use his own words, "by the superior force of the arguments in favor of the colonial claims." Perhaps he instinctively felt, or with keen penetration discerned, that the eminence to which he aspired lay on the colonial side. An occasion was soon offered to embark in the patriot cause. A mass meeting was held in July, 1774, to urge New York, which was in possession of the Tories, to take its place along with the other colonies in resisting British aggression. Hamilton was present; and not satisfied with the presentation of the colonial cause in the speeches already delivered, he made his way to the stand, and after a few moments of embarrassment and hesitation, he astonished and captivated the crowd by an extraordinary outburst of youthful oratory.

**167. A Pamphleteer.** — During the Revolutionary Period public opinion was largely influenced by political pamphlets and elaborate discussions in the newspapers. Hamilton was soon introduced into this species of controversy, for which his natural abilities fitted him in an eminent degree. In the discussion of political and constitutional questions he had no superior. In 1774 there appeared two ably written tracts that attacked the Continental Congress, and did the patriot cause considerable harm. To counteract their influence, Hamilton wrote two pamphlets in

reply; and so ably did he vindicate the claims of the colonies, that in spite of his youth he at once took rank as a leader among the patriots.

**168. Resistance to Mob Violence.** — Once fairly enlisted in the cause of American liberty, Hamilton's fiery nature made him active and aggressive. By pen and voice he continued to mould public opinion. But his ardor never betrayed him into rashness. His love of order and justice restrained him from inconsiderate violence. He even risked his life and (what was perhaps more to him) his reputation with the people, in resisting the madness of a mob. When the British ship of war *Asia* opened fire on New York, a mob thronged the streets, threatening destruction to every Tory. Dr. Cooper, the president of the college, was one of the most prominent adherents of the crown; and thither the crowd rushed, bent upon mischief. But Hamilton already stood on the steps of the building, and arrested the tumultuous throng with his vigorous expostulations.

**169. A Military Officer.** — But Hamilton's efforts in behalf of the colonies were not confined to words. After the battles of Lexington and Bunker Hill, it became increasingly evident that a peaceful solution of the controversy with Great Britain was no longer possible. In preparation for the inevitable appeal to arms, Hamilton studied military science, and to gain practical experience joined a company of volunteers. In several trying situations he displayed unflinching courage. In 1776 the New York convention ordered the organization of an artillery company. Hamilton made application for the command, and established his fitness by a successful examination. He rapidly recruited his company, and expended of his own means to equip it. By constant drill he brought it to a high degree of efficiency. At the battle of Long Island and of White Plains his battery rendered effective service. At the end of six months Hamilton had won the reputation of a brave and brilliant officer.

**170. On Washington's Staff.** — The ability of Hamilton did not escape the attention of the commander-in-chief. Accord-

ingly, in March, 1777, he was appointed a member of Washington's staff, with the rank of lieutenant-colonel. During the next four years he was intimately associated with the commanding general, and in various capacities rendered him valuable aid. His chief duty, however, was the conduct of Washington's large correspondence. For this work his great natural gifts, as well as his previous training, peculiarly fitted him. A large part of the letters and proclamations issuing from headquarters at this time were the work of Hamilton. No doubt the great commander indicated their substance; but their admirable form was due, in part at least, to the skill of his able secretary.

**171. A Display of Anger.** — But Hamilton's connection with Washington's staff came to an abrupt and unexpected end in February, 1781. Having been sent for by the commander-in-chief, he failed to respond promptly to the summons. When he made his appearance, after a brief delay, he was sharply reproved by Washington, who charged him with disrespect. The rebuke touched Hamilton's high-strung nature, and he replied: "I am not conscious of it, Sir; but since you have thought it, we part." Under all the circumstances it seems difficult to justify this outburst of the youthful aide. But he never liked the office of an aide-de-camp; and there is reason to believe that he was irritated because he had not been preferred to more important posts to which he aspired. Though he rejected Washington's overtures looking to a restoration of their former relations, he continued to serve in the army with the rank of colonel, and at Yorktown he led an assault upon a British redoubt with resistless impetuosity.

**172. An Unpopular Leader.** — Hamilton was never popular with the masses. His positive and aggressive character raised him above the low arts of the demagogue. He preferred to guide rather than to flatter the people. But he was never without loyal friends. His extraordinary force of character made him a centre of attraction for less positive natures. While his natural gifts made him a recognized leader, his generous nature inspired a loyal devotion. He was popular with his associates in the army; and

the French officers especially, whose language he spoke with native fluency, regarded him with enthusiastic affection.

**173. A Statesman.** — Whether under favorable circumstances Hamilton would have made a great general must remain a matter of speculation. But war was not the sphere for which his talents were best adapted. He was eminently gifted to be a statesman; and while in active service in the army, he could not refrain from considering the political and financial needs of the country, and from suggesting a remedy for existing evils. In 1780 he addressed to Robert Morris, the financier of the Revolution, an anonymous letter, which is noted for the penetration with which it treats of the financial difficulties of the colonies.

**174. Marriage and Independence.** — But Hamilton's thirst for military and civic glory did not prevent him from falling in love. There is no security against the shafts of Cupid but flight. On Dec. 14, 1780, he married Miss Elizabeth Schuyler, daughter of General Schuyler, and a charming and intelligent woman. Apart from the domestic happiness it brought him, the marriage allied him to an old, wealthy, and influential family. The only fortune Hamilton brought his bride was his brilliant talents and growing reputation; but when his father-in-law generously offered him financial aid, he proudly declined to receive it. Conscious of his abilities, he felt able to make his way in the world alone. After leaving the army he entered upon the study of law, and after a brief course he was admitted to the bar in 1782. His strong logical mind and his great force of character fitted him to achieve distinction in the legal profession. But his country had need of his services in a different and higher sphere.

**175. Patriotic Labors in Congress.** — In November, 1782, he took his seat in Congress. That body had sadly declined in ability and prestige. It was incapable of grappling with the serious problems that presented themselves, and the country seemed to be rapidly drifting to destruction. No longer held together by a sense of common danger, the Confederation was on the point of disintegrating. There was no adequate revenue;

the debts of the government were unprovided for; and the army was about to be disbanded without receiving its long arrears of pay.

Hamilton made strenuous efforts to correct these evils. He advocated the levying of a duty on imports; set forth the necessity of maintaining the public credit and public honor; and urged a just and generous treatment of the army that had achieved American independence. But his efforts were in vain. The pusillanimous body could not rise equal to the situation. Local interests and jealousies prevailed over broad and patriotic sentiments. Hamilton's career in Congress was not, however, without important results. It increased his reputation as a patriotic statesman, and also excited that distrust in democratic institutions that ever afterwards made him an advocate of a strongly centralized and, as some claimed, a monarchical form of government.

**176. "The Federalist."** — Hamilton's greatest service followed the adoption of the Constitution by the convention. Though he was not thoroughly satisfied with it, he gave it his hearty support as the best thing attainable under existing conditions, and as a great improvement on the Articles of Confederation. In New York, as in the other States, there was a strong sentiment against the Constitution. The opposition was thoroughly organized and ably led. As a part of the plan to prevent the ratification of the Constitution, it was attacked in a series of elaborate and well-planned essays. This was a field in which Hamilton was well-nigh matchless. He accepted the challenge, and with the assistance of Madison and Jay he prepared that powerful series of eighty-five essays forming the "Federalist." The effect was immediate and far-reaching. The "Federalist" did more than any other writing to secure the adoption and support of the Constitution through the country. It is a profound disquisition on the principles of our government, and has since been quoted as of the highest authority on constitutional questions.

**177. Its Literary Qualities.** — But it is more than a political and controversial treatise. Its masterly style raises it to the rank of real literature. Most of the controversial writings of the Revolutionary Period have been forgotten. Having served their temporary purpose, they have been swept into oblivion. But the "Federalist" endures as one of the masterpieces of the human reason. Its sustained power is wonderful. The argument, clothed in elevated, strong, and sometimes eloquent language, moves forward with a mighty momentum that sweeps away everything before it. It is hardly surpassed in the literature of the world as a model of masterful popular reasoning. By this production Hamilton won for himself a foremost place in the literature of his time.

**178. A Forensic Victory.** — But the "Federalist" was not the only service he rendered the Constitution. It was chiefly through his able leadership that the New York convention adopted the Constitution. The result was one of the most noted triumphs ever achieved in a deliberative body. When the convention assembled, the Clintonian or Anti-Federalist party had forty-six out of sixty-five votes. "Two-thirds of the convention," wrote Hamilton, "and four-sevenths of the people, are against us." In spite of the great odds against him, he entered into the contest with resolute purpose. The Anti-Federalists employed every artifice known to parliamentary tactics to delay and defeat ratification. Day after day the battle raged. Hamilton was constantly on his feet, defending, explaining, and advocating the Constitution. His mastery of the subject was complete; and gradually his cogent and eloquent reasoning overcame partisan prejudice. "At length Hamilton arose in the convention, and stating that Virginia had ratified the Constitution, and that the Union was thereby an accomplished fact, moved that they cease their contentions, and add New York to the new empire of Republican States." The vote was taken, and the Constitution adopted.

**179. Secretary of the Treasury.** — The new government was organized early in 1789; and upon the establishment of the Treas-

ury Department in September, Hamilton was called by Washington to take charge of it. His practical wisdom never shone to better advantage. As Secretary of the Treasury, he left his impress upon the institutions of his country. He gave to the Treasury Department the organization it has since substantially retained. He was, perhaps, the master-spirit in putting the new government into practical operation.

**180. A Cabinet Feud.** — The opposition to Hamilton's policy, which constantly aimed at strengthening the national government, at length took form as the Republican or Democratic party. Jefferson naturally became its head. Intensely republican at heart, he had come to entertain exaggerated, and even morbid, views concerning what he believed to be the monarchical aims of the Federalists. As a patriot and leader, he felt it his duty to arrest as far as possible this centralizing tendency. His relations with Hamilton in the cabinet, to use his own phrase, suggested the attitude of "two cocks in a pit." The feud at length grew beyond Washington's power of conciliation, and Jefferson finally withdrew from the cabinet.

**181. Rank as a Publicist.** — It is impossible, within the narrow limits of this sketch, to follow Hamilton through all the labors and controversies of his political career. He sometimes made mistakes, as in supporting the odious Alien and Sedition Laws; but beyond all question he stood among the foremost statesmen of his time. By some he is assigned the highest place. "There is not in the Constitution of the United States," says Guizot, "an element of order, of force, of duration, which he did not powerfully contribute to introduce into it, and to cause to predominate." Talleyrand, who saw Hamilton in New York, said, "I consider Napoleon, Fox, and Hamilton the three greatest men of our epoch, and without hesitation I award the first place to Hamilton." His official integrity, though, alas! not his moral character, was unsullied. The investigation of his conduct as Secretary of the Treasury, set on foot by his enemies in Congress, recoiled upon their own heads.

**182. A Brilliant Lawyer.** — After serving nearly six years in Washington's cabinet, he retired in 1795 to private life, to gain an adequate support for his family. He resumed the practice of his profession in New York. His brilliant abilities and distinguished public services immediately brought him an extensive practice. He speedily rose to the head of the bar. His legal acumen was profound, while his clear thought, copious and forcible language, and passionate energy of will gave him great power as an advocate.

**183. Duel and Death.** — But the end was drawing near. His brilliant career was cut short by the requirements of a false and barbarous "code of honor." Hamilton did not allow his professional labors to destroy his interest in public affairs. He continued the leader of the Federalist party, not only in his adopted State, but in the country at large. In the political contests of New York, his principal opponent was Aaron Burr, a brilliant but unprincipled man. Hamilton had twice thwarted Burr's political ambition. When at last he brought about the latter's defeat for the governorship of New York, Burr resolved upon a deadly revenge. He sought a quarrel with Hamilton, and then challenged him. The duel was fought at Weehawken, July 11, 1804. At the first fire Hamilton fell mortally wounded, discharging his pistol in the air. His death caused an outburst of sorrow and indignation that has scarcely been surpassed in the history of our country.

**184. Estimates of his Character.** — In person Hamilton was considerably under size. But there was a force in his personality, a fire in his impassioned eye, that made him impressive. He was one of the most effective speakers of his time. In his social relations he was genial, high-spirited, and generous. He was idolized by his family. Though he was never popular with the masses, whom he distrusted, he had the power of surrounding himself with a band of able and loyal followers. He was a great constructive thinker—a leader of leaders. In the judgment of his rival, Jefferson, he was "of acute understanding, disinterested, honest, and honorable in all private transactions, amiable in society, and duly valuing

virtue in private life." Chancellor Kent pays a tribute to "his profound penetration, his power of analysis, the comprehensive grasp and strength of his understanding, and the firmness, frankness, and integrity of his character." Like all great men, perhaps, Hamilton was conscious of his power; and at times it made him self-assertive and dictatorial. He relied for success, not upon treacherous diplomacy, but upon open methods, and, if need be, upon hard fighting. He possessed extraordinary versatility of genius; and he was at once a brilliant officer, a powerful writer, an able lawyer, a great financier, a strong party leader, and a wise statesman.

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

Consult the general bibliography. *Annotated selections from Jefferson and Hamilton will be found on pages 423-438 of this volume.* In addition read Jefferson's First Inaugural Address and Hamilton's Speech in the New York Convention on the Adoption of the Federal Constitution (The World's Famous Orations), J. T. Morse's "Thomas Jefferson" (American Statesmen Series), and Thos. E. Watson's "Thomas Jefferson," Henry Cabot Lodge's "Alexander Hamilton" (American Statesmen Series), and James Schouler's "Alexander Hamilton" (Makers of America Series).

For the historical background, in addition to the standard histories of the United States, Fiske's "The American Revolution" (2 vols.) and "The War of Independence," and Lossing's "Field Book of the Revolution," are recommended. Interesting extracts from original sources may be found in Hart's "American History Told by Contemporaries" and MacDonald's "Documentary Source Book of American History."

Numerous extracts from the minor writers of this period may be found in the "Library of American Literature," Duyckinck's "Cyclopædia of American Literature," Cairns's "Early American Writers," and Trent's "Southern Writers." Read Washington's "First Inaugural Address" and his "Farewell Address." Papers by members of the class on John Trumbull's "McFingal," Charles

Brockden Brown's "Wieland," Philip Freneau's Poems, and the "Songs and Ballads of the American Revolution" would prove interesting.

The following poems celebrate incidents falling within the Revolutionary Period: Holmes's "Ballad of the Boston Tea Party," Harriet Prescott Spofford's "How We Became a Nation," Franklin's "The Mother Country," Longfellow's "Paul Revere's Ride," Holmes's "Lexington," Whittier's "Lexington," Holmes's "Grandmother's Story of Bunker Hill," Lowell's "The New Come Chief," Joseph Rodman Drake's "The American Flag," Will Carleton's "The Little Black-eyed Rebel," Philip Freneau's "The Bonhomme Richard and Serapis," N. P. Willis's "André's Request to Washington," Longfellow's "Hymn of the Moravian Nuns of Bethlehem," Bryant's "Song of Marion's Men," Tennyson's "England and America in 1782," Bryant's "O Mother of a Mighty Race," Whittier's "The Vow of Washington," Hopkinson's "Hail Columbia," and Francis Scott Key's "The Star-Spangled Banner."

Noteworthy fiction illustrating this period: John Esten Cooke's "Henry St. John" (1774-75), J. P. Kennedy's "Horse-Shoe Robinson" (1757-80), Harold Frederick's "In the Valley" (1757-80), James Fenimore Cooper's "The Pilot" (1778-79) and "The Spy" (1780), Maurice Thompson's "Alice of Old Vincennes" (1780), Paul Leicester Ford's "Janice Meredith," Winston Churchill's "Richard Carvel," S. Weir Mitchell's "Hugh Wynne," and Geo. Cary Eggleston's "A Carolina Cavalier" (1779-80).



## *FIRST NATIONAL PERIOD*

---

### REPRESENTATIVE WRITERS

WASHINGTON IRVING  
JAMES FENIMORE COOPER  
WILLIAM CULLEN BRYANT  
EDGAR ALLAN POE  
RALPH WALDO EMERSON  
NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE  
HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW  
JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL  
JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER  
OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES

### OTHER PROMINENT WRITERS

JACOB ABBOTT (1803-1879). A native of Maine, and a voluminous author of books for the young. Among his works are the "Rollo Books" (28 vols.), "The Lucy Books" (6 vols.), and Harper's "Story-Books" (36 vols.).

JOHN S. C. ABBOTT (1805-1877). Brother of Jacob Abbott, and, like him, a minister. Author of numerous moral and historical works, the latter being characterized by a partisan tone. Noteworthy are "History of Napoleon Bonaparte," "Napoleon at Saint Helena," "The French Revolution of 1789," etc.

AMOS BRONSON ALCOTT (1799-1888). Born in Connecticut. An educator and philosopher of interesting personality. Author of "Essays," "Table Talk," "Concord Days," and other works in prose and verse.

WASHINGTON ALLSTON (1779-1843). A famous painter, poet, and prose writer, who, though born in South Carolina, belongs by residence to Massachusetts. Author of the poem "The Sylphs of the Seasons," and the art novel "Monaldi." His "Lectures on Art" appeared after his death.

GEORGE BANCROFT (1800-1891). A statesman and historian of Massachusetts. Minister to England 1846-1849, and to Prussia and Germany 1867-1874. Author of a standard "History of the United States," written in rhetorical style. (See text.)

WILLIAM ELLERY CHANNING (1780-1842). Preacher, lecturer, and Unitarian leader of Massachusetts. Author of various works in prose and verse. Among his best prose writings are "Life and Character of Napoleon Bonaparte," "Milton," and "Self-Culture."

LYDIA MARIA CHILD (1802-1880). A well-known editor and prose writer of Massachusetts. Among her numerous writings may be mentioned "Hobomok, an Indian Story," "The Rebels," a tale of the American Revolution, "History of the Condition of Women in All Ages and Nations," "Looking toward Sunset," and "The Romance of the Republic."

JOHN ESTEN COOKE (1830-1886). A noted novelist and historian of Virginia. Among his novels, founded on the early history of Virginia and on the events of the Civil War, are "Henry St. John," "Surrey of Eagle's Nest," and "The Virginia Comedians." He wrote also a "Life of General Lee," and "Virginia, a History of the People." (See text.)

PHILIP PENDLETON COOKE (1816-1850). A lawyer and poet of Virginia. In 1857 he published his "Froissart Ballads, and Other Poems," which contains his well-known lyric "Florence Vane."

GEORGE WILLIAM CURTIS (1824-1892). Editor, essayist, and novelist of New York. A member of the famous Brook Farm Association. For thirty-five years he filled the Easy Chair department of *Harper's Monthly*, and was political editor of *Harper's Weekly* for nearly the same length of time. His principal works are "Prue and I," "Trump," and "Potiphar Papers," a satire upon society.

RICHARD HENRY DANA (1787-1879). A poet, editor, and prose writer of Massachusetts. One of the founders of the *North American Review*; author of "The Buccaneer, and Other Poems," and the novels "Tom Thornton," and "Paul Felton."

JOSEPH RODMAN DRAKE (1795-1820). A physician of New York City, author of "The Culprit Fay," a poem of considerable merit, and the well-known lyric, "The American Flag." A friend of Fitz-Greene Halleck, with whom he worked for a time in literary partnership. (See text.)

ALEXANDER H. EVERETT (1792-1847). Diplomatist and prose writer of Massachusetts. Ambassador at The Hague in 1818, and at Madrid in 1825. For several years editor and proprietor of the *North American Review*. His principal works are "Europe," "America," and "Critical and Miscellaneous Essays."

EDWARD EVERETT (1794-1865). A distinguished orator and statesman of Massachusetts. Editor of the *North American Review*, member of Con-

gress, Governor of Massachusetts, Minister to the Court of Saint James, President of Harvard College, and Secretary of State. Principal works "Defence of Christianity," "Orations and Speeches," and "Importance of Practical Education."

JAMES T. FIELDS (1817-1881). A well-known publisher, editor, and author of Boston. Born in New Hampshire. Edited the *Atlantic Monthly* from 1861-1871. Besides a volume or two of verse, he wrote "Yesterdays with Authors," and "Underbrush," a collection of essays.

STEPHEN COLLINS FOSTER (1826-1864). A famous song writer and composer of Pittsburgh and New York City. He set to music 125 or more songs, the words in nearly every case being his own. All English-speaking lands know his "Swanee River," "My Old Kentucky Home," "Nelly Bly," and "Old Black Joe."

SAMUEL G. GOODRICH (1793-1860). A publisher and author of Boston and New York, best known as "Peter Parley." He wrote a series of books for children which extended through more than a hundred volumes. Among his other works are "The Outcast, and Other Poems," "Fireside Education," "History of All Nations," and "Illustrated Natural History."

SARAH JOSEPHA HALE (1788-1879). A poet, prose writer, and editor, who was born in New Hampshire. Edited the *Ladies' Magazine* in Boston from 1828 to 1837, the first periodical in this country devoted exclusively to woman, and afterwards combined with *Godey's Lady's Book* of Philadelphia, of which she was editor for forty years. Principal works, "The Genius of Oblivion, and Other Poems," "Northwood, a Tale," "Sketches of American Character," and "Woman's Record."

FITZ-GREENE HALLECK (1790-1867). A native of Connecticut, but for many years clerk in a New York banking-house, and later confidential adviser to John Jacob Astor. Author of a long poem called "Fanny," and of the stirring lyric, "Marco Bozzaris." (See text.)

PAUL HAMILTON HAYNE (1830-1886). A native of South Carolina, and, considering the quantity and quality of his verse, one of the very best poets the South has produced. A complete edition of his "Poems" appeared in 1882. (See text.)

RICHARD HILDRETH (1807-1865). A lawyer and journalist of Boston, who wrote a "History of the United States" down to 1820. Among other things he wrote an antislavery novel, "Archy Moore," and "Japan as it Was and Is."

JOSIAH GILBERT HOLLAND (1819-1881). Poet, novelist, and editor of Massachusetts. Edited the *Springfield Republican* 1849-1866, and *Scribner's Magazine* from 1870 till his death. His longest poems are "Katrina," and "Bitter-Sweet"; his best novels are "Miss Gilbert's Career," "Arthur Bonnicastle," and "The Story of Sevenoaks."

JOHN PENDLETON KENNEDY (1795-1870). A novelist and politician of Maryland, and Secretary of the Navy under Fillmore. He wrote old-time society novels, among which are "Swallow Barn," "Horse-Shoe Robinson," and "Rob' of the Bowl."

FRANCIS SCOTT KEY (1779-1843). A lawyer and poet of Maryland. His "Poems" were published after his death in 1857, with a sketch by his brother-in-law, Chief Justice Taney. His literary fame is due chiefly to "The Star-Spangled Banner," written during the bombardment of Fort McHenry.

BENSON J. LOSSING (1813-1891). A biographer and historian of New York. Among his numerous works are a "Life of Washington," "Field-Book of the Revolution," and "Pictorial History of the United States."

GEORGE P. MORRIS (1802-1864). A journalist and poet of New York City. In 1823, with Samuel Woodworth, he established *The New York Mirror*. Among his works are "The Deserter Bride, and Other Poems," "The Whip-poor-will, a Poem," "American Melodies," and, in conjunction with Willis, "The Prose and Poetry of Europe and America." His most popular piece is "Woodman, Spare that Tree."

JOHN LOTHROP MOTLEY (1814-1877). A distinguished author of Massachusetts, who wrote an admirable series of historical works relating to Holland: "The Rise of the Dutch Republic," "The History of the United Netherlands," and "Life of John of Barneveld." He wrote, also, two novels, "Morton's Hope" and "Merry Mount." (See text.)

THEODORE O'HARA (1820-1867). A native of Kentucky. Soldier in the Mexican and Civil Wars, remembered for his poem "The Bivouac of the Dead."

FRANCES SARGENT OSGOOD (1812-1850). A poet and magazine writer of Massachusetts. A volume of poems, "A Wreath of Wild Flowers from New England," was much admired in its day. "Mrs. Osgood," wrote Poe, "has a rich fancy, — even a rich imagination, — a scrupulous taste, a faultless style, and an ear finely attuned to the delicacies of melody."

MARGARET FULLER OSSOLI (1810-1850). A gifted woman of Massachusetts. Editor of the *Dial* and author of "Woman in the Nineteenth Century," "Art, Literature, and the Drama," "At Home and Abroad," etc.

JAMES GORHAM PALFREY (1796-1881). A Unitarian clergyman of Cambridge, Mass., and Professor in Harvard University. He wrote a painstaking "History of New England."

FRANCIS PARKMAN (1823-1893). An eminent historian of Massachusetts, who wrote a number of volumes under the general title, "France and England in North America." Of special interest are the "Conspiracy of Pontiac," "A Half Century of Conflict," and "The Jesuits in North America."

JAMES K. PAULDING (1779-1860). A versatile author of New York City, though born in Maryland. Secretary of the Navy under Van Buren. Among his numerous writings are "The Diverting History of John Bull and Brother Jonathan," "The Dutchman's Fireside," "Life of George Washington," and a spirited defence of slavery in America. (See text.)

JOHN HOWARD PAYNE (1792-1852). A dramatist and actor of New York City, in whose drama of "Clari, the Maid of Milan," occurs the famous song "Home, Sweet Home." Other plays are "Brutus" "Virginius," and "Charles II."

JAMES GATES PERCIVAL (1795-1856). A native of Connecticut, Professor of Chemistry at West Point, and State Geologist of Wisconsin. Assisted Noah Webster in revising his large dictionary. He published several volumes of poetry, the last and best known of which is entitled "The Dream of Day, and Other Poems."

EDWARD COATE PINKNEY (1802-1828). A lawyer and poet of Baltimore. He displayed an excellent lyric gift in the volume of "Poems" published in 1825.

GEORGE D. PRENTICE (1802-1870). An editor and poet, who, through the *Journal*, made Louisville one of the literary centres of the South. He wrote a "Life of Henry Clay," and a collection of his witty and pungent paragraphs has been published under the title "Prenticeana." His best poems are "The Closing Year" and "The Flight of Years."

WILLIAM HICKLING PRESCOTT (1796-1859). A celebrated historian of Boston. Author of a series of standard histories on Spanish themes: "History of Ferdinand and Isabella," "Conquest of Mexico," "Conquest of Peru," and "Philip the Second." (See text.)

THOMAS BUCHANAN READ (1822-1872). A painter and poet of Philadelphia. His first volume of poems appeared in 1837. Among his other works are "The Female Poets of America," "The New Pastoral," "The Wagoner of the Alleghanies." His most popular poem is "Sheridan's Ride," though poetically inferior to "Drifting."

JOHN GODFREY SAXE (1816-1887). A journalist and poet of New York, though born in Vermont. In humorous poetry he ranks next to Holmes. The titles of his successive works are "The Money King, and Other Poems," "Clever Stories of Many Nations," "The Masquerade," "Fables and Legends of Many Countries," etc.

CATHARINE MARIA SEDGWICK (1780-1867). A famous educator and novelist of Massachusetts. She conducted a school for girls at Stockbridge for fifty years. Among her novels are "Hope Leslie," "Clarence," "A New England Tale," and "Redwood," which had the distinction of being reprinted in England and translated into several Continental languages.

LYDIA HUNTLY SIGOURNEY (1791-1865). A Connecticut writer of both prose

and poetry; well described as "The American Hemans." Among her fifty-three volumes are "Traits of the Aborigines of America," "Past Meridian," "Letters to Young Ladies," "Poems," etc.

WILLIAM GILMORE SIMMS (1806-1870). A native of South Carolina, and voluminous writer of fiction and poetry. He wrote a dozen volumes of verse, among which are "Atalantis" and "Areytos, or Songs and Ballads of the South," and some thirty romances, among which are "The Yemassee," "The Partisan," and "Beauchampe." (See text.)

JARED SPARKS (1789-1866). A native of Connecticut. Unitarian minister, president of Harvard, and historian. Edited "American Biography," which includes sixty lives; also editor of the "Diplomatic Correspondence of the American Revolution," "The Writings of George Washington," etc.

HARRIET BEECHER STOWE (1812-1896). A native of Connecticut, and author of numerous novels of unequal merit. Her "Uncle Tom's Cabin" has been, perhaps, the most widely read of American books. Other novels are "The Minister's Wooing," "The Pearl of Orr's Island," "Oldtown Folks," etc.

BAYARD TAYLOR (1825-1878). A well-known traveller, poet, and novelist of Pennsylvania. Among his best works are "Views Afoot," "Byways of Europe," "Lars, a Pastoral of Norway," "Masque of the Gods," "Prince Deukalion," "Story of Kennett," and a translation of Goethe's "Faust," by which he will be longest known.

JOHN R. THOMPSON (1823-1873). A lawyer and littérateur of Virginia. Editor of *The Southern Literary Messenger* from 1847 to 1859. Once popular as a lyric poet.

HENRY DAVID THOREAU (1817-1862). An eccentric recluse and student of nature. Born in Massachusetts. Author of "Walden; or, Life in the Woods," "Cape Cod," "The Maine Woods," etc.

HENRY TIMROD (1829-1867). A poet and editor of South Carolina. He possessed a genuine lyrical gift. His "Poems" were published in 1873 with a generous tribute by Hayne. (See text.)

WILLIAM WARE (1797-1852). Unitarian minister, lecturer, editor of the *Christian Examiner*, and historical novelist of New York City. Principal works, "Zenobia," originally published in the *Knickerbocker Magazine*, "Aurelian," describing Rome in the third century, and "Julian, or Scenes in Judea," in which the most striking incidents in the life of Jesus are described.

RICHARD HENRY WILDE (1789-1847). A lawyer and member of Congress, from Georgia, author of a "Life of Tasso," and the beautiful lyric, "My Life is Like the Summer Rose."

NATHANIEL P. WILLIS (1806-1867). A popular littérateur of New York City, editor of *The Mirror*. Once overrated and now, perhaps, unduly

neglected. His "Sacred Poems" are excellent, as are also some of his miscellaneous pieces. Among his other works are "People I have Met," "Pencillings by the Way," and "Letters from under a Bridge."

SAMUEL WOODWORTH (1786-1842). A publisher, prose writer, and poet of New York City, though born in Massachusetts. One of the founders of *The New York Mirror*, long the most popular journal in this country. Author of an "Account of the War with Great Britain," and a volume of "Poems, Odes, and Songs," the most popular of which is "The Old Oaken Bucket."

#### CONTEMPORARY WRITERS IN ENGLAND

SIR WALTER SCOTT (1771-1832); LORD BYRON (1788-1824); WILLIAM WORDSWORTH (1770-1850); THOMAS DE QUINCEY (1785-1859); THOMAS CAMPBELL (1777-1844); JOHN KEATS (1795-1821); ROBERT SOUTHEY (1774-1843); THOMAS MOORE (1779-1852); THOMAS HOOD (1798-1845); PERCY BYSSHE SHELLEY (1792-1822); SAMUEL TAYLOR COLERIDGE (1772-1834); THOMAS BABINGTON MACAULAY (1800-1859); WILLIAM MAKEPEACE THACKERAY (1811-1862); ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING (1806-1861).

## IV

### *FIRST NATIONAL PERIOD*

(1815-1861)

, 185. **National Expansion.** — The First National Period extends from the close of the War of 1812 to the beginning of the Civil War. It covers nearly half a century, and exhibits great national expansion. The arduous tasks imposed upon the people during the Colonial and Revolutionary Periods were successfully achieved. The dreams of our forefathers began to be realized. "America," says Hegel, "is the land of the future, where in the ages that lie before us the burden of the world's history shall reveal itself." During the period under consideration it made a long stride toward its coming greatness.

186. **Growth of Population.** — With the establishment of peace in 1815, the United States entered upon an unparalleled era of prosperity. The development of the country went forward with great rapidity. An increasing tide of immigration, chiefly from Great Britain, Ireland, and Germany, swept to our

---

### CONTEMPORARY EVENTS IN ENGLAND

George IV, 1820-1830.	China compelled to Open Ports, 1842.
William IV, 1830-1837.	Famine in Ireland, 1846.
Victoria, 1837-1901.	Repeal of Corn Laws, 1846.
Passage of Reform Bill, 1832.	First World's Fair, 1851.
Emancipation of Slaves, 1833.	The Crimean War, 1854.
The Opium War with China, 1839.	The Indian Mutiny, 1857.
	First Atlantic Cable, 1858.

shores. Of kindred blood, the great body of immigrants readily adjusted themselves to their new surroundings, and vigorously joined with our native-born people in developing the agricultural, mineral, and industrial resources of our country. The population increased from 8,438,000 in 1815 to 32,000,000 in 1861, thus equalling the leading nations of Europe.

**187. The Mississippi Valley.** — The great valley of the Mississippi was occupied. Its fertility made it one of the most favored agricultural regions in the world. The invention of agricultural machinery made it possible to harvest immense crops of wheat and corn, for which a market was found in Europe. Trade and manufactures naturally attended upon agriculture; and, as a result, flourishing towns and cities sprang up with unexampled rapidity. Cincinnati grew from a town of 5000 in 1815 to a city of 161,000 in 1860, while the growth of St. Louis and Chicago was still more phenomenal.

**188. Manufactures and Commerce.** — The Atlantic States showed a development no less remarkable. The frontier, carried beyond the Mississippi, made the toils and dangers of border life a tradition. The invention of the steam-engine gave a new impulse to commerce and manufacture. In addition to excellent highways, railroads traversed the country in all directions. The New England States developed large manufacturing interests. The seaboard cities grew in size, wealth, and culture. Baltimore increased from 49,000 in 1815 to 212,000 in 1860. Within the same period Boston increased from 38,000 to 177,000; Philadelphia from 100,000 to 508,000; and New York from 100,000 to 813,000.

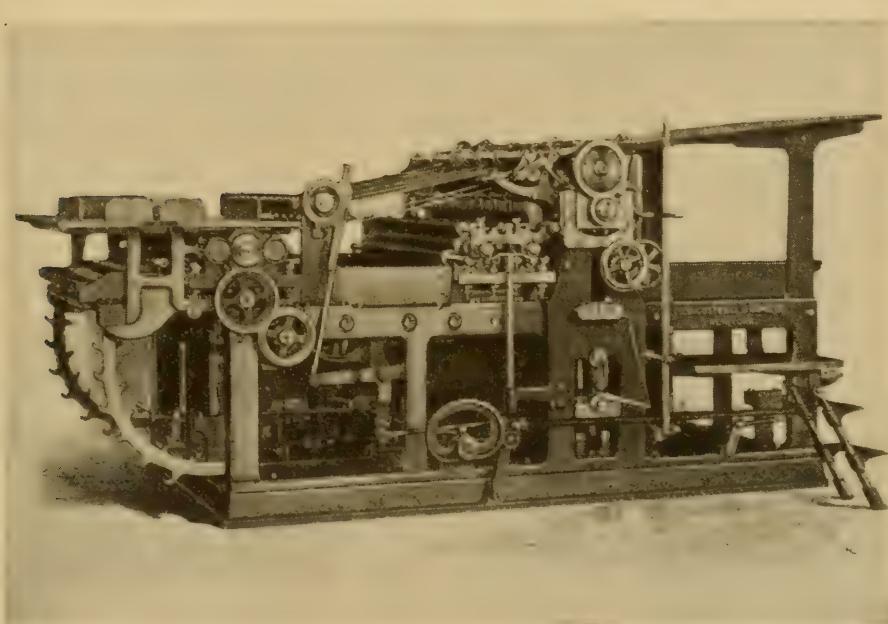
**189. Educational Progress.** — The intellectual culture of the people kept pace with their material expansion. The public-school system was extended from New England through-

out the free States. In the West liberal appropriations of land were made for their support. Gradually the courses of study and the methods of instruction were improved through the efforts of intelligent educators like Horace Mann and Henry Barnard. Schools of secondary education were founded in all parts of the country. No fewer than one hundred and forty-nine colleges were established between 1815 and 1861. These institutions, liberally supported by denominational zeal or by private munificence, became centres of literary culture. Harvard College exerted an astonishing influence. Between 1821 and 1831 it graduated Emerson, Holmes, Lowell, Sumner, Phillips, Motley, and Thoreau. Bancroft and Prescott were graduated at an earlier date. Longfellow, though a graduate of Bowdoin, for some years filled the chair of Modern Languages. This list, as will be seen, contains a number of the most honored names in American literature.

**190. Periodical Literature.** — The periodical press became a powerful agency in the diffusion of knowledge. In no other country, perhaps, has greater enterprise been shown in periodical literature than in America. Our newspapers, as a rule, show more energy, and our magazines more taste, than those of Europe. In 1860 there were 4051 papers and periodicals, circulating annually 927,951,000 copies, an average of thirty-four copies for each man, woman, and child in the country. They gradually rose in excellence, and stimulated literary production. A few of our ablest writers, Bryant, Poe, Whittier, and Lowell, served as editors. The *North American Review*, which was founded in 1815, numbered among its contributors nearly every writer of prominence in the First National Period.

**191. Favorable Conditions.** — As the foregoing considerations show, our country now, for the first time, presented conditions favorable to the production of general literature. The

stress of the Colonial and Revolutionary Periods was removed, and the intellectual energies of the people were freer to engage in the arts of peace. The growing wealth of the country brought the leisure and culture that create, to a greater or less degree, a demand for the higher forms of literature. The large cities became literary centres. Large publishing-houses



A MODERN PRINTING PRESS

were established. Under these circumstances it is not strange that there appeared writers in poetry, fiction, and history who attained a high degree of excellence. Irving, Cooper, Bryant, Hawthorne, Longfellow, Bancroft, Prescott, and others are names that reflect credit upon their country.

**192. The West and South.** — It will be noticed that nearly all the great writers of this period were from New England. It was there that the conditions were most favorable. The West was still too new for much literary activity. Like the

early colonists, the people were engaged in the great task of subduing an untamed country. In the South the social conditions were hardly favorable to literature. Slavery retarded the intellectual as well as the material development of the Southern States. It checked manufacture, and turned immigration westward. While the slaveholding class were generally intelligent, and often highly cultured, the rest of the white population were comparatively illiterate. The public-school system, regarded as unfavorable to the existing social relations, was not adopted. The energies of the dominant class were devoted to politics rather than to literature. Thus, while the South had great debaters and orators, like Calhoun and Clay and Robert Y. Hayne, it did not, during this period, produce many writers of eminence.

**193. Special Influence.** — So far our inquiry has sought an explanation of the literary activity of this period. The general causes, as in every period of literary bloom, are sufficiently patent. We may now examine the influences that gave literature its distinctive character as contrasted with that of the preceding periods. The results will not be without interest.

**194. Invention and Science.** — The period under consideration witnessed a wonderful stride in the march of human progress. There was a renaissance, based not on a restoration of ancient literature, but upon invention and science. It was not confined to any one country, but extended throughout the Christian world. It is not necessary to enumerate the various inventions which in a few decades revolutionized the entire system of agriculture, manufacture, and commerce. The drudgery of life was greatly relieved, the products of human industry were vastly increased, and the comforts of life largely multiplied. The nations of the earth were drawn closer

together, and the intellectual horizon was extended until it embraced, not a single province, but the civilized world.

**195. Spirit of Scientific Inquiry.** — But the period was distinguished scarcely less by its spirit of scientific inquiry. Emancipating themselves largely from the authority of tradition, men learned to look upon the world for themselves. Patient toilers carefully accumulated facts upon which to base their conclusions. All the natural sciences were wonderfully expanded. The origin of man, the history of the past, the laws of society, were all brought under new and searching investigation. As a result of all this scientific inquiry, a flood of light was shed upon the principal problems of nature and life. Christendom was lifted to a higher plane of intelligence than it had ever reached before.

**196. Literature Enriched.** — This general renaissance produced a corresponding change in literature. It enriched literature with new treasures of truth. It taught men to look upon the universe in a different way. Literary activity was stimulated, and both poetry and prose were cultivated to an extraordinary degree. New forms of literature were devised to hold the rich fruitage everywhere at hand. The frigid classicism of the age of Pope was abandoned as artificial and inadequate. The creative impulse of genius demanded untrammelled freedom. The essay acquired a new importance. History was suffused with a philosophic spirit that gave it greater depth. Fiction entered a broader field, and, while ministering to pleasure, became the handmaid of history, science, and social philosophy.

**197. Influence of Great Britain.** — The effect of this renaissance was felt in America largely by reflection. The literary expansion we have been considering went forward more rapidly in the British Isles than in the United States. It had already

begun there, while the people of this country were still struggling with the great problems of political independence and national government. Before the close of the Revolutionary period here, Cowper and Burns had given a new direction to poetry in Great Britain.

During the period under consideration, there arose in England and Scotland a group of able writers who were pervaded by the modern spirit, and who, to a greater or less degree, influenced contemporary literature in America. Scott wrote his masterful historical novels. Wordsworth interpreted the inaudible voices of mountain, field, and sky. Byron poured forth his eloquent descriptions, irreverent satire, and sombre misanthropy. Carlyle and Macaulay infused new life into history and essay. Dickens and Thackeray held up the mirror to various phases of social life. Coleridge interpreted to England the profound thoughts of German philosophy. The *Edinburgh Review*, founded by Jeffrey, Sydney Smith, and Henry Brougham, exercised its lordly dominion in the realm of letters.

**198. Question of State Rights.** — During the First National Period, there were two political questions that exerted a considerable influence upon the literature of this country. These were State rights and slavery. At frequent intervals these questions came up to disturb the public peace. For half a century they were dealt with in a spirit of compromise. But the views held and the interests involved were too conflicting to be permanently settled without an appeal to force. The statesmen of the South generally maintained the doctrine of State rights. It was boldly proclaimed in the United States Senate that a State had the right, under certain circumstances, to nullify an act of Congress. In 1830 Webster attained the height of his forensic fame by his eloquent reply to Hayne on the doctrine of nullification.

**199. Slavery.** — The question of slavery was still more serious. It was closely interwoven with the social organization of the South. The invention of the cotton gin in 1793 increased the demand for slave labor. The yield of cotton was rapidly increased from year to year, till in 1860 it reached the enormous figure of 2,054,698,800 pounds. Thus cotton became a source of great national wealth; and, as a result, slavery was intrenched behind the commercial and selfish interests of a large and influential class in all parts of the country.

**200. Agitation for Abolition.** — Nevertheless, there was a growing moral sentiment against slavery. It was felt to be a contradiction of the Declaration of Independence, and a violation of the natural rights of man. In 1830 William Lloyd Garrison began the publication of an antislavery paper called *The Liberator*, and with passionate zeal denounced a constitution that protected slavery, as "a league with death and a covenant with hell." The agitation for abolition was begun. In 1833 an antislavery society was formed. Whittier, Longfellow, Lowell, Phillips, and others lent the weight of their influence and the skill of their pens to the antislavery movement. Harriet Beecher Stowe exerted no small influence upon public sentiment in the North by "Uncle Tom's Cabin," a work in which the cruelties of slavery



HARRIET BEECHER STOWE

were graphically depicted. In a few years the abolition party became strong enough to enter national politics. The feeling between the North and the South became more pronounced and irreconcilable. Finally attempted secession precipitated a civil war, which resulted in the abolition of slavery, and the cementing of our country into a homogeneous and indissoluble union.

**201. Distinctive American Literature.** — With the First National Period our literature assumed, to some extent at least, a distinctively American character. New themes, requiring original treatment, were presented to the literary worker. In the East, Indian life had become sufficiently remote to admit of idealistic treatment. In Cooper's works the Indian is idealized as much as the mediæval knight in the novels of Scott. The picturesque elements in pioneer life were more clearly discerned. The wild life of the frontiersman began to appear in fiction, which, possessing the charm of novelty, was cordially received abroad. In the older parts of the country, tradition lent a legendary charm to various localities and different events. The legends of the Indians were found to possess poetical elements. From these sources Irving, Longfellow, Hawthorne, and Simms drew the materials for some of their most original and popular works.

**202. Unitarian Controversy.** — In the first half of the century there were in New England two closely related movements that deserve mention for their important effect upon literature. The first was the Unitarian controversy. Though the Unitarian doctrine is old, and was held by a few New England churches in the eighteenth century, the controversy began in 1805, when Henry Ware, a learned Unitarian, was elected professor of divinity in Harvard College. The capture of this leading institution by the Unitarians naturally provoked a theological conflict.

The champions on the Unitarian side were Henry Ware, William Ellery Channing, and Andrews Norton; on the Trinitarian side, Leonard Woods, Moses Stuart, and Lyman Beecher. From 1815 to 1830 the discussion was the leading question of the time. Though conducted with great earnestness on both sides, the controversy was without that venomous character distinguished as *odium theologicum*. A large number of Congregational churches adopted the Unitarian belief. Emphasizing the moral duties rather than the doctrinal beliefs of Christianity, the Unitarians became very active in education, philanthropy, and reform. It is not too much to say that all the leading writers of New England felt the stimulating and liberalizing influence of the Unitarian movement.

**203. Transcendental Movement.** — The other movement referred to belongs to the sphere of philosophy, though it also affected religious belief. It has been characterized as *transcendentalism*. In spite of the levity with which the movement has sometimes been treated, it was an earnest protest against a materialistic philosophy, which teaches that the senses are our only source of knowledge. It was a reaction against what is dull, prosaic, and hard in everyday life. The central thing in transcendentalism is the belief that the human mind has the power to attain truth independently of the senses and the understanding. Emerson, himself a leading transcendentalist, defines it as follows: "What is popularly called Transcendentalism among us is Idealism: Idealism as it appears in 1842. As thinkers, mankind have ever divided into two sects, Materialists and Idealists; the first class founding on experience, the second on consciousness; the first class beginning to think from the data of the senses, the second class perceive that the senses are not final, and say, the senses give us representations of things, but what are the things themselves, they

cannot tell. The materialist insists on facts, on history, on the force of circumstances and the animal wants of man; the idealist on the power of Thought and of Will, on inspiration, on miracle, on individual culture."

**204. Origin and Effects.** — This idealistic or transcendental philosophy did not originate in New England, though it received a special coloring and application there. It began in Germany with the writings of Kant, Fichte, and Schelling; it was transported to England by Coleridge and Carlyle, through whose works it first made its way to America. It abounded in profound and fertile thought. It was taken up by a remarkable group of men and women in Boston and Concord, among whom were Emerson, Alcott, Thoreau, Parker, and Margaret Fuller. Their organ (for every movement at that time had to have its periodical) was *The Dial*. Transcendentalism exerted an elevating influence upon New England thought, and gave to our literature one of its greatest writers in the person of Ralph Waldo Emerson.

**205. Various Disturbing Problems.** — Contemporary with the transcendental movement, all sorts of novelties and projects of reform kept New England in a state of ferment. Spiritualism, phrenology, and mesmerism attracted much attention. Temperance, woman's rights, and socialism were all discussed in public gatherings and in the press. Many of these schemes, which aimed at the regeneration of society, had the sympathy and encouragement of the transcendentalists. Some of their leading spirits participated in the Brook Farm experiment, which was based on the communistic teachings of Fourier. Though the experiment ended in failure, it gave the world Hawthorne's "Blithedale Romance," in which the author utilized the observations made during his residence in the famous phalanstery.

**206. Group of Historians — Bancroft.** — During this period New England produced a group of historians who have reflected credit upon American letters. To exhaustive research and judicial calmness, they have added the charm of literary grace. Bancroft's "History of the United States" in twelve volumes begins with Columbus and ends in 1789. The first volume appeared in 1834; and to the completion of the work he devoted a large part of his laborious life. The last volume did not appear till 1882. His style is elaborate and rhetorical, and the work abounds in eloquent passages.

**207. Prescott.** — Prescott is a historian of wide range. Though heavily handicapped by partial blindness, he was able, through ample means and indefatigable industry, to achieve great eminence. His chosen field was Spanish history; and he spared neither pains nor expense in accumulating large stores of material. His "History of Ferdinand and Isabella," which occupied him for eleven years, appeared in 1827. It was at once translated into five European languages, and established his reputation as the foremost historian of America. His "Conquest of Mexico" (1843), "Conquest of Peru" (1847), and "Philip the Second" (1858) were received with equal favor. Apart from its thorough sifting of material and its judicial fair-



WILLIAM HICKLING PRESCOTT

ness, his work is characterized by grace and eloquence of style.

**208. Motley.** — Motley deserves a place beside his illustrious contemporary historians. If less ornate in style, he is scarcely less interesting. Like Bancroft and Prescott, he was educated at Harvard. In 1849 he published a novel entitled "Merry Mount, a Romance of Massachusetts Colony." But the principal literary labors of his life were devoted to history. In 1855 he published his "Rise of the Dutch Republic," which had cost him ten years of toil. Its superior merit was at once recognized; and shortly afterwards it was translated into French under the supervision of Guizot, who wrote an introduction. Motley continued to cultivate the same field almost to the close of his life. His "History of the United Netherlands," the first part of which appeared in 1860, was completed eight years later. "The Life and Death of John of Barneveld," his last great historical work, was issued in 1874; and, like its predecessors, was received with great favor.

**209. Literature and Public Service.** — It is deserving of notice that many of our American authors have been more than mere men of letters. They have been distinguished citizens as well, and have served their country in important positions at home and abroad. Bancroft was appointed Secretary of the Navy in 1845, and established the Naval Academy at Annapolis. Afterwards he served as United States minister to Great Britain, 1846–1849, to Russia in 1867, and to the German Empire, 1871–1874. Motley was appointed United States minister to Austria in 1861, where he remained for the next six years. He was made minister to England in 1869, from which mission, however, he was recalled the year following without apparent good reason. The distin-

guished labors of Irving and Lowell abroad will appear in the more extended sketches to follow.

**210. "Knickerbocker School."** — A group of writers in New York, without sufficient reason sometimes called "the Knickerbocker school," deserve more than passing notice. Washington Irving, the principal writer of this group, is reserved for special study. The other prominent members were James Kirke Paulding, Joseph Rodman Drake, and Fitz-Greene Halleck.

**211. Paulding.** — Paulding, whose educational advantages never extended beyond those of a village school, deserves to be regarded as a self-made man. In early manhood he became the intimate friend of William and Washington Irving, with whom he co-operated in the publication of the *Salmagundi* papers.

"The Diverting History of John Bull and Brother Jonathan" is a good-natured satire on the attitude of England before the breaking out of hostilities in 1812. His pamphlet, "The United States and England" (1814), attracted the attention of President Madison, and thus opened the way to his political career, in which he became Secretary of the Navy under a subsequent administration. His principal poetical work is the "Backwoodsman," a narrative poem of six books,



JAMES K. PAULDING

devoted to American scenery, incident, and sentiment. It never became popular.

**212. His Versatility.** — Paulding's prolific pen continued active for many years, and the long list of his writings contains poetry, novels, tales, biography, and satire. "The Dutchman's Fireside," a story based on the manners of the old Dutch settlers, was his most popular work. It passed through six editions within a year; and besides its republication in London, it was translated into French and Dutch. Paulding's writings were tinged with a humorous and satirical spirit; but the most noteworthy element in his writings was, perhaps, their distinctive national character. He was an ardent patriot; and it is American scenery and American character to which his genius is chiefly devoted.

**213. Drake.** — Drake exhibited in childhood a remarkable poetic precocity. It was as true of him as of Pope that "he lisped in numbers, for the numbers came." His juvenile poem, "The Mocking Bird," shows unusual maturity of thought and expression. His early years were disciplined by poverty. After taking his degree in medicine, he married the daughter of a wealthy shipbuilder in 1816, and two years later went abroad. Travel added to his stores of culture. On his return he spent a winter in New Orleans in the vain endeavor to restore his health. He died of consumption in 1820. His monument bears the simple tribute written by his friend Halleck: —

"None knew him but to love him,  
Nor named him but to praise."

**214. "The American Flag."** — On his return from Europe in 1819, he wrote the first of the Croaker series of poems for the *Evening Post*. It was entitled "Ennui," and characterized by the editor as "the production of genius and taste."

In this series of forty poems, mostly humorous and satirical, he was aided by Halleck under the pen-name of Croaker, Jr. It was in this series that he published "The American Flag," the often quoted poem by which, perhaps, he is chiefly remembered.

"When Freedom from her mountain height  
Unfurled her standard to the air,  
She tore the azure robe of night,  
And set the stars of glory there."

**215. "The Culprit Fay."** — "The Culprit Fay," his longest and best poem, grew out of a conversation with Cooper, Halleck, and DeKay, in which these gentlemen maintained that American streams, unlike those of Scotland with their romantic associations, were not adapted to the uses of poetry. Drake took the opposite side; and in vindication of his position, he wrote this poem of exquisite fancy and description.

**216. Halleck.** — Halleck was a native of Connecticut, but at the age of twenty-one he went to New York to seek his fortune. He first entered a banking-house as clerk, and afterwards became a bookkeeper in the private office of John Jacob Astor. His literary bent found expression in a few juvenile poems; but it was his work in connection with the Croaker poems in the *Evening Post* that first gave him celebrity. The following stanza from "Cutting" will give an idea of the tone and spirit of the Croaker series:—



FITZ-GREENE HALLECK

“The world is not a perfect one,  
 All women are not wise or pretty,  
 All that are willing are not won,—  
 More’s the pity — more’s the pity !  
 ‘Playing wall-flower’s rather flat,’  
 L’Allegro or Pensero —  
 Not that women care for that —  
 But oh ! they hate the slighting beau so !”

**217. “Marco Bozzaris.”** — “Fanny” is a satirical poem, which made a hit. The first edition was soon exhausted. But his principal claim upon our remembrance rests on the stirring ballad “Marco Bozzaris,” which appeared in 1825 in the *United States Review*, edited by William Cullen Bryant. His poem on Burns, though burdened with not a few weak stanzas, contains some just and melodious characterization. Through care, and pain, and woe, —

“He kept his honesty and truth,  
 His independent tongue and pen,  
 And moved, in manhood as in youth,  
 Pride of his fellow-men.”

**218. Richmond a Literary Centre.** — It has been common to undervalue the literary work of the South during the period under consideration. Though literature was not generally encouraged, there were nevertheless two literary centres which exerted a notable influence upon Southern letters. The first was Richmond, the home of Poe during his earlier years, and of the *Southern Literary Messenger*, in its day the most influential magazine south of the Potomac. It was founded, as set forth in its first issue, to encourage literature in Virginia and the other States of the South ; and during its career of twenty-eight years it stimulated literary production in a remarkable degree. Among its

contributors we find Simms, Hayne, Timrod, Cooke, John R. Thompson, and others — a galaxy of the best-known names in Southern literature before the Civil War.

**219. John Esten Cooke.** — The principal novelist of Virginia is undoubtedly John Esten Cooke. He has been called an inveterate bookmaker; and the list of his writings, including biography, history, and fiction, exceeds a score of volumes. His first novel, "Leather Stocking and Silk," a story of the valley of Virginia, was issued by the Harpers in 1854. Not long afterwards appeared "The Virginia Comedians," regarded by many as his best work. It is a historic novel, introducing us to the life and manners of Virginia just before the Revolution.



JOHN ESTEN COOKE

**220. Utilizing War Experiences.** — During four years of service in the Confederate army he distinguished himself for fidelity and courage. After the surrender of Lee, he returned to literature, and turned to good account the treasures of his own experience. "I amuse myself," he said in one of his prologues, "by recalling the old times when the Grays and Blues were opposed to each other." "Surrey of Eagle's Nest," giving the memories of a staff

officer serving in Virginia, is regarded as autobiographical. He wrote also a "Life of General Robert E. Lee," and a "History of Virginia," in the American Commonwealth series.

**221. "Boston of the South."** — The other principal literary centre of the South was Charleston. It has often been called the Boston of the South. "Legaré's wit and scholarship," to use the words of Mrs. Margaret J. Preston, "brightened its social circle; Calhoun's deep shadow

loomed over it from his plantation at Fort Hill; Gilmore Simms's genial culture broadened its sympathies. The latter was the Mæcenas to a band of brilliant youths who used to meet for literary suppers at his beautiful home." Among these brilliant youths were Paul Hamilton Hayne and Henry Timrod, two of the best poets the South has produced.

**222. Simms.** — William Gilmore Simms was a man of rare versatility of genius. He made up for his lack of collegiate



WILLIAM GILMORE SIMMS

training by private study and wide experience. He early gave up law for literature, and during his long and tireless literary career was editor, poet, dramatist, historian,

and novelist. He has been styled "the Cooper of the South"; but it is hardly too much to say that in versatility, culture, and literary productiveness he surpassed his great Northern contemporary.

**223. A Poet.** — Simms was a poet before he became a novelist. Before he was twenty-five he had published three



HOME OF SIMMS, CHARLESTON, SOUTH CAROLINA

or more volumes of verse. In 1832 his imaginative poem, "Atalantis, a Story of the Sea," was brought out by the Harpers, and it introduced him at once to the favorable notice of what Poe called the "Literati" of New York. His subsequent volumes of poetry, among which "Areytos, or Songs and Ballads of the South," is to be noted, were devoted chiefly to a description of Southern scenes and incidents.

**224. Poetic Style.** — The verse of Simms is characterized by facile vigor rather than by fine poetic quality. The following lines are not without a lesson for to-day: —

“This the true sign of ruin to a race —  
 It undertakes no march, and day by day  
 Drowses in camp, or, with the laggard’s pace,  
 Walks sentry o’er possessions that decay;  
 Destined, with sensible waste, to fleet away; —  
 For the first secret of continued power  
 Is the continued conquest; — all our sway  
 Hath surety in the uses of the hour;  
 If that we waste, in vain walled town and lofty tower.”

**225. His Novels.** — Among the best of Simms’s novels is a series devoted to the Revolution. The characters and

incidents of that conflict in South Carolina are graphically portrayed. “The Partisan,” the first of this historic series, was published in 1835. “The Yemassee” is an Indian story, in which the character of the red man is less idealized than in Cooper’s “Leatherstocking Tales.” In “The Damisel of Darien,” the hero is Balboa, the discoverer of the Pacific.



PAUL HAMILTON HAYNE

been called “the poet laureate of the South.” This proud distinction is due him for the range and excellence of his work,

**226. Paul H. Hayne.** — Paul Hamilton Hayne has

as well as for its quality. He rises highest above the commonplace, and by the exquisite finish of his poetry displays a fine artistic genius. Other American poets have shown greater originality and have treated of weightier or more popular themes; but it may be fairly doubted whether any other has had a more exquisite delicacy of touch. In fitness of poetic fibre he is akin to Tennyson.

**227. Devotion to Poetry.** — The poetic impulse, to which he surrendered his life with rare singleness of purpose, manifested itself early. His first volume of poems appeared in 1855, his second in 1857, and his third in 1860. These volumes reveal the spirit and workmanship of a true poet. In “The Will and the Wing” he exhibits a loyal consecration to his art:—

“Yet would I rather in the outward state  
    Of Song’s immortal temple lay me down,  
A beggar basking by that radiant gate,  
    Than bend beneath the haughtiest empire’s crown.

“For sometimes, through the bars, my ravished eyes  
    Have caught bright glimpses of a life divine,  
And seen a far, mysterious rapture rise  
    Beyond the veil that guards the inmost shrine.”

**228. Love of Nature.** — Nature in all its shapes and moods had for him a perpetual charm. The glorious dawns of the Southland, the monarch of the woods, the mellowing fields touched by evening’s glow, the songs of happy-throated birds, the lapse of silvery streamlets through the hills, are all depicted with almost matchless delicacy and truth. But it was not alone the outward beauty of earth and sky that appealed to him. Like Wordsworth, he was conscious of an immanent Presence that imparted a deep spiritual meaning to the objects about him:—

"The universe of God is still, not dumb,  
For many voices in sweet undertone  
To reverent listeners come."

**229. War Poetry.** — At the outbreak of the Civil War, Hayne was placed on Governor Pickens's staff; but after a brief term of service he was forced, by failing health, to resign. His war poetry attains a rare elevation of thought



HAYNE'S HOME, COPSE HILL, AUGUSTA, GEORGIA

and diction. Without hate or vindictiveness, he celebrates heroes and deeds of heroism — the chivalry that "wrought grandly and died smiling."

**230. Copse Hill.** — The war left him in poverty. The bombardment of Charleston had destroyed his beautiful home: and the family silver and other treasures, which had been removed to Columbia for safe-keeping, were lost in Sherman's "march to the sea." His manly courage,

one of the dominant notes in his music, did not desert him. He built near Augusta, Ga., a primitive cottage, to which he gave the name Copse Hill, and in which the rest of his days were spent in brave hopefulness. He portrayed his own spirit when he wrote:—

“Still smiles the brave soul, undivorced from hope ;  
And with unwavering eye and warrior mien,  
Walks in the shadow dauntless and serene,  
To test, through hostile years, the utmost scope  
Of man’s endurance — constant to essay  
All heights of patience free to feet of clay.”

**231. Henry Timrod.** — Henry Timrod’s life resembles that of Keats. It is a melancholy record of poverty, ill health, unappreciation, and disaster. There is a deep pathos in the struggles and premature ending of this gifted life. He keenly felt the indifference with which his songs were received, and it chilled the poetic ardor of his soul. He was a native of Charleston. Like so many other poets in whom the literary impulse has been strong, he gave up law for literature. In 1849, under the *nom de plume* of “Aglaus,” he began a series of contributions to the *Southern Literary Messenger*, some of which have not found a place in his collected writings. He con-



HENRY TIMROD

tributed, also, to *Russell's Magazine*, under the editorship of Hayne, in which some of his best productions appeared.

**232. Martial Lyrics.** — In 1860 a small volume of his poems was published in Boston. Though, in the opinion of Hayne, "a better first volume of the kind seldom appeared anywhere," it attracted but little attention. The beginning of the Civil War called forth some fiery lyrics — especially "Carolina" and "A Cry to Arms" — which in the excitement of the time appealed strongly to Southern hearts. They are as intense in their sectional feeling as the antislavery lyrics of Whittier and Lowell. "Ethnogenesis" celebrates the birth of the Southern Confederacy; but happily for our country the glowing prophecies of the poem were not fulfilled.

**233. An Editor.** — In 1864 he became assistant editor of the *South Carolinian* at Columbia. During a brief period of prosperity he ventured upon his long-deferred marriage to Miss Kate Goodwin — the "Katie" of his song. But a year later, in the path of Sherman's victorious march, his paper was destroyed and he himself became a fugitive. In his great need it became necessary at times to exchange necessary household articles for bread. He died in 1867 and was buried in Columbia, where a small shaft now marks his grave.

**234. Poetic Quality.** — A posthumous edition of Timrod's poems was published in 1873 with a beautiful memoir by Hayne. A memorial edition was issued in 1899. An examination of the poems shows that they are of limited range and, in the main, slight in subject. But they are distinguished by simplicity, elegance, and sanity. Timrod is lacking in the finest lyrical flights, but he is constantly true. He is always noble in thought and sentiment. His concep-

tion of the poetic office, as reflected in "A Vision of Poetry," was exalted; the poet was to his mind a prophet. The poet "spheres worlds in himself"; and then, "like some noble host," —

"He spreads the riches of his soul, and bids  
Partake who will. Age has its saws of truth,  
And love is for the maiden's drooping lids,  
And words of passion for the earnest youth;  
Wisdom for all; and when it seeks relief,  
Tears, and their solace for the heart of grief."

**235. His Sonnets.** — Some of Timrod's deepest notes are sounded in his sonnets. "Brief as the sonnet is," he said, "the whole power of the poet has sometimes been exemplified within its narrow bounds as completely as within the compass of an epic." He laments, for example, that "most men know love as but a part of life": —

"Ah me! why may not love and life be one?  
Why walk we thus alone, when by our side,  
Love, like a visible God, might be our guide?  
How would the marts grow noble! and the street,  
Worn like a dungeon-floor by weary feet,  
Seem then a golden court-way of the sun!"

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

Consult the general bibliography. The biographical and critical studies of the major writers will each be followed by a special reference list.

Numerous selections from the minor writers of this period will be found in Stedman and Hutchinson, Duyckinck, and the Library of Southern Writers. Choice selections from the minor poets will be found in Stedman's "American Anthology." Trent's "Southern Writers" and Painter's "Poets of the South" are convenient volumes of selections.

The historical background is presented in the numerous excellent histories of the United States. In this connection Bogart's "Economic History of the United States" will be found instructive. The speeches of Hayne, Webster, Calhoun, Douglas, Lincoln, and other statesmen, as contained in "The World's Famous Orations" or other similar works are specially recommended.

The following poems, most of them well-known, are connected with incidents falling within the First National Period: Holmes's "Old Ironsides"; Emerson's "Concord Hymn"; Longfellow's "Wreck of the Hesperus"; Whittier's "Angels of Buena Vista"; Theodore O'Hara's "Bivouac of the Dead"; and Whittier's "Crisis" and "Ichabod."

Interesting novels throwing light on the life of the people in different parts of our country during this period: Amelia E. Barr's "Remember the Alamo" (1836); Harriet Beecher Stowe's "Uncle Tom's Cabin"; Hawthorne's "Blithedale Romance"; James Lane Allen's "A Kentucky Cardinal" (about 1850); Irving Bacheller's "Eben Holden"; Winston Churchill's "The Crisis" (1860-65); Moncure D. Conway's "Pine and Palm"; Joel Chandler Harris's "Free Joe"; Geo. W. Cable's "Dr. Sevier"; John Fox, Jr.'s "The Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come"; F. Hopkinson Smith's "The Fortunes of Oliver Horne"; Edward Eggleston's "The Hoosier Schoolmaster" (1830-35); Bret Harte's "Gabriel Conroy" (about 1853); and Vaughan Kester's "The Prodigal Judge."

## WASHINGTON IRVING

**236. Our First Man of Letters.** — To Washington Irving belongs the distinction of being the first of our great writers in general literature. He was not a great theologian like Jonathan Edwards, nor a practical philosopher and moralist like Franklin, nor a statesman like Jefferson and Hamilton. He was above all a literary man; and his writings belong, in large measure at least, to the field of *belles-lettres*. In his most characteristic writings he aimed

not so much at instruction as at entertainment. He achieved that finished excellence of form that at once elevates literature to the classic rank. He was the first American writer to gain general recognition abroad; or, to use Thackeray's words, "Irving was the first ambassador whom the New World of letters sent to the Old." Our literature has had many "ambassadors" since; but it is doubtful whether any other has ever been more cordially welcomed or more pleasantly remembered.

**237. Childhood.** — Washington Irving was born in the city of New York, April 3, 1783, the youngest of eleven children. The Revolutionary War was ended, and the American army occupied the city. "Washington's work is ended," said the mother, "and



WASHINGTON IRVING

the child shall be named after him." Six years later, when Washington had become the first President of the young republic, a Scotch maid-servant of the Irving family one day followed him into a shop. "Please, your honor," said she, "here's a bairn was named after you." With grave dignity the President laid his hand on the child's head, and bestowed his blessing.

**238. Education and Reading.** — Not much can be said of young Irving's education. Like many another brilliant writer in English literature, he took but little interest in the prescribed courses of study. As was said of Shakespeare, he knew little Latin and less Greek. But it would be a mistake to suppose that his early years went unimproved. His literary bent asserted itself in the neglect of such studies as did not interest him. During his boyhood he was an eager reader. Books of poetry and travel were quickly devoured. The creative literary impulse was early manifested in the composition of verses and childish plays.

**239. Storing up Materials.** — Two of his brothers had been sent to Columbia College. But his disinclination to methodical study deprived him of this privilege. Perhaps it was just as well; for his genius was left freer to pursue its own development. At sixteen he entered a law office; but from what has already been said, it will not appear strange that he neglected his law-books for works of literature. In 1798 he spent a part of his summer vacation in exploring with his gun the Sleepy Hollow region which he was afterwards to immortalize with the magic of his pen. At this period he showed symptoms of pulmonary weakness; and for several years he spent much time in outdoor exercise, making excursions along the Hudson and the Mohawk. Though he did not at the time turn his experience to account in a literary way, he was all the while, perhaps unconsciously to himself, storing up materials for future use.

**240. Voyage to Europe.** — In 1804, it was thought that a voyage to Europe would be beneficial to his health. Accordingly he took passage for Bordeaux in a sailing-vessel. "There's a chap," said the captain to himself as young Irving went on board, "that

will go overboard before we get across." But the gloomy prediction was not fulfilled; and after a voyage of six weeks — it was not the day of ocean greyhounds — he reached his destination much improved in health.

**241. In France and Italy.** — He visited in succession the principal cities of France and Italy. He had not yet found his vocation, and his life abroad appears sufficiently aimless. He gave free play to his large social nature, and to the ordinary observer he seemed a mere pleasure-seeker. But he was accomplishing more than he or his friends understood. He made the acquaintance of many eminent persons, and his genial nature and pleasing manners made him welcome in the brilliant social circles to which he was introduced. He had an opportunity to study European society in all its phases. He added to his knowledge of English literature an acquaintance with the literatures of France and Italy. He was brought into sympathetic contact with the art and antiquities of Europe. He was one of the keenest observers. While thus storing his memory with knowledge afterwards to be invaluable to him, his culture was expanding into the breadth of cosmopolitan sympathies.

**242. Genial Spirit.** — He met the inconveniences and discomforts inseparable from travel in those days with a truly philosophic spirit. "When I cannot get a dinner to suit my taste," he said, "I endeavor to get a taste to suit my dinner." He was no chronic grumbler. He made it a habit all through life to look on the pleasant side of things. "I endeavor," he said, "to be pleased with everything about me, and with the masters, mistresses, and servants of the inns, particularly when I perceive they have all the dispositions in the world to serve me; as Sterne says, 'It is enough for heaven and ought to be enough for me.'"

**243. Romantic Disposition.** — He did not carry with him in his travels the statesman's interest in the political condition of Europe. Politics were never to his taste. He preferred to wander over the scenes of renowned achievement, to loiter about the ruined castle, to lose himself among the shadowy grandeurs of the past. The pathetic

constancy of Petrarch for Laura appealed to him more than the meteoric splendor of Napoleon.

**244. Influence of Allston.** — In the course of his travels he met Washington Allston. The acquaintance for a time threatened to change the course of his life. Allston's enthusiasm for art proved contagious. The charm of the Italian landscape, the inestimable treasures of art in the city of the Cæsars, made a profound impression on Irving's refined and poetic sensibilities. For a time he thought of becoming a painter. As we may clearly discern in his writings, he had an artistic eye for color and form. Had he adhered to this temporary purpose, it is possible that he might, like his friend and compatriot, have given us some admirable paintings. But it is well-nigh certain that the world would have been the loser; for what pictures could compensate for the loss of the "Sketch-Book," "Bracebridge Hall," and the "Tales of a Traveller"?

**245. Law and Literature.** — Irving returned to America in 1806, and was admitted to the bar. His legal attainments were slender, and his interest in his profession superficial. Instead of throwing his heart into it, he allowed much of his time and energy to be absorbed in social enjoyments. At this period he first gave decided indication of his future career. A strong literary instinct is irrepressible. In association with his brother, William, and James K. Paulding, he issued a semi-monthly periodical, entitled *Salmagundi*. It was an imitation of the *Spectator*, and aimed "simply to instruct the young, reform the old, correct the town, and castigate the age." The writers veiled themselves in mystery. They affected utter indifference to either praise or blame, and with lofty superiority criticised the manners of the town. The wit and humor were delightful, and from the start the paper had a flattering success. But after running through twenty numbers, it stopped in the midst of its success as suddenly as it had burst upon the astonished community.

**246. A Taste of Politics.** — It was almost inevitable that Irving should be drawn into politics. With no taste for law, he found

it tedious waiting for clients who never came. Local politics seemed to present an inviting field; but a brief experience was enough. He toiled "through the purgatory" of one election. He got through the first two days pretty well. Among his new associates he kept on the lookout for "whim, character, and absurdity." Then the duties of a ward politician began to pall upon him. Referring with characteristic humor to his unsavory experience, he wrote: "I shall not be able to bear the smell of small beer and tobacco for a month to come."

**247. Love and Constancy.** — Irving early had his romance, and it makes the most pathetic incident in his life. He formed a deep attachment for Matilda Hoffman, a young lady of great personal charm. (His love was as ardently returned. But before the wedding-day arrived, she fell sick and died.) He never entirely recovered from this loss, which seems to have tinged his character ever afterwards with a gentle melancholy. With a constancy as beautiful as it is rare, he remained faithful to his first love throughout life.

**248. "Knickerbocker's History."** — It was while burdened with a sense of his irreparable loss that he completed the work that was to make him famous. This was "Knickerbocker's History of New York." It is a humorous treatment of the traditions and customs belonging to the period of the Dutch domination. The personal characteristics of the phlegmatic Dutch governors, and the leading events in the early history of the city, are treated in a delightful, mock-heroic vein. The work was received with almost universal acclaim. It became a household word. After a lapse of forty years, Irving tells us that he found New Yorkers of Dutch descent priding themselves on being "genuine Knickerbockers."

**249. Business and Legislation.** — The next five years of Irving's life were neither very serious nor very fruitful. Though so strongly drawn to literature that he was scarcely fit for anything else, he was afraid to adopt a literary career. He entered into a mercantile partnership with his brothers, in which he was required to do but

little work. In the interests of the firm, when Congress threatened some legislation unfavorable to importing merchants, he made a visit to Washington. But there, as well as in Philadelphia and Baltimore, social pleasures occupied him more than the action of Congress. He steadily refused to look on the darker side of human nature or human life. He would not believe that wisdom consists in a knowledge of the wickedness of men, and confessed that he entertained "a most melancholy good opinion and good will for the great mass of my fellow-creatures."

**250. Not a Violent Partisan.** — While in Washington he saw a good deal of the leading men of the country. Though his sympathies were with the Federalists, he was not a violent partisan. He was far too broad-minded to become a bigot in either religion or politics. He was on good terms with the leaders of both political parties, and laughed equally at their extravagance. "One day," he writes, "I am dining with a knot of honest, furious Federalists, who are damning all their opponents as a set of consummate scoundrels, panders to Bonaparte, etc. The next day I dine, perhaps, with some of the very men I have heard thus anathematized, and find them equally honest, warm, and indignant; and, if I take their word for it, I had been dining the day before with some of the greatest knaves in the nation, men absolutely paid and suborned by the British government."

**251. Merchant and Editor.** — For a time the business of his brothers (they were importers of hardware and cutlery) required his services at the store pretty constantly. The work was distasteful to him beyond measure. "By all the martyrs of Grub Street," he exclaimed, "I'd sooner live in a garret, and starve into the bargain, than follow so sordid, dusty, and soul-killing a way of life, though certain it would make me as rich as old Crœsus, or John Jacob Astor himself." He became editor of a periodical called *Select Reviews*, for which he wrote some biographies and sketches, a few of which afterwards appeared in the "Sketch-Book." But he soon grew tired of his position, for he had an invincible aversion to regular work.

**252. Long Sojourn in Europe.** — The year the second war with Great Britain closed, Irving sailed for Europe, where the next seventeen years of his life were spent, — years rich in experience and literary activity. It was during this period that a number of his choicest works were produced. His reputation as the author of "Knickerbocker" made him a welcome guest in literary circles. In London he dined at Murray's, where he met some of the notable writers of the day. He was cordially received at Edinburgh; and he spent some days with Scott, of whose home and habits he has given so delightful a description in "Abbotsford."

**253. Haunts of Isaac Walton.** — As we should naturally expect, Irving was a great admirer of Isaac Walton. He made more than one visit to the haunts of the illustrious angler. On one occasion he wandered by the banks of the romantic Dove in company with a "lovely girl," who pointed out to him the beauties of the surrounding scenery, and repeated "in the most dulcet voice tracts of heaven-born poetry."

**254. Finds his Vocation.** — Upon the failure of the branch house of his brothers in Liverpool, he went to London to embark upon the literary career for which nature had so evidently intended him. He was urged by Scott to become editor of an anti-Jacobin periodical in Edinburgh. This he refused to do for two reasons already familiar to us, — his distaste for politics, and his aversion to regular literary work. He also declined an offer to become a contributor of the *London Quarterly*, with the liberal pay of one hundred guineas an article. "It has always been so hostile to my country," he said, "I cannot draw a pen in its service." This is the language of high-toned patriotism.

**255. "The Sketch-Book."** — In 1819 he began the publication of the "Sketch-Book." It was written in England, and sent over to New York, where it was issued in octavo numbers. Some of them were reprinted in London without the author's consent; and to prevent the entire work from being pirated, Irving found it necessary to bring out an edition in England. After once declin-

ing it in the polite manner for which publishers have become noted, Murray was afterwards persuaded by Scott to bring out the work. He purchased the copyright for two hundred pounds, which, with noteworthy liberality, he subsequently raised to four hundred.

**256. Intellectual Development.** — In comparing the "Sketch-Book" with Irving's previous work, it is impossible not to perceive his intellectual development. He has acquired a greater depth of thought and feeling. His sympathies have gained in scope. His hand has acquired a more exquisite touch. As a natural result of the tribulations through which he had passed, a number of the sketches are tinged with sadness. In only two of them does he give rein to his inimitable humor; but these two, "Rip Van Winkle" and the "Legend of Sleepy Hollow," will endure as long as the beautiful region with which they are associated. The "Sketch-Book" exerted an important influence upon American literature. While stimulating our writers with the bright possibilities before them, it rendered henceforth inartistic or slovenly work intolerable.

**257. A Literary Lion.** — The applause with which America greeted the appearance of the "Sketch-Book" was echoed by England. Irving became the lion of the day. There seemed to be "a kind of conspiracy," as some one wrote at the time, "to hoist him over the heads of his contemporaries." But he was not elated by his success. Vanity is a vice of smaller souls. "I feel almost appalled by such success," he wrote to a friend, "and fearful that it cannot be real, or that it is not fully merited, or that I shall not act up to the expectations that may be formed."

**258. "Bracebridge Hall."** — In 1820 Irving made a visit to Paris, where his reputation secured him flattering recognition. Here he made the acquaintance of Thomas Moore, whom he characterized as a "noble-hearted, manly, spirited little fellow, with a mind as generous as his fancy is brilliant." A warm friendship sprang up between them. Irving found too many distractions in Paris to do much literary work. An eruptive malady,

which appeared in his ankles and at intervals incapacitated him for walking, sometimes rendered literary composition difficult or impossible. Notwithstanding these hindrances he wrote "Bracebridge Hall," which was published in 1822, the year of his return to England. It is made up of a series of delightful sketches, chiefly descriptive of country life in England. He had traversed that country, as he tells us, "a grown-up child, delighted by every object, great and small." His delicate and genial observation caught much of the poetry, picturesqueness, and humor of English life. It shows the same exquisite workmanship that characterized the "Sketch-Book"; and some of its stories, like "The Stout Gentleman," "Annette Delarbre," and "Dolph Heyleger," are models of brilliant and effective narrative. It is significant of Irving's growing reputation that Murray paid a thousand pounds for the copyright.

**259. "Tales of a Traveller."** — After a visit to Dresden, where he found congenial society in an English family, and a trip to Prague, which still kept up "its warrior look," we find him in 1823 again in Paris. Its gayeties had an attraction for him. He worked at irregular intervals, for he was almost wholly dependent upon impulse or inspiration. When the inspiration was on him, he wrote very rapidly; and having once begun a book, he labored diligently till it was completed. The following year his "Tales of a Traveller" appeared, one of his most delightful books. Irving himself said that "there was more of an artistic touch about it, though this is not a thing to be appreciated by the many." He sold the copyright to Murray for fifteen hundred pounds, and, according to Moore, might have had two thousand; but it was no part of his genius to drive shrewd bargains.

**260. "Life of Columbus."** — But the time had now come for him to open a new vein. In 1826, at the invitation of Alexander H. Everett, United States Minister at Madrid, he went to the Spanish capital for the purpose of translating a recent collection of documents relating to the voyages of Columbus. He found a rich store of materials that had never been utilized, and resolved

to write an independent work. The result was the publication in 1828 of his "Life and Voyages of Christopher Columbus," a work of extensive research and admirable treatment. It was eagerly read, and Jeffrey declared that no work would ever supersede it. It at once gave Irving an honorable place among historians.

**261. "Conquest of Granada."** — The "Conquest of Granada," the most interesting, perhaps, of his Spanish works, was closely related to the "Life of Columbus." It was while pursuing his researches for the latter work that he became interested in the stirring and romantic scenes connected with the overthrow of the Moorish dominion in Spain. Subsequently he made a tour of Andalusia, and visited the towns, fortresses, and mountain-passes that had been the scenes of the most remarkable events of the war. He passed some time in the ancient palace of the Alhambra, the once favorite abode of the Moorish monarchs. With these scenes fresh in his mind, he wrote the "Conquest of Granada," and though he allowed himself some freedom in its romantic coloring (for the subject appealed strongly to his imagination), he remained faithful to historical fact. It is a graphic and thrilling narrative of romantic events.

**262. Other Works and Honors.** — Of his other Spanish works — "The Alhambra," "Legends of the Conquest of Spain," and "Mahomet and his Successors" — it is not necessary to speak. The subjects were all eminently congenial to his mind, and susceptible of his peculiar felicity of treatment. They sustained, if they did not add to, his growing fame. Literary honors were bestowed upon him. In 1830 the Royal Society of Literature in England awarded him a gold medal; and the year following the University of Oxford conferred upon him the degree of LL.D., — a title which his modesty never permitted him to use.

**263. Secretary of Legation.** — In 1829 Irving left Spain, and served for some time as Secretary of Legation at the Court of St. James. It was a period of great social and political unrest in England and France; and, for once in his life, he took a keen

interest in current events. He visited again many points of interest in England, and had the melancholy pleasure of seeing Scott in the sad eclipse of his powers.

**264. Return to America.** — In 1832, after an absence of seventeen years, he returned to his native land, and was accorded an enthusiastic welcome as its most distinguished representative in the world of letters. Nothing but his modest shrinking from publicity prevented a round of banquets in various cities. He



IRVING'S HOME, SUNNYSIDE

was delighted to note the great progress the nation had made during his absence. To acquaint himself more fully with its resources and development, he visited different parts of the country. His "Tour on the Prairies" embodies the observations and experiences of a trip to the region beyond the Mississippi, still the haunt of the buffalo and wild Indian.

**265. Sunnyside.** — With his simple and quiet tastes, Irving now longed for a home. Accordingly he purchased a little farm at a lovely spot on the Hudson, not far from the Sleepy Hollow he had immortalized. The house was remodelled, and the grounds

arranged in exquisite taste. To this charming residence he gave the name of Sunnyside. He received under his roof a number of near relatives, including a half dozen nieces, for whom he showed an affection as tender as it was admirable. Henceforth Sunnyside became to him the dearest spot on earth; he always left it with reluctance, and returned to it with eagerness. It was here that the greater part of his life was spent after his return to America. Few persons have been happier in their surroundings.

**266. Public Office Declined.** — The ten years succeeding his return to America were, upon the whole, delightful to him. He had seen enough of the world to relish the quiet of his picturesque home. He was honored as the leading American writer of his day. But more than that, he was esteemed for his excellence of character. It is hardly too much to say that he was the most prominent private citizen of the republic. Almost any political position to which he might have aspired was within his reach. But a public career was not to his taste. He declined to be a candidate for mayor of New York — which cost perhaps no great struggle. But a seat in Mr. Van Buren's cabinet as Secretary of the Navy was likewise declined. The life of a government officer in Washington possessed no attractions for him, and his sensitive nature shrank from the personal attacks to which prominent officials are exposed.

**267. Literary Labors.** — During the ten years under consideration, he was busy with his pen. He became a regular contributor to the *Knickerbocker Magazine* at a salary of two thousand dollars a year. In addition to the "Tour on the Prairies" already mentioned, he wrote "Abbotsford" and "Newstead Abbey" — admirable sketches of the homes of Scott and Byron. "Captain Bonneville" is a story of adventure in the far West. It describes in a very vivid way the wild, daring, reckless life of the hunter, trapper, and explorer. Among the literary schemes of this period must be mentioned his contemplated history of the conquest of Mexico. It was a theme well suited to his talents, and his previous work on Spanish subjects fitted him for the task.

He had collected a large amount of material, and composed the first chapter; but learning that Mr. Prescott desired to treat the subject, Irving magnanimously abandoned it. It was a great personal sacrifice. "I was dismounted from my *cheval de bataille*," he wrote years afterwards, "and have never been completely mounted since." In spite of Mr. Prescott's splendid work, we cannot help regretting that Irving gave up his cherished theme.

**268. Minister to Spain.** — In 1842 the quiet but busy literary life of Irving was interrupted by his appointment as minister to Spain. The nomination was suggested by Webster. In the Senate, Clay, who was opposing nearly all of the President's appointments, exclaimed, "Ah, this is a nomination that everybody will concur in!" The appointment was confirmed almost by acclamation. The appointment was a surprise to Irving; and, while he could not be insensible to the honor, its acceptance cost him pain. It necessitated a protracted absence from his beloved Sunnyside. "It is hard, — very hard," he was heard murmuring to himself; "yet I must try to bear it."

**269. Diplomatic Career.** — There is not space to follow him in his diplomatic career. It was a turbulent period in Spain; but he discharged the somewhat difficult duties of his post, not only with fidelity, but also with ability. But the splendors of court life had lost their charm for him. From the pomp of the Spanish capital his heart fondly turned to his home on the Hudson. "I long to be once more back at dear little Sunnyside," he wrote in 1845, "while I have yet strength and good spirits to enjoy the simple pleasures of the country, and to rally a happy family group once more about me." He gave up his mission in 1846.

**270. "Life of Goldsmith."** — The year of his return to America he published his "Life of Goldsmith," which is one of the most charming biographies ever written. There was not a little in common between Irving and Goldsmith. They had alike a tender and indulgent regard for the world; they had felt the same roving disposition; they possessed a similar mastery of exquisite English. "Perhaps it is significant of a deeper unity

in character," to borrow a delightful touch from Charles Dudley Warner, "that both, at times, fancied they could please an intolerant world by attempting to play the flute." Irving's treatment of Goldsmith is exquisitely sympathetic. "Mahomet and his Successors" appeared in 1849, and is a popular rather than a profound treatise. Irving's greatest work in the department of history was his "Life of Washington." The last volume was published in 1859, shortly before his death. It was the work of his ripe old age, and is a masterpiece of biography. It is clear in its arrangement, admirable in its proportion, impartial in its judgments, and finished in its style.

**271. Closing Scenes.** — The closing years of his life were serene and happy. He held a high place in the affection of his countrymen. He was surrounded by the quiet domestic joys that he loved so well. His labors on the life of the great hero whose name he had received three quarters of a century before were thoroughly congenial. Thus he lived on, retaining his kindly feeling for the world, till the death summons suddenly came, Nov. 28, 1859. Although he had reached an age beyond the usual period allotted to man, the tidings of his death were received throughout the country with profound sorrow. But grief was deepest among those who had known him most intimately. His unpretending neighbors and the little children wept around his grave.

**272. Characterization.** — What Irving was, has been indicated in some measure in the course of this sketch. He had a large, generous nature, the kindness of which is everywhere apparent. Through his wide reading and extensive travels, he acquired a culture of great breadth. He was at home with the explorer on the prairie or with the sovereign in his court. The gentle elements predominated in his character; he was not inclined to make war upon mankind, and with savage zeal to denounce their wickedness and shams. He was an observer of humanity rather than a reformer; and he reported what he saw with all the grace of a rich imagination and delicate humor. He was always loyal to truth

and right. But in dealing with human frailty, his severest weapon was kindly satire. He evoked a smile at the foibles and eccentricities of men. His heart was of womanly tenderness; and for the sorrows and misfortunes of men he had tears of sympathy. The death of such a man is a loss, not only to literature, but, what is more, to humanity itself.

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

*Annotated selections from "The Sketch-Book," "Rip Van Winkle," and "The Broken Heart," will be found on pages 439-463.*

In addition the student should read "The Legend of Sleepy Hollow," "Westminster Abbey," and "Stratford-on-Avon" from "The Sketch-Book"; "The Poor Devil Author" and "The Devil and Tom Walker" from "The Tales of a Traveller"; "Dolph Heyleger" and "The Stout Gentleman" from "Bracebridge Hall," and "Abbotsford." "The Life of Goldsmith" is admirable.

Charles Dudley Warner's "Washington Irving" (American Men of Letters Series); Pierre M. Irving's "Life and Letters of Washington Irving." For critical estimates consult the general bibliography and Poole's "Index."

## *JAMES FENIMORE COOPER*



*JAMES FENIMORE COOPER*

### **273. A National Writer.**

— Cooper deserves the honor of being the most national of our writers. He was less influenced by foreign models and foreign subjects than any of his great contemporaries. The works upon which his fame chiefly rests are thoroughly American. He was the first fully to grasp and treat the stores of materials to be found in the natural scenery, early history, and pioneer life of this Republic. He was at home alike on land and sea; and in his narrations he spoke from

the fulness of his own observation and experience, and gave us pictures of those early days which will grow in interest as they are removed farther from us by the lapse of time. He opened a new vein of thought. It was largely owing to this freshness of subject and treatment that his works attained an extraordinary popularity, not alone in this country, but also in Europe. They came as a revelation to the Old World, which had grown tired of well-worn themes. They were eagerly seized upon, and translated into nearly every European tongue, and even into some of the languages of the Orient. No other American writer has been so extensively read.

**274. Childhood Surroundings.** — James Fenimore Cooper was born at Burlington, N. J., Sept. 15, 1789, the eleventh of twelve children. His father was of Quaker and his mother of Swedish descent. When he was thirteen months old, the family moved to Cooperstown, on the southeastern shore of Otsego Lake, in the central part of New York. In this picturesque region, diversified with mountains, lakes, and woods, the childhood of Cooper was passed. It was at that time on the borders of civilization, and the little village presented a striking mixture of nationalities and occupations. Along with German, French, and Irish adventurers were found the backwoodsman, the hunter, and the half-civilized Indian. The deep impression made upon young Cooper's mind by the wild scenery and unsettled life about him is shown in the fact that he located three of his novels in this region.

**275. School and College.** — Cooper's education presents the melancholy story so often met with in the lives of literary men. He took but little interest in his studies. His first instruction was received in the academy at Cooperstown where, in spite of its pretentious name, the teaching was crude. He afterwards studied in Albany as a private pupil under an Episcopal rector. At the age of thirteen, Cooper entered the Freshman class at Yale, the youngest student but one in the college. According to his own confession, he played all the first year, and there is nothing to show that he did better afterwards. In place of digging at his Latin and Greek, he delighted in taking long walks about the wooded hills and beautiful bay of New Haven. Nature was more to him than books, a preference that college faculties are generally slow to appreciate. At last in his third year he engaged in some mischief that led to his dismissal from the college. This failure in his education was peculiarly unfortunate. His lack of a refined and scholarly taste has tolerated in his works a crudeness of form that largely detracts from their excellence.

**276. Naval Career.** — It was now decided that Cooper should enter the navy. The influence of his father, who was a prominent Federalist and had been for several years a member of

Congress, promised a speedy advancement. He began his apprenticeship (there was no naval academy then) in the merchant marine, and served a year before the mast. He entered the navy as midshipman in January, 1808. He was stationed for a time on Lake Ontario, where he imbibed the impressions afterwards embodied in the graphic descriptions of "The Pathfinder." In 1809 he was transferred to the *Wasp*, then under the command of Lawrence, a hero to whom he was warmly attached. The details of his naval career are scanty. Though it does not appear that he was engaged in any thrilling events, he accumulated a large



COOPER'S HOME, NEAR OTSEGO LAKE, COOPERSTOWN, NEW YORK

store of incident, and acquired a technical knowledge, which were afterwards turned to good account in his admirable sea stories.

**277. Domestic Life.** — His naval career was cut short by his falling in love. In January, 1811, he married a Miss DeLancey, a lady of Huguenot family, and five months later he tendered his resignation in the navy. He made no unworthy choice, and his domestic life appears to have been singularly happy. With a sufficiently strong, not to say obstinate, will, and with high notions of masculine prerogative in the family, he was still largely controlled by the delicate tact of his wife, who always retained a strong hold upon his large and tender heart. For some time after

his marriage he was unsettled. He first resided in Westchester County, New York; then he moved to Cooperstown, where he spent the next three years; afterwards he returned to Westchester, and occupied a house that commanded a view of Long Island Sound. Up to this time his chief occupation had been farming; and he had shown no sign whatever either of an inclination or of an ability to write.

**278. First Novel.** — His entrance upon a literary career appears to have been the merest accident. He was one day reading to his wife a novel descriptive of English society. It did not please him; and at last, laying it down with some impatience, he exclaimed: "I believe I could write a better story myself." Challenged to make good his boast, he at once set himself to the task. It did not occur to him to treat an American theme with which he was familiar. America had achieved her political but not her intellectual independence of the mother country. He accordingly produced a novel of high life in England, which, under the title of "Precaution," was published in 1820. It did not occur to him as an obstacle that he knew nothing about English life. The day of an exacting realism had not yet come, and men were still permitted to write of things that they knew nothing about. Of course the work was a failure; but it came so near being a success that Cooper was encouraged to try his hand again.

**279. "The Spy."** — This time he chose an American subject, and without knowing it fell into the vocation for which his talents eminently fitted him. Years before, at the house of John Jay, he had heard the story of a Revolutionary spy that deeply impressed him. This story he made the basis of his novel; and the scene he laid in Westchester, with which his long residence had made him familiar, and which had been a battle-ground for the British and American armies. He had but little expectation of its favorable reception. He doubted whether his countrymen would read a book that treated of familiar scenes and interests. The result undid him, and fixed him in the career to which he was to give the rest of his life.

"The Spy" appeared at the close of 1821, and in a short time met with a sale that was pronounced unprecedented in the annals of American literature. It was received with the enthusiasm that greeted the successive Waverley novels in England. The transatlantic verdict, which was awaited with something of servile trepidation, confirmed the American judgment. "Genius in America," said Blackwood, "must keep to America to achieve any great work. Cooper has done so, and taken his place among the most powerful of the imaginative spirits of the age." "The Spy" was soon translated into several European languages; and, in short, it made Cooper's reputation at home and abroad.

**280. "The Pioneers."** — His next work was "The Pioneers," which was published in 1823. The scene is laid at the author's early home on Otsego Lake, and describes not only the natural scenery, but also the types of character and modes of living with which he became familiar in childhood. In producing this work he drew less upon his imagination than upon his memory. As we read his life, it is not difficult to discover the originals of some of his leading portraits. The book was written, as he has told us, exclusively to please himself; and he has dwelt upon separate scenes and incidents with such fondness as seriously to retard the story. It was the first of the now famous "Leatherstocking Tales," though hardly the best of them. It was awaited by the public with impatience; and by noon, the day of its appearance, no fewer than three thousand five hundred copies were sold in New York.

**281. A Tale of the Sea.** — Before "The Pioneers" was published he was already at work upon a new novel, in which he entered an untried field. Like his first work, it sprang from the impulse of a moment. The author of "Waverley" had recently published "The Pirate," which came under discussion at a dinner-party in Cooper's presence. The nautical passages were greatly admired, and were cited as a proof that Scott, the lawyer and poet, could not have written it. Cooper dissented from this judgment,

and boldly challenged the seamanship of the work. In spite of the nautical knowledge it displayed, it still betrayed to his mind the hand of a landsman. "The result of this conversation," to quote his own words, "was a sudden determination to produce a work which, if it had no other merit, might present truer pictures of the ocean and ships than any that are to be found in 'The Pirate.'" Returning home, with the plan of the work already shaping itself in his mind, he said to his wife: "I must write one more book — a sea-tale — to show what can be done in that way by a sailor."

**282. "The Pilot."** — Though he was discouraged in the undertaking by his friends, Cooper wisely followed the leading of his genius. "The Pilot" takes high rank as a tale of the sea. The plot was suggested by the cruise of Paul Jones in the *Ranger*, who, without being named, occupies the foremost place in the story. The work appeared in 1824, and at once attained a wide popularity. Its descriptions of storm, battle, and shipwreck are exceedingly vivid. It contains the character of Long Tom Coffin, who, like Natty Bumppo, or Leatherstocking, may be regarded as a permanent contribution to literature. It was at once translated into French, German, and Italian, and was scarcely less popular in Europe than in America.

**283. "The Last of the Mohicans."** — In 1826 appeared "The Last of the Mohicans," which occupies a high rank — some think the highest rank — of all Cooper's works. It belongs to the "Leatherstocking Tales." The interest never abates from beginning to end. "It is indeed an open question," says an admirable critic and biographer,<sup>1</sup> "whether a higher art would not have given more breathing-places in this exciting tale, in which the mind is hurried without pause from sensation to sensation." It is needless to say that its success was instantaneous and prodigious. The novelty of its scenes and characters, as well as its powerful narrative, gave it extraordinary popularity abroad. There can

<sup>1</sup> Lounsbury, James Fenimore Cooper, p. 53.

be no doubt that he idealized the Indian character. But however different from the Indians of actual life, the creations of Cooper have appealed strongly to the imaginations of men.

**284. A New York Club.** — Cooper was now living in the city of New York, whither he had moved in 1822. The income from his works had placed him in easy circumstances. His literary reputation, unequalled by any other American, with the possible exception of Irving, made him a prominent figure in the social life of the city. He founded a club which included in its membership Chancellor Kent, Verplanck the editor of Shakespeare, Jarvis the painter, Durand the engraver, Wiley the publisher, Morse the inventor of the electric telegraph, Halleck and Bryant the poets. He was a regular attendant at the weekly meetings of the club, of which he was the life and soul.

**285. A Sojourn in Europe.** — The year “The Last of the Mohicans” was published, Cooper carried out a long cherished purpose to visit Europe, where he spent the next seven years. He served as consul at Lyons for nearly three years. He made a trip through Switzerland, and visited in succession Naples, Rome, Venice, Munich, and Dresden; but most of his time was spent in Paris. He was not a man to enjoy being lionized; but after his presence in the French capital became known he could not escape from receiving a full share of attention. Scott met him at an evening reception, and noted in his diary: “Cooper was there, so the Scotch and American lions took the field together.”

**286. Literary Activity and Success.** — But Cooper’s time abroad was not exclusively spent in the enjoyment of natural scenery, art treasures, and refined society. His literary productivity continued without serious abatement. Among the numerous works produced during his seven years’ residence abroad there are two that deserve particular mention. “The Prairie” was added to the Leatherstocking series, and “The Red Rover” to his sea-tales. Both occupy a high place among his works. His popularity in Europe had now reached a high point. Five

editions of "The Prairie" were arranged to appear at the same time,—two in Paris, one in London, one in Berlin, and one in Philadelphia. Outside of England he was, perhaps, read more extensively than Scott. "In every city of Europe that I visited," wrote the inventor of the electric telegraph, "the works of Cooper were conspicuously placed in the windows of every bookshop. They are published, as soon as he produces them, in thirty-four different places in Europe. They have been seen by American travellers in the languages of Turkey and Persia, in Constantinople, in Egypt, at Jerusalem, at Ispahan."

**287. Patriotic Spirit.**—With the year 1830 closed the happiest and most successful period of Cooper's literary career. After that date he became involved in controversies abroad and at home that cost him heavily in purse and in popularity. He was intensely American in sentiment—proud of the institutions, the material prosperity, and the rapidly growing power of his country. With prophetic foresight he confidently predicted the growth that has since been realized. With his honest, positive, and pugnacious nature, he was not a man to conceal his opinions. He undertook to enlighten the ignorance and to correct the misrepresentations of his country prevalent abroad. He wrote letters, pamphlets, and books in defence of America. Three of his novels written abroad—"The Bravo," "The Heidenmauer," and "The Headsman"—were designed to exalt republican institutions, and to apply American principles to European conditions. The effect of all this can be easily imagined. The information he volunteered to Europe, and especially to England, was received ungraciously. His independent and aggressive spirit provoked opposition; his works were harshly criticised, and he himself was subject to misrepresentation and detraction.

**288. Loss of Popularity.**—In 1833 Cooper returned to America. After a brief sojourn in New York, he purchased his father's old estate at Cooperstown, and made that place his residence for the rest of his life. His childhood recollections were dear to him; and in the midst of the lovely scenery about Otsego Lake he found

a grateful repose for the prosecution of his literary work. But his life was not destined to flow on undisturbed. His long residence abroad, in contact with the repose and culture of the Old World, had wrought greater changes in him than he was conscious of. He no longer found himself in sympathy with the eager, bustling, restless life of America. He failed to appreciate the sublimity of the conflict which was rapidly subduing a magnificent continent. Without prudence in concealing his sentiments, he proceeded to tell his countrymen what he thought of them. Their restless energy he characterized as sordid greed for gold. He found fault with what he considered their lack of taste, their coarseness of manners, and their provincial narrowness. With inconsiderate valor he rushed into newspaper controversies. In short, while cherishing a deep affection for his country, he exhausted almost every means for achieving a widespread unpopularity. It speedily came; and no other American writer was ever so generally and so venomously assailed.

**289. Suits for Libel.** — But meekness was no part of Cooper's character. He was unwilling to rest under reckless and malicious misrepresentation. Accordingly he instituted many suits for libel against prominent papers in New York, including the *Albany Evening Journal*, edited by Thurlow Weed, and *The Tribune*, edited by Horace Greeley. With the aid of his nephew, who was a lawyer, Cooper conducted the prosecutions himself with relentless energy, and showed himself as effective in an oral address before a jury as in his writings before the public. It is remarkable that in every instance in which he pleaded his own cause he got a verdict awarding him damages.

**290. History of the Navy.** — In 1839 he published his "History of the United States Navy." It was a subject in which he had long been interested, and for which he possessed special fitness. Apart from his naval experience and his skill as a narrator, he possessed the sterling integrity of character that rendered him painstaking and impartial. For the period it covers, the history is not likely to be superseded. But it was impossible that such a

work should please everybody. It gave offence in England by setting forth too prominently her numerous defeats upon the sea. It was accordingly attacked with great vigor in some of the leading British reviews. In this country its judicial tone failed to satisfy the partisans of some of our naval heroes. The newspapers were generally unfriendly, and the work was criticised with great injustice. But malicious misrepresentation Cooper answered, as usual, with a suit for libel, in which he was almost invariably successful. At last he fairly became a terror to editors — a class not easily frightened.

**291. The Leatherstocking Series.** — The period between 1840 and 1850 was one of great literary activity. The motives inspiring this activity were not such, in part at least, as to promise the best results for art. Cooper had lost in speculation, and found it necessary to increase his resources. He had a good many things to say to the American public in his character as censor. The didactic element became more prominent in his works. As a result, most of the seventeen novels produced in the decade referred to add but little to his fame. To this statement, however, there are several noteworthy exceptions. In 1840 appeared "The Pathfinder," and the following year "The Deerslayer," — two works that rank with the best of his productions. "The Deerslayer" completed the Leatherstocking series. Following the life of Natty Bumppo, and not the order of their composition, this series is as follows: "The Deerslayer," in which Leatherstocking appears in his youth; "The Last of the Mohicans" and "The Pathfinder," in which we see him in the maturity of his powers; "The Pioneers" and "The Prairie," in which are portrayed his old age and death. Cooper counted these works as his best. "If anything from the pen of the writer of these romances," he said in his old age, "is at all to outlive himself, it is unquestionably the series of the 'Leatherstocking Tales.' To say this is not to predict a very lasting reputation for the series itself, but simply to express the belief that it will outlast any or all of the works from the same hand." Among the other works of this

period, which can only be named, are "The Two Admirals," "Wing-and-Wing," "Wyandotte," "Afloat and Ashore," "The Redskins," and "The Ways of the Hour."

**292. Last Years.** — The closing years of Cooper's life were comparatively serene. The storm of criticism and detraction, against which he had long contended, had in large measure abated. He was growing again in favor with his countrymen; and his own feelings, as opposition relaxed, subsided into a calmer and kindlier mood. At last disease laid its wasting hand upon his strong frame. It turned into an incurable dropsy. When the physician told him there was no longer any hope, he received the announcement with the manly courage that had characterized him all through life. He gave up the literary projects he was fondly cherishing, and spent his last days in the cheerful resignation of Christian faith. The end came Sept. 14, 1851, on the eve of his sixty-second birthday.

**293. Personal Character.** — There is no more heroic character in the history of our literature. Cooper was cast in a large and rugged mould. He had deep convictions and a strong will; and hence he was often impatient of opposition, obstinate in his opinions, and brusque in his manners. He never acquired, and perhaps never cared to acquire, a polished deference to the views of others. He did not usually make a favorable impression on first acquaintance. But these defects were only on the surface. He was frank, honest, fearless, large-hearted; and among those who knew him best, he inspired a deep and loyal affection. He could not be tempted to sacrifice principle, to scheme for reputation, to stoop to anything mean and low.

**294. The American Scott.** — Cooper has often been called "The American Scott"; and the title, though displeasing to him, is not wholly undeserved. He has described the scenery and manners of his native country with a passion and power scarcely inferior to what is found in the romances of the great Scotchman. He has thrown over the pioneer life of America something of the same glamour with which "the Wizard of the

North " has invested the mediæval life of Europe. There are points of striking resemblance in the characters of these two great writers. They belonged to the same type of strong manhood. They were alike chivalrous and patriotic. With abounding physical strength, they rejoiced in the companionship of the woods and mountains. Their hearts were open to the charms of natural scenery. They were both, to borrow a term from mental science, *objective* rather than *subjective* in their habits of thought; and thus it happens that instead of profound psychological studies they have given us glowing descriptions and thrilling narratives.

**295. Literary Shortcomings.** — Cooper's works do not exhibit a high degree of literary art. His novels, like those of Scott, are characterized by largeness rather than by delicacy. He painted on a large canvas with a heavy brush. He worked with great rapidity; and as a natural consequence we miss all refinement of style. He is often slovenly, and sometimes incorrect. The conversations, which he introduces freely, are seldom natural, often bombastic, and generally tiresome. His plots are usually defective. His novels are made up of narratives more or less closely connected, but not forming necessary parts in the development of a dramatic story. With some notable exceptions, his characters are rather wooden, and move very much like automations. They are continually doing things without any apparent or sufficient reason. His women belong to the type which is made up, to use his own phrase, "of religion and female decorum." They are insipid, helpless, vague — so limited by a narrow and conventional decorum as to be wholly uninteresting. They rarely say anything or do anything that shows the true womanly spirit of devotion, helpfulness, and self-sacrifice.

**296. Graphic Description.** — These are faults that are palpable and acknowledged. What, then, are the excellences which, triumphing over these serious drawbacks, still render Cooper one of the most popular of authors? First, he had the power of graphic description. Without catching the spiritual significance of nature, he yet presented its various forms with extraordinary

vividness. "If Cooper," said Balzac, "had succeeded in the painting of character to the same extent that he did in the painting of the phenomena of nature, he would have uttered the last word of our art."

**297. Vivid Narration.** — But above this and above every other quality is Cooper's power as a narrator. It is here that his genius manifests itself in its full power. His best novels are made up of a succession of interesting or exciting events, which he narrates with supreme art. We realize every detail, and often follow the story with breathless interest. Cooper is an author, not for literary critics, but for general readers. In the words of Bryant, "he wrote for mankind at large; hence it is that he has earned a fame wider than any author of modern times. The creations of his genius shall survive through centuries to come, and perish only with our language."

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

*A brief annotated selection, "Escape from a Panther," is given on pages 464-471.*

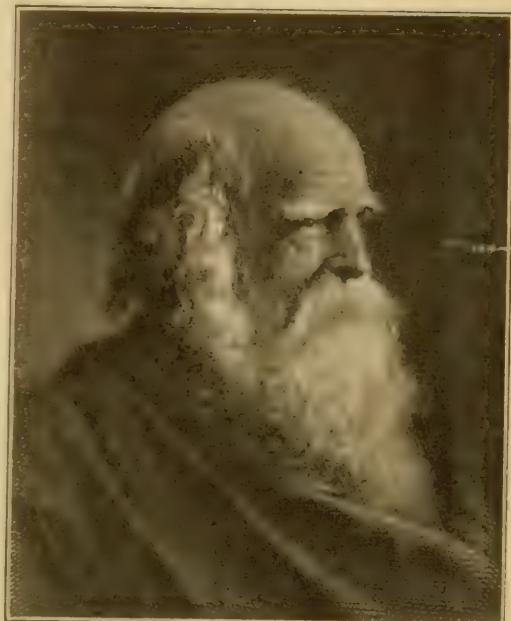
The student should read "The Pilot" and "The Last of the Mohicans," to which may be added "The Spy," "The Deerslayer," and "The Pioneers."

T. R. Lounsbury's "James Fenimore Cooper" (American Men of Letters Series); J. G. Wilson's "Bryant and his Friends." For critical estimates see the general bibliography and Poole's "Index." Also W. C. Bryant's "Discourse on Cooper," and Mark Twain's "Fenimore Cooper's Literary Offences" in "How to Tell a Story" — a fine bit of humorously exaggerated criticism.

## *WILLIAM CULLEN BRYANT*

**298. Genius and Character.** — Great genius is not always associated with exalted character. There is much in the life of Pope, of Burns, and of Byron that we cannot approve of. So far as their works reflect their moral obliquities, we are forced to make abatements in our praise. It is greatly to the credit of American Literature that its leading representatives have been men of excellent character. Dissolute genius has not flourished on our soil. At the funeral of Bryant, it was truthfully said, "It is the glory of this man that his character outshone even his great talent and his large fame." In a poem "To Bryant on his Birthday," Whittier beautifully said:—

"We praise not now the poet's art,  
The rounded beauty of his song;  
Who weighs him from his life apart  
Must do his nobler nature wrong."



*WILLIAM CULLEN BRYANT*

**299. Moral Element in Literature.** — The moral element in literature is of the highest importance. It is a French maxim often disregarded in France as elsewhere, that "Nothing is beau-

tiful but truth.”<sup>1</sup> It is certain that only truth is enduring. Whatever is false is sure, sooner or later, to pass away. Bryant gave beautiful expression to the same idea in the oft-quoted lines from his poem, “The Battle-Field” : —

“Truth crushed to earth, shall rise again;  
Th’ eternal years of God are hers;  
But Error, wounded, writhes with pain,  
And dies among his worshippers.”

**300. Truth in his Work.** — This truth is often forgotten or neglected by our men of letters. Whatever is false in any way, whether in fact, principle, sentiment, taste, cannot be permanent. This is the secret of the wrecks that strew the fields of literature. The enduring works of literature — those that men are unwilling to let die — are helpful to humanity. No art, however exquisite, can win lasting currency for error. Judged by this principle, the works of Bryant are enduring. They are not only admirable in literary art, but they are true in thought, sentiment, and taste. It may be said of him, as was said of James Thomson, his works contain —

“No line which, dying, he could wish to blot.”

**301. Ancestry.** — William Cullen Bryant was born at Cummington, Mass., Nov. 3, 1794. He came of sound Puritan stock, counting among his ancestors the Priscilla and John Alden immortalized by another descendant and poet. His father was a kind, cultured, and refined physician, who took more than ordinary interest in the training of his gifted son. In his “Hymn to Death,” the composition of which was interrupted by the decease of his father, the poet pays him a noble tribute: —

“This faltering verse, which thou  
Shalt not, as wont, o’erlook, is all I have  
To offer at thy grave — this — and the hope  
To copy thy example, and to leave  
A name of which the wretched shall not think

<sup>1</sup> *Rien n'est beau que le vrai.*

As of an enemy's, whom they forgive  
As all forgive the dead. Rest, therefore, thou  
Whose early guidance trained my infant steps —  
Rest, in the bosom of God, till the brief sleep  
Of death is over, and a happier life  
Shall dawn to waken thine insensible dust."

**302. Early Precocity.** — Bryant was a child of extraordinary precocity. At the age of sixteen months he knew all the letters of the alphabet. In the district school he distinguished himself as an almost infallible speller. He was prepared for college by the Rev. Moses Hallock of Plainfield. Of his Greek studies the poet says, "I began with the Greek alphabet, passed to the declensions and conjugations, which I committed to memory, and was put into the Gospel of St. John. In two calendar months from the time of beginning with the powers of the Greek alphabet, I had read every book in the New Testament." In October, 1810, when in his sixteenth year, he entered the Sophomore class at Williams College, where he spent only one session. Though a diligent student, he did not find college life, owing to its meagre comforts, entirely to his taste.

**303. A Youthful Satire.** — Bryant showed a rhyming propensity at an early age. He eagerly devoured whatever poetry fell into his hands, and early cherished the ambition to become a poet. Among his early efforts was a political satire against Jefferson and his party, inspired by the Embargo Act, a measure that proved disastrous to many private interests in New England, and excited strong feeling against the President. Bryant's father was a prominent Federalist; and the young poet, not unnaturally, became a violent partisan. In "The Embargo," written when he was thirteen, he rather uncourteously demanded Jefferson's resignation: —

"Go, wretch, resign the presidential chair,  
Disclose thy secret measures, foul or fair.  
Go search with curious eye for horned frogs  
'Mid the wild wastes of Louisiana bogs."

This satire, which had quite a success at the time, the poet afterwards would have gladly forgotten; but, when he subsequently became a Democratic editor, the opposing press took care to see that he was occasionally reminded of it.

**304. The Study of Law.** — Having failed for lack of means in completing his college course, he decided to study law, and entered the office of Judge Howe at Worthington. He afterwards completed his legal studies under William Baylies at West Bridge-water. His heart was never fully in the study of law, and his retiring disposition did not promise a very brilliant career at the bar. Nevertheless, while in some measure indulging his fondness for poetry, he gave himself with commendable diligence to Black-stone and Coke. In a poetical effusion of the time, he recorded his experience as follows: —

“O'er Coke's black letter,  
Trimming the lamp at eve, 'tis mine to pore,  
Well pleased to see the venerable sage  
Unlock his treasured wealth of legal lore;  
And I that loved to trace the woods before,  
And climb the hills, a playmate of the breeze,  
Have vowed to tune the rural lay no more,  
Have bid my useless classics sleep at ease,  
And left the race of bards to scribble, starve, and freeze.”

**305. Legal Career.** — He was admitted to the bar in 1815, and began practice at Plainfield; but, finding the outlook unpromising, he removed at the end of a year to Great Barrington. He met with a fair degree of success, but was deeply chagrined to find that law is not always synonymous with justice. He was far too conscientious to be careless and negligent; but, as we learn from a letter written at this period, his inclination was toward literature. “You ask,” he writes to Mr. Baylies, his old teacher and friend, “whether I am pleased with my profession. Alas, sir, the muse was my first love; and the remains of that passion, which is not cooled out nor chilled into extinc-

tion, will always, I fear, cause me to look coldly on the severe beauties of Themis. Yet I tame myself to its labors as well as I can, and have endeavored to discharge with punctuality and attention such of the duties of my profession as I am capable of performing."

**306. Love of Nature.** — As was to be expected, nature and poetry were his refuge and comfort in the midst of the uncongenialities of his profession. His love of nature was scarcely less strong than that of Wordsworth. His portrayal of natural beauty is a prominent characteristic of his poetry. "I was always," he says, "from my earliest years, a delighted observer of external nature,— the splendors of a winter daybreak over the wide wastes of snow seen from our windows, the glories of the autumnal woods, the gloomy approaches of a thunderstorm, and its departure amid sunshine and rainbows, the return of the spring with its flowers, and the first snowfall of winter. The poets fostered this taste in me; and though at that time I rarely heard such things spoken of, it was none the less cherished in my secret mind." In his poem, "Green River," he reveals the state of his mind at this period, though in a manner not very complimentary to his clients and associates at the bar:—

"Though forced to drudge for the dregs of men,  
And scrawl strange words with the barbarous pen,  
And mingle among the jostling crowd  
Where the sons of strife are subtle and loud,  
I often come to this quiet place  
To breathe the airs that ruffle thy face,  
And gaze upon thee in silent dream;  
For in thy lonely and lovely stream  
An image of that calm life appears  
That won my heart in my greener years."

**307. "Thanatopsis."** — The time had now come for a more general recognition of Bryant's poetic gifts. Genius is apt to be recognized sooner or later. In 1817 his father sent to the

*North American Review* a copy of verses which the poet had written in his eighteenth year and laid away in his desk. "Ah, Phillips," said the sceptical Dana to his associate editor on hearing the verses, "you have been imposed upon. No one on this side of the Atlantic is capable of writing such verse." The poem in question was "*Thanatopsis*," the finest poem that had yet been produced in America, and one of the most remarkable pieces ever written at so early an age. "There was no mistaking the quality of these verses," says a biographer. "The stamp of genius was upon every line. No such verses had been made in America before. They soon found their way into the school-books of the country. They were quoted from the pulpit and upon the hustings. Their gifted author had a national fame before he had a vote, and in due time '*Thanatopsis*' took the place which it still retains among the masterpieces of English didactic poetry."

**308. "To a Waterfowl."** — Another of Bryant's most exquisite poems belongs to this period. As he was on his way to Plainfield in December, 1815, to see what inducements it offered for the practice of his profession, he watched a solitary bird pursuing its course southward through the roseate evening sky. He was deeply impressed both by the beauty of the scene and by the lesson it brought to him in an uncertainty and discouragement. That night he wrote "*To a Waterfowl*," which some persons have thought the gem of all his works: —

"Whither, 'midst falling dew,  
While glow the heavens with the last steps of day,  
Far, through their rosy depths, dost thou pursue  
Thy solitary way?"

There is a Power whose care  
Teaches thy way along that pathless coast, —  
The desert and illimitable air, —  
Lone wandering, but not lost.

He who, from zone to zone,  
 Guides through the boundless sky thy certain flight,  
 In the long way that I must tread alone,  
 Will lead my steps aright."

**309. New Source of Inspiration.** — At Great Barrington, Bryant met Miss Frances Fairchild, whose native goodness, frank and affectionate disposition, and excellent understanding, captivated his heart. Of course she became the inspiration of a good many poems, only one of which, however, the poet has cared to preserve: —

"Oh, fairest of the rural maids !  
 Thy birth was in the forest shades ;  
 Green boughs, and glimpses of the sky,  
 Were all that met thine infant eye."

**310. Wedded Happiness.** — They were married in 1821, and for nearly half a century she was "the good angel of his life." The union was a singularly happy one. The poet's tender attachment is exhibited in several admirable poems. In "The Future Life" he asks the question so natural to deathless love: —

"How shall I know thee in the sphere which keeps  
 The disembodied spirits of the dead,  
 When all of thee that time could wither sleeps  
 And perishes among the dust we tread?"

In "The Life that Is" the poet celebrates the recovery of his wife from a serious illness in Italy in 1858: —

"Twice wert thou given me; once in thy fair prime,  
 Fresh from the fields of youth, when first we met,  
 And all the blossoms of that hopeful time  
 Clustered and glowed where'er thy steps were set.

"And now, in thy ripe autumn, once again  
 Given back to fervent prayers and yearnings strong,  
 From the drear realm of sickness and of pain,  
 Where we had watched, and feared, and trembled long."

**311. A Helpmeet.** — She was indeed a helpmeet for him. "I never wrote a poem," he said, "that I did not repeat to her, and take her judgment upon it. I found its success with the public precisely in proportion to the impression it made upon her. She loved my verses and judged them kindly, but did not like them all equally well." His poem "October, 1866," written upon the occasion of her death, is a threnody of great beauty.

**312. Dissatisfaction with Law.** — With his growing literary reputation, Bryant's dissatisfaction with his profession increased. He was for several years a regular contributor to the *United States Gazette*, published in Boston, and wrote for it some of his best-known pieces, most notable of which is "A Forest Hymn." A sonnet, which in his collected poems bears the title "Consumption," had a deep personal meaning. It was written of his sister, a young woman of rare endowments and sweet disposition, who died in her twenty-second year: —

"Death should come  
Gently to one of gentle mould like thee,  
As light winds wandering through groves of bloom  
Detach the delicate blossom from the tree."

**313. "The Death of the Flowers."** — This sister, who had been the cherished companion of his childhood, is the theme of the well-known poem "The Death of the Flowers." The calm, mild days of late autumn, the season in which she died, reminded the true-hearted poet of her loss: —

"And then I think of one who in her youthful beauty died,  
The fair, meek blossom that grew up and faded by my side;  
In the cold, moist earth we laid her when the forests cast the leaf,  
And we wept that one so lovely should have a life so brief;  
Yet not unmeet it was that one, like that young friend of ours,  
So gentle and so beautiful, should perish with the flowers."

**314. Magazine Editor.** — In 1825, through the influence of friends, Bryant moved to New York, gave up the practice of law, and fairly launched upon a literary career. He became

editor of a monthly magazine at a salary of a thousand dollars a year — about twice as much, he tells us, as he received from the practice of his profession. But the magazine did not succeed, and the poet passed through a period of uncertainty and depression. As usual, he turned his experience into verse. In "The Journey of Life," written at this time, we find the following pathetic lines: —

"Beneath the waning moon I walk at night,  
And muse on human life — for all around  
Are dim uncertain shapes that cheat the sight,  
And pitfalls lurk in shade along the ground,  
And broken gleams of brightness, here and there,  
Glance through, and leave unwarmed the deathlike air."

But amid the discouragements of this brief period he was sustained by the friendship and sympathy of Cooper, Kent, Verplanck, Morse, Halleck, and other congenial spirits.

**315. The Evening Post.** — In 1826 Bryant became connected with the *Evening Post*, to which he gave more than half a century of his life. His career as a journalist is unsurpassed in the devotion with which he gave himself to the best interests of his country and of humanity. He set before himself a high ideal of editorial responsibility and journalistic excellence. His example and influence contributed no small part to the elevation of the metropolitan press. Though his sympathies in the main were with the Democratic party, he was never a blind or unscrupulous partisan. Principle was always more to him than party. In his devotion to what he recognized as truth, he often took the unpopular side. He was independent and fearless. He developed the *Evening Post* into a great newspaper, which at last, after many laborious years, brought him an ample income.

**316. Prose Writing.** — His prose was of a high order. He wrote slowly and with great care. He was particular even to the point of fastidiousness in his diction. His style was simple, clear, direct, forcible. "It seems to me," he said, "that in style

we ought first, and above all things, to aim at clearness of expression. An obscure style is, of course, a bad style." To a young man, who had asked his opinion of a piece of writing, he wrote: "I observe that you have used several French expressions in your letter. I think if you will study the English language, that you will find it capable of expressing all the ideas you may have. I have always found it so; and in all I have written I do not recall an instance where I was tempted to use a foreign word but that, on searching, I have found a better one in my own language. Be simple, unaffected; be honest in your speaking and writing. Never use a long word where a short one will do as well. . . . The only true way to shine, even in this false world, is to be modest and unassuming. Falsehood may be a thick crust, but in the course of time Truth will find a place to break through. Elegance of language may not be in the power of us all, but simplicity and straightforwardness are." These are the principles to which his own prose writing is conformed.

**317. Harmless Idiosyncrasies.** — As an editor and a man he had some little peculiarities. His violent temper he schooled himself to keep under perfect control. Though master of a scathing satire, he never allowed himself to be betrayed into an abuse of that dangerous faculty. His editorials were invariably written on the backs of letters and other pieces of waste paper. He used a quill pen, which he mended with a knife almost as old as himself. Indeed, he looked upon old servants, whether animate or inanimate, with a childlike tenderness. It is related of him that he clung to an old blue cotton umbrella long after its day of usefulness had passed; and a suggestion to replace his well-worn knife with a new one he would have discountenanced almost as an impertinence.

**318. Wide Travels.** — Bryant was fond of travel, which brought him both mental and physical recreation. He was a hard worker; and from time to time, in his later years, relaxation became a necessity to him. Between the years 1834 and 1867 he made no fewer than six visits to the Old World. He not only visited the

leading cities of Europe, but extended his travels to Egypt and Syria. His fame preceded him, and everywhere he was received with the marks of honor that were due him as a poet and a man. In Great Britain he met most of the illustrious authors and scholars of his day, including Wordsworth, Rogers, Moore, Hallam, Whewell, and Herschel. His letters to the *Evening Post*, descriptive of his travels abroad, were afterwards collected into a volume with the title "Letters of a Traveller." His fine sense of propriety led him to exclude from his letters all reference to the distinguished people he met. In 1872 he visited Cuba and Mexico, where honors were lavishly bestowed upon him.

**319. Public Addresses.** — By reason of his distinguished position in New York, Bryant was frequently called on for public addresses. This was especially true when the life and character of some eminent person were to be commemorated. He delivered memorial addresses upon the artist Thomas Cole, upon Cooper, Irving, Halleck, and Verplanck. He was not an orator, but he delivered his carefully prepared discourses with impressive dignity. Though his treatment was always sympathetic, his estimates are singularly judicious, and his commemorative addresses are models of their kind.

**320. Poetic Vocation.** — But whatever excellence Bryant attained in other spheres, he was above all a poet. Throughout his long and laborious career, he remained true to the muse he had wooed in his youth. But he was not a prolific poet. Sometimes his prosaic duties as a journalist left but little time for poetry. There are years in which he wrote little or nothing. Besides his lack of leisure and favorable surroundings, he was too conscientious a workman to be satisfied with anything but the best he was capable of. To him poetry was a serious vocation, which called for the highest exercise of mind and soul. In "The Poet" he says: —

"Thou who wouldst wear the name  
    Of poet 'mid thy brethren of mankind,  
        And clothe in words of flame

Thoughts that shall live within the general mind,  
Deem not the framing of a deathless lay  
The pastime of a drowsy summer day.

“ But gather all thy powers,  
And wreak them on the verse that thou dost weave,  
And in thy lonely hours,  
At silent morning or at wakeful eve,  
While the warm current tingles through thy veins,  
Set forth the burning words in fluent strains.”

**321. First Volume.** — In 1831 Bryant issued a small volume containing about eighty of his poems. His simple, honest nature revolted at everything like sham. He rejected what he called “ striking novelties of expression ”; and he had no patience with the remote allusions or hazy diction, to which it is difficult to attach a definite meaning. “ To me it seems,” he said, “ that one of the most important requisites for a great poet is a luminous style. The elements of poetry lie in natural objects, in the vicissitudes of human life, in the emotions of the human heart, and the relation of man to man. He who can present them in combinations and lights which at once affect the mind with a deep sense of their truth and beauty is the poet for his own age and the ages that succeed it.” To these principles all his poetry is conformed.

**322. English Edition.** — Bryant wished to have his poems published also in England; and, though unacquainted with him at the time, he solicited Irving’s influence and aid. Irving, who had a genuine admiration for Bryant’s poetry, interested himself in the enterprise, secured a publisher, and, to give the volume some degree of prestige, he appeared as editor, and prefixed a dedicatory letter addressed to Samuel Rogers. This act of disinterested kindness was admirable, and called forth Bryant’s grateful appreciation. But it subsequently led to some correspondence not entirely free from asperity. In the poem, “ Song of Marion’s Men,” occur the lines, —

“ And the British foeman trembles  
When Marion’s name is heard.”

**323. A Misunderstanding.** — These lines were objected to by the London publisher as reflecting upon British valor, and as likely, therefore, to prejudice the British public. Accordingly Irving judged it best to change the first line into —

“The foeman trembles in his camp.”

Under the circumstances there was but little room to find fault with this alteration. But Leggett, editor of the *Plaindealer* and intimate friend of Bryant's, denounced the change as “literary pusillanimity.” This severe and unnecessary charge called forth letters from both Irving and Bryant; but the ill-feeling engendered at the moment proved only a ripple on the surface of their profound appreciation of each other's ability and character.

**324. Distinctive Qualities.** — Bryant's poetry has a quality of its own, as distinct and recognizable as that of Corot's paintings. Beyond all other verse produced in America, it has what may be called a classic quality. It is clear, calm, elevated, strong. Many of his poems, in their finished form and chastened self-restraint, resemble Greek statuary. His poetry is pervaded by a reflective, ethical tone. The objects of nature, which he dwells on with untiring fondness, convey to his mind some beautiful lesson of hope, comfort, courage. He looks, for instance, upon the North Star, and in its beams he beholds —

“A beauteous type of that unchanging good,  
That bright eternal beacon, by whose ray  
The voyager of time should shape his heedful way.”

Though there are few that speak in praise of the wild, stormy month of March, he bids it a cordial welcome: —

“Thou bringst the hope of those calm skies,  
And that soft time of sunny showers,  
When the wide bloom, on earth that lies,  
Seems of a brighter world than ours.”

**325. Reflective, Ethical Tone.** — He does not sigh at the increasing speed with which the years pass by: —

"Then haste thee, Time, — 'tis kindness all  
 That speeds thy wingèd feet so fast;  
 The pleasures stay not till they pall,  
 And all thy pains are quickly past.

"Thou fiest and bear'st away our woes,  
 And as thy shadowy train depart,  
 The memory of sorrow grows  
 A lighter burden on the heart."

To those who lament the degeneracy of their time, and are filled with gloomy forebodings of the future, he says, —

"Oh, no! a thousand cheerful omens give  
 Hope of yet happier days whose dawn is nigh.  
 He who has tamed the elements, shall not live  
 The slave of his own passions ; he whose eye  
 Unwinds the eternal dances of the sky,  
 And in the abyss of brightness dares to span  
 The sun's broad circle, rising yet more high,  
 In God's magnificent works his will shall scan,  
 And love and peace shall make their paradise with man."

**326. Unaffected Sincerity.** — Bryant's poetry is not artificial. It sprang out of the depths of his soul ; it is the natural expression of his deepest thoughts and feelings. It was inspired chiefly by the scenery, life, and history of his own country, — a fact that makes him pre-eminently an American poet. He never, by any chance," says Stedman, " affected passion or set himself to artificial song. He had the triple gift of Athene, ' self-reverence, self-knowledge, self-control.' He was incapable of pretending to raptures that he did not feel ; and this places him far above a host of those who, without knowing it, hunt for emotions, and make poetry but little better than a trade."

**327. "Iliad" and "Odyssey."** — Bryant crowned his long literary life with a translation of the "Iliad" and the "Odyssey." The former was undertaken in 1865, when the poet was in his seventy-first year, and it was completed four years later.

His vigorous health and disciplined faculties had always enabled him to work with unusual regularity. He was never dependent on moments of happy inspiration. In translating Homer he set himself the task of forty lines a day. He found fault with the translations of Pope and Cowper, because of their lack of fidelity to the original. "I have sought to attain," he says, "what belongs to the original,—a fluent narrative style which shall carry the reader forward without the impediment of unexpected inversions and capricious phrases, and in which, if he find nothing



BRYANT'S HOME, CEDARMERE, ROSLYN, LONG ISLAND

to stop at and admire, there will at least be nothing to divert his attention from the story and characters of the poem, from the events related and the objects described." Scarcely was the "Iliad" finished when he began the "Odyssey." It was completed in two years. The entire translation, which was a credit to American talent and scholarship, met with a cordial reception. It satisfied the high expectations that had preceded its appearance. In fidelity to the original, in its admirable style and diction, and in its successful reproduction of the heroic spirit, it surpasses, perhaps, all other translations.

**328. Homes in the Country.** — Besides his city residence, Bryant had two houses in the country, — one near the village of Roslyn, Long Island, commanding an extensive prospect of land and water; the other, the old Bryant homestead at Cummington. He was accustomed, the latter part of his life, to spend about one-half his time at these country homes. He took great interest in beautifying them, and was “aye sticking in a tree.” At his home near Roslyn, to which he gave the name of “Cedarmere,” he did some of his best work. It was the abode of simplicity and taste, to which he welcomed many friends and distinguished guests.

**329. Deep Religious Spirit.** — Bryant was a deeply religious man; but he attached more importance to reverence, righteousness, and charity than to any ecclesiastical creed. Though brought up in the Calvinistic faith, his later theological sympathies were with the Unitarians. “The religious man,” he wrote near the end of his life, “finds in his relations to his Maker a support to his virtue which others cannot have. He acts always with a consciousness that he is immediately under the eyes of a Being who looks into his heart, and sees his inmost thoughts, and discerns the motives which he is half unwilling to acknowledge even to himself. He feels that he is under the inspiration of a Being who is only pleased with right motives and purity of intention, and who is displeased with whatever is otherwise. He feels that the approbation of that Being is infinitely more to be valued than the applause of all mankind, and his displeasure more to be feared and more to be avoided than any disgrace which he might sustain from his brethren of mankind.” He had a profound reverence for the character and teachings of Christ, whose sweetness and beneficence he exemplified in his own life with advancing years.

**330. End of a Long Life.** — The rich, full life of Bryant continued far beyond the allotted period of man; but the end came suddenly. In the latter part of May, 1878, he delivered an address at the unveiling of a statue to Mazzini, the Italian patriot, in

Central Park. He had not been feeling well for several days, and exposure to the sun proved too much for his strength. On entering the house of a friend near the Park, he suddenly lost consciousness, and, falling backward, struck his head violently on the stone platform of the front steps. The terrific blow caused concussion of the brain, from which he died June 12, in the eighty-fourth year of his age. "By reason of his venerable age," wrote Dr. J. G. Holland, "his unquestioned genius, his pure and lofty character, his noble achievement in letters, his great influence as a public journalist, and his position as a pioneer in American literature, William Cullen Bryant had become, without a suspicion of the fact in his own modest thought, the principal citizen of the great republic. By all who knew him, and by millions who never saw him, he was held in the most affectionate reverence. When he died, therefore, and was buried from sight, he left a sense of personal loss in all worthy American hearts."

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

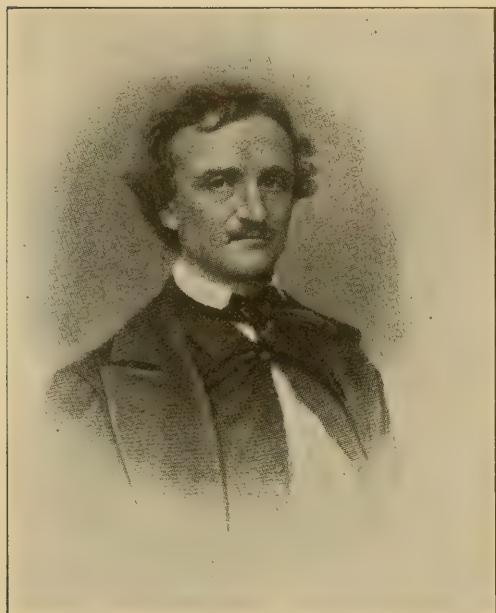
*The annotated selections, pages 472-486, include "Thanatopsis," "To a Waterfowl," "A Forest Hymn," "To the Fringed Gentian," "The Death of the Flowers," and "The Evening Wind."*

In addition to these poems it is recommended that the student read "Green River," "The Planting of the Apple-Tree," "Robert of Lincoln," "The Poet," "The Yellow Violet," "Song of Marion's Men," and "A Winter Piece."

Parke Godwin's "Life of Bryant"; John Bigelow's "William Cullen Bryant" (Am. Men of Letters Series); Wm. Bradley's "William Cullen Bryant" (English Men of Letters Series); Jas. G. Wilson's "Bryant and His Friends."

For critical estimates consult the general bibliography and Poole's "Index." Also E. C. Stedman's "Poets of America"; E. P. Whipple's "Literature and Life"; James Russell Lowell's "Fable for Critics."

## *EDGAR ALLAN POE*



EDGAR ALLAN POE

**331. A Subject of Controversy.** — It is difficult to form a just and satisfactory estimate of Edgar Allan Poe. His genius is unquestionable; but it had a limited range and lacked a substantial moral basis. It is not always easy to get at the facts. Like Pope, he did not hesitate to mislead and mystify his readers. He has been the subject of much debate; and his numerous biographers are generally not exempt from the suspicion of a friendly or a hostile bias.

The latter probably draw his character too unfavorably; but the former are frequently driven to extenuation or apology.

**332. Peculiar Place in American Literature.** — Poe occupies a peculiar place in American literature. He has been called our most interesting literary man. He stands alone for his intellectual brilliancy and his lamentable failure to use it wisely. No one can read his works intelligently without being impressed with his extraordinary ability. Whether poetry, criticism, or fiction, he shows extraordinary power in them all. But the moral element in life is the most important, and in this Poe was lacking. With him truth was not the first necessity. He allowed his judgment to be warped by friendship, and apparently sacrificed sin-

cerity to the vulgar desire of gaining popular applause. He gambled and drank liquor; and for these reasons chiefly, though the fact has been denied by some, he was unable for any considerable length of time to maintain himself in a responsible or lucrative position. Fortune repeatedly opened to him an inviting door; but he constantly and ruthlessly abused her kindness.

**333. Parentage.** — Edgar Allan Poe descended from an honorable ancestry. His grandfather, David Poe, was a Revolutionary hero, over whose grave, as he kissed the sod, Lafayette pronounced the words, "*Ici repose un cœur noble.*" His father, an impulsive and wayward youth, became enamored of an English actress, and forsook the bar for the stage. The couple were duly married, and acted with moderate success in the principal towns and cities of the country. It was during an engagement at Boston that the future poet was born, Jan. 19, 1809.<sup>1</sup> Two years later the wandering pair were again in Richmond, where within a few weeks of each other they died in poverty. They left three children, the second of whom, the subject of this sketch, was kindly received into the home of Mr. John Allan, a wealthy merchant of the city.

**334. Unfortunate Rearing.** — The early training of Poe may be taken as a very good example of how *not* to bring up children. The boy was remarkably pretty and precocious; and his foster-parents allowed no opportunity to pass without showing him off. After dinner in this elegant and hospitable home, he was frequently placed upon the table to drink to the health of the guests, and to deliver short declamations, for which he had inherited a decided talent. He was flattered and fondled and indulged in every way. Is it strange that under this training he acquired a taste for strong drink, and became opinionated and perverse?

**335. In England.** — In 1815 Mr. Allan went to England with his family to spend several years, and there placed the young

<sup>1</sup> Different dates are given, and Baltimore is frequently mentioned as the place of his birth; but the matter may be regarded as finally settled by Woodberry in his excellent biography of Poe.

Edgar at school in an ancient and historic town, which has since been swallowed up in the overflow of the great metropolis. The venerable appearance and associations of the town, as may be learned from the autobiographic tale of "William Wilson," made a deep and lasting impression on the imaginative boy.

**336. School-Days in Richmond.** — After five years spent in this English school, where he learned to read Latin and to speak French, he was brought back to America, and placed in a Richmond academy. Without much diligence in study, his brilliancy enabled him to take high rank in his classes. His skill in verse-making and in debate made him prominent in the school. He excelled in athletic exercises, especially in running and jumping; and it is related of him that on one occasion, stimulated perhaps by the aquatic feats of Byron, he swam a distance of six miles against a strong tide without much apparent fatigue. But he was not generally popular among his fellow-students. Conscious of his superior intellectual endowments (which, however, as is usual in such cases, were not as great as he imagined), he was disposed to live apart, and to indulge in moody revery. According to the testimony of one who knew him well at this time, he was "self-willed, capricious, inclined to be imperious, and though of generous impulses, not steadily kind, or even amiable."

**337. At the University.** — In 1826, at the age of seventeen, Poe matriculated at the University of Virginia, and entered the schools of ancient and modern languages. The university has never been noted for rigid discipline or Puritanic morals. Its laxity at that time in both particulars chimed in well with Poe's natural impulses. Though he attended his classes with a fair degree of regularity, he was not slow in joining the fast set that spent more time in drinking and gambling than in study. Gambling especially became a passion, and he lost heavily. His reckless expenditures led Mr. Allan to visit Charlottesville for the purpose of inquiring into his habits. The result was not satisfactory; and, though his adopted son won high honors in Latin and French, Mr. Allan refused to allow him to return to the uni-

versity after the close of his first session, and placed him in his own counting-room.

**338. Seeking his Fortune.** — It is not difficult to foresee the next step in the drama before us. Many a genius of far greater self-restraint and moral earnestness has found the routine of business almost intolerably irksome. With high notions of his own ability, and with a temper rebellious to all restraint, Poe soon broke away from his new duties, and started out to seek his fortune. He went to Boston; and, in eager search for fame and money, he resorted to the unpromising expedient of publishing in 1827 a small volume of poems. As viewed in the light of his subsequent career, the volume gives here and there an intimation of the author's genius; but, as was to be expected, it attracted but little attention, and disappointed all his ambitious hopes. He was soon reduced to financial straits; and, in his pressing need, he enlisted, under an assumed name, in the United States army. He served at Fort Moultrie, and afterwards at Fortress Monroe. He rose to the rank of sergeant-major; and, according to the testimony of his superiors, he was "exemplary in his deportment, prompt and faithful in the discharge of his duties."

**339. At West Point.** — In 1829, when his heart was softened by the death of his wife, Mr. Allan became reconciled to Poe. Through his influence, young Poe secured a discharge from the army, and obtained an appointment as cadet at West Point. He entered the academy July 1, 1830, and, as usual, established a reputation for brilliancy and folly. He was reserved, exclusive, discontented, and censorious. As described by a classmate, "He was an accomplished French scholar, and had a wonderful aptitude for mathematics, so that he had no difficulty in preparing his recitations in his class, and in obtaining the highest marks in these departments. He was a devourer of books; but his great fault was his neglect of and apparent contempt for military duties. His wayward and capricious temper made him at times utterly oblivious or indifferent to the ordinary routine of roll-call, drills, and guard duties. These habits subjected him often to arrest and punishment,

and effectually prevented his learning or discharging the duties of a soldier." The final result is obvious. At the end of six months, he was summoned before a court-martial, tried, and expelled.

**340. His Poetic Principle.** — Before leaving West Point, Poe arranged for the publication of a volume of poetry, which appeared in New York in 1831. This volume, to which the students of the academy subscribed liberally in advance, is noteworthy in several particulars. In a prefatory letter Poe lays down the poetic principle to which he endeavored to conform his productions. It throws much light on his poetry by exhibiting the ideal at which he aimed. "A poem, in my opinion," he says, "is opposed to a work of science by having for its *immediate* object pleasure, not truth; to romance, by having for its object an *indefinite* instead of a definite pleasure, being a poem only so far as this object is attained; romance presenting perceptible images with definite, poetry with *indefinite* sensations, to which end music is an *essential*, since the comprehension of sweet sound is our most indefinite conception. Music, when combined with a pleasurable idea, is poetry; music without the idea is simply music; the idea without the music is prose from its very definiteness." Music embodied in a golden mist of thought and sentiment — this is Poe's poetic ideal.

**341. Musical Rhythm.** — As illustrative of his musical rhythm, the following lines from "Al Aaraaf" may be given: —

"Ligeia! Ligeia!  
My beautiful one  
Whose harshest idea  
Will to melody run,  
O! is it thy will  
On the breezes to toss?  
Or, capriciously still,  
Like the lone albatross,  
Incumbent on night  
(As she on the air)  
To keep watch with delight  
On the harmony there?"

Or take the last stanza of “Israfel” : —

“If I could dwell  
Where Israfel  
Hath dwelt, and he where I,  
He might not sing so wildly well  
A mortal melody,  
While a bolder note than this might swell  
From my lyre within the sky.”

**342. Imitation.** — The two principal poems in the volume under consideration — “Al Aaraaf” and “Tamerlane” — were obvious imitations of Moore and Byron. The beginning of “Al Aaraaf,” for example, might easily be mistaken for an extract from “Lalla Rookh,” so similar are the rhythm and rhyme : —

“O! nothing earthly save the ray  
(Thrown back from flowers) of Beauty’s eye,  
As in those gardens where the day  
Springs from the gems of Circassy —  
O! nothing earthly save the thrill  
Of melody in woodland rill —  
Or (music of the passion-hearted)  
Joy’s voice so peacefully departed  
That like the murmur in the shell,  
Its echo dwelleth and will dwell —  
Oh, nothing of the dross of ours —  
Yet all the beauty — all the flowers  
That list our Love, and deck our bowers —  
Adorn yon world afar, afar —  
The wandering star.”

In this poem there is a further imitation of Moore in the copious annotations, in which Poe tries to appear learned by the cheap trick of mentioning obscure names, and quoting scholarly authorities at second-hand. It indicates his singular lack of moral integrity that he kept up this evil practice all through his literary career.

**343. Literary Career in Baltimore.** — After his expulsion from West Point, Poe appears to have gone to Richmond; but the long-suffering of Mr. Allan, who had married again and was expecting a lineal descendant, was at length exhausted. He refused to extend any further recognition to one whom he had too much reason to regard as unappreciative and undeserving. Accordingly, Poe was finally thrown upon his own resources for a livelihood. He settled in Baltimore, where he had a few acquaintances and friends, and entered upon that literary career which is without parallel in American literature for its achievements, its vicissitudes, and its sorrows. With no qualification for the struggle of life other than intellectual brilliancy, he bitterly atoned, through disappointment and suffering, for his defects of temper, lack of judgment, and habits of intemperance.

**344. A Prize Story.** — In 1833 the Baltimore *Saturday Visitor* offered a prize of one hundred dollars for the best prose story. This prize Poe won by his tale "A MS. Found in a Bottle." This success may be regarded as the first step in his literary career. The ability displayed in this fantastic tale brought him to the notice of John P. Kennedy, Esq., who at once befriended him in his distress, and aided him in his literary projects. He gave Poe, whom he found in extreme poverty, free access to his table, and, to use his own words, "brought him up from the very verge of despair."

**345. Southern Literary Messenger.** — After a year or more of hack work in Baltimore, Poe, through the influence of his kindly patron, obtained employment on the *Southern Literary Messenger*, and removed to Richmond in 1835. Here he made a brilliant start; life seemed to open before him full of promise. In a short time he was promoted to the editorship of the *Messenger*, and by his tales, poems, and especially his reviews, he made that periodical very popular. In a twelvemonth he increased its subscription list from seven hundred to nearly five thousand, and made the magazine a rival of the *Knickerbocker* and the *New Englander*. He was loudly praised by the Southern press,

and was generally regarded as one of the foremost writers of the day.

**346. Slashing Criticism.** — In the *Messenger*, Poe began his work as a critic. It is hardly necessary to say that his criticism was of the slashing kind. He became little short of a terror. With a great deal of critical acumen and a fine artistic sense, he made relentless war on pretentious mediocrity, and rendered good service to American letters by enforcing higher literary standards. He was lavish in his charges of plagiarism, even when stealing himself; and he made use of cheap second-hand learning in order to ridicule the pretended scholarship of others. He often affected an irritating and contemptuous superiority. But with all his humbug and superciliousness, his critical estimates, in the main, have been sustained.

**347. Prospects Blighted.** — The bright prospects before Poe were in a few months ruthlessly blighted. Perhaps he relied too much on his genius and reputation. It is easy for men of ability to overrate their importance. Regarding himself, perhaps, as indispensable to the *Messenger*, he may have relaxed in vigilant self-restraint. It has been claimed that he resigned the editorship in order to accept a more lucrative offer in New York; but the sad truth seems to be that he was dismissed on account of his irregular habits.

**348. "Arthur Gordon Pym."** — After eighteen months in Richmond, during which he had established a brilliant literary reputation, Poe was again turned adrift. He went to New York, where his story of "Arthur Gordon Pym" was published by the Harpers in 1838. It is a tale of the sea, written with the simplicity of style and circumstantiality of detail that give such charm to the works of Defoe. In spite of the fact that Cooper and Marryat had created a taste for sea-tales, the story of "Arthur Gordon Pym" never became popular. It is superabundant in horrors — a vein that had a fatal fascination for the morbid genius of Poe.

**349. Quarrel with Burton.** — The same year in which this story appeared, Poe removed to Philadelphia, where he soon

found work on *The Gentleman's Magazine*, recently established by the comedian Burton. He soon rose to the position of editor-in-chief, and his talents proved of great value to the magazine. His tales and criticism rapidly increased its circulation. But the actor, whose love of justice does him great credit, could not approve of his editor's sensational criticism. In a letter written when their cordial relations were interrupted for a time, Burton speaks very plainly and positively: "I cannot permit the magazine to be made a vehicle for that sort of severity which you think is so 'successful with the mob.' I am truly much less anxious about making a monthly 'sensation' than I am upon the point of fairness. . . . You say the people love havoc. I think they love justice." Poe did not profit by his experience at Richmond, and after a few months he was dismissed for neglect of duty.

**350. Editor of Graham.** — He was out of employment but a short time. In November, 1840, *Graham's Magazine* was established, and Poe appointed editor. At no other period of his life did his genius appear to better advantage. Thrilling stories and trenchant criticisms followed one another in rapid succession. His articles on autography and cryptology attracted widespread attention. In the former he attempted to illustrate character by the handwriting; and in the latter he maintained that human ingenuity cannot invent a cipher that human ingenuity cannot resolve. In the course of a few months the circulation of the magazine (if its own statements may be trusted) increased from eight thousand to forty thousand — a remarkable circulation for the time.

**351. A Violent Assumption.** — His criticism was based on the rather violent assumption "that, as a literary people, we are one vast perambulating humbug." In most cases, literary prominence, he asserted, was achieved "by the sole means of a blustering arrogance, or of busy wriggling conceit, or of the most barefaced plagiarism, or even through the simple immensity of its assumptions." These fraudulent reputations he undertook,

"with the help of a hearty good will" (which no one will doubt), to "tumble down." But, in the fury of this general destruction, he did not allow himself to become utterly indiscriminate and merciless. He admitted that there were a few who rose above absolute "idiocy." "Mr. Morris *has* written good songs. Mr. Bryant is not *all* fool. Mr. Willis is not *quite* an ass. Mr. Longfellow *will* steal; but, perhaps, he cannot help it (for we have heard of such things), and then it must not be denied that *nil tetigit quod non ornavit.*" But, in spite of reckless and extravagant assertion, there was still too much acumen and force in his review to allow them to be treated with indifference or contempt.

**352. Manner of Life.** — In about eighteen months Poe's connection with Graham was dissolved. The reason has not been made perfectly clear; but, from what we already know, it is safe to charge it to Poe's infirmity of temper or of habit. His protracted sojourn in Philadelphia was now drawing to a close. It had been the most richly productive, as well as the happiest, period of his life. For a time, sustained by appreciation and hope, he in a measure overcame his intemperate habits. Griswold, his much-abused biographer, has given us an interesting description of him and his home at this time: "His manner, except during his fits of intoxication, was very quiet and gentlemanly; he was usually dressed with simplicity and elegance; and when once he sent for me to visit him, during a period of illness caused by protracted and anxious watching at the side of his sick wife, I was impressed by the singular neatness and the air of refinement in his home. It was in a small house, in one of the pleasant and silent neighborhoods far from the centre of the town; and, though slightly and cheaply furnished, everything in it was so tasteful and so fitly disposed that it seemed altogether suitable for a man of genius."

**353. Prose Masterpieces.** — It was during his residence in Philadelphia that Poe wrote his choicest stories. Among the masterpieces of this period are to be mentioned "The Fall of the House of Usher," "Ligeia," which he regarded as his best tale,

"The Descent into the Maelstrom," "The Murders of the Rue Morgue," and "The Mystery of Marie Roget." The general character of his tales may be inferred from their titles. Poe delighted in the weird, fantastic, dismal, horrible. There is no warmth of human sympathy, no moral consciousness, no lessons



THE HOUSE WHERE "THE RAVEN" WAS WRITTEN

of practical wisdom. His tales are the product of a morbid but powerful imagination. His style is in perfect keeping with his peculiar gifts. He had a highly developed artistic sense. By his air of perfect candor, his minuteness of detail, and his power of graphic description, he gains complete mastery over the soul, and leads us almost to believe the impossible. Within the limited

range of his imagination (for he was by no means the universal genius he fancied himself to be), he is unsurpassed, perhaps, by any other American writer.

**354. Publication of "The Raven."**—Poe's career had now reached its climax, and after a time began its rapid descent. In 1844 he moved to New York, where for a year or two his life did not differ materially from what it had been in Philadelphia. He continued to write his fantastic tales, for which he was poorly paid, and to do editorial work, by which he eked out a scanty livelihood. He was employed by N. P. Willis for a few months on the *Evening Mirror* as sub-editor and critic, and was regularly "at his desk from nine in the morning till the paper went to press." It was in this paper, Jan. 29, 1845, that his greatest poem, "The Raven," was published with a flattering commendation by Willis. It laid hold of the popular fancy; and, copied throughout the length and breadth of the land, it met a reception never before accorded to an American poem. Abroad its success was scarcely less remarkable and decisive. "This vivid writing," wrote Mrs. Browning, "this power which is felt, has produced a sensation here in England. Some of my friends are taken by the fear of it, and some by the music. I hear of persons who are haunted by the 'Nevermore'; and an acquaintance of mine, who has the misfortune of possessing a bust of Pallas, cannot bear to look at it in the twilight."

**355. Broadway Journal.**—In 1845 Poe was associated with the management of the *Broadway Journal*, which in a few months passed entirely into his hands. He had long desired to control a periodical of his own, and in Philadelphia had tried to establish a magazine. But, however brilliant as an editor, he was not a man of administrative ability; and in three months he was forced to suspend publication for want of means. Shortly afterwards he published in Godey's *Lady's Book* a series of critical papers entitled the "Literati of New York." The papers, usually brief, are gossipy, interesting, sensational, with an occasional lapse into contemptuous and exasperating severity.

**356. Choicest Poems.** — In the same year he published a tolerably complete edition of his poems in the revised form in which they now appear in his works. The volume contained nearly all the poems upon which his poetic fame justly rests. Among the poems that may be regarded as embodying his highest poetic achievement are "The Raven," "Lenore," "Ulalume," "The Bells," "Annabel Lee," "The Haunted Palace," "The Conqueror Worm," "The City in the Sea," "Eulalie," and "Israfel." Rarely has so large a fame rested on so small a number of poems, and rested so securely. His range of themes, it will be noticed, is very narrow. As in his tales, he dwells in a weird, fantastic, or desolate region — usually under the shadow of death. He conjures up unearthly landscapes as a setting for his gloomy and morbid fancies. In "The City in the Sea," for example,

"There shrines and palaces and towers  
(Time-eaten towers that tremble not !)  
Resemble nothing that is ours.  
Around, by lifting winds forgot,  
Resignedly beneath the sky  
The melancholy waters lie."

**357. Poetic Elements.** — He conformed his poetic efforts to his theory that a poem should be short. He maintained that the phrase "a long poem" "is simply a flat contradiction in terms." His strong artistic sense gave him a firm mastery over form. He constantly uses alliteration, repetition, and refrain. These artifices form an essential part of "The Raven," "Lenore," and "The Bells." In his poems, as in his tales, Poe was less anxious to set forth an experience or a truth than to make an impression. His poetry aims at beauty in a purely artistic sense, unassociated with truth or morals. It is singularly vague, unsubstantial, and melodious. Some of his poems — and precisely those in which his genius finds its highest expression — defy complete analysis. They cannot be taken apart so that each thought and sentiment stands

out clear to the understanding. "Ulalume," for instance, remains obscure after the twentieth perusal — its meaning lost in a haze of mist and music. Yet these poems, when read in a sympathetic mood, never fail of their effect. They are genuine creations; and, as fitting expressions of certain mental states, they possess an indescribable charm, something like the spell of instrumental music. There is no mistaking his poetic genius. Though not the greatest, he is still the most original, of our poets, and has fairly earned the high esteem in which his gifts are held in America and Europe.

**358. Social Gifts.** — During his stay in New York, Poe was often present in the literary gatherings of the metropolis. He was sometimes accompanied by his sweet, affectionate, invalid wife, whom in her fourteenth year he had married in Richmond. According to Griswold, "His conversation was at times almost supra-mortal in its eloquence. His voice was modulated with astonishing skill; and his large and variably expressive eyes looked repose or shot fiery tumult into theirs who listened, while his own face glowed, or was changeless in pallor, as his imagination quickened his blood or drew it back frozen to his heart. His imagery was from the worlds which no mortals can see but with the vision of genius." He exercised a strong fascination over women. "To a sensitive and delicately nurtured woman," wrote Mrs. Osgood, "there was a peculiar and irresistible charm in the chivalric, graceful, and almost tender reverence with which he invariably approached all women who won his respect." His writings are unstained by a single immoral sentiment.

**359. Devotion and Poverty.** — Toward the latter part of his sojourn in New York, the hand of poverty and want pressed upon him sorely. The failing health of his wife, to whom his tender devotion is beyond all praise, was a source of deep and constant anxiety. For a time he became an object of charity — a humiliation that was exceedingly galling to his delicately sensitive nature. To a sympathetic friend, who lent her kindly aid in this time of need, we owe a graphic but pathetic picture of Poe's home shortly

before the death of his almost angelic wife. "There was no clothing on the bed, which was only straw, but a snow-white counterpane and sheets. The weather was cold, and the sick lady had the dreadful chills that accompany the hectic fever of consumption. She lay on the straw bed, wrapped in her husband's great-coat, with a large tortoise-shell cat in her bosom. The wonderful cat seemed conscious of her great usefulness. The coat and the cat were the sufferer's only means of warmth, except as her husband held her hands, and her mother her feet." She died Jan. 30, 1847.

**360. Sorrow and Death.** — After this event Poe was never entirely himself again. The immediate effect of his bereavement was complete physical and mental prostration, from which he recovered only with difficulty. His subsequent literary work deserves scarcely more than mere mention. His "*Eureka*," an ambitious treatise, the immortality of which he confidently predicted, was a disappointment and failure. He tried lecturing, but with only moderate success. His correspondence at this time reveals a broken, hysterical, hopeless man. In his weakness, loneliness, and sorrow, he resorted to stimulants with increasing frequency. Their terrible work was soon done. On his return from a visit to Richmond, he stopped in Baltimore, where he died from the effects of drinking, Oct. 7, 1849.

**361. A Life Tragedy.** — Thus ended the tragedy of his life. It is as depressing as one of his own morbid, fantastic tales. His career leaves a painful sense of incompleteness and loss. With greater self-discipline, how much more he might have accomplished for himself and for others! Gifted, self-willed, proud, passionate, with meagre moral sense, he forfeited success by his perversity and his vices. From his own character and experience he drew the unhealthy and pessimistic views to which he has given expression in the maddening poem, "*The Conqueror Worm*." And if there were not happier and nobler lives, we might well say with him, as we stand by his grave: —

"Out — out are the lights — out all !  
And over each quivering form,

The curtain, a funeral pall,  
Comes down with the rush of a storm,  
And the angels, all pallid and wan,  
Uprising, unveiling affirm,  
That the play is the tragedy, 'Man,'  
And its hero the Conqueror Worm."

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

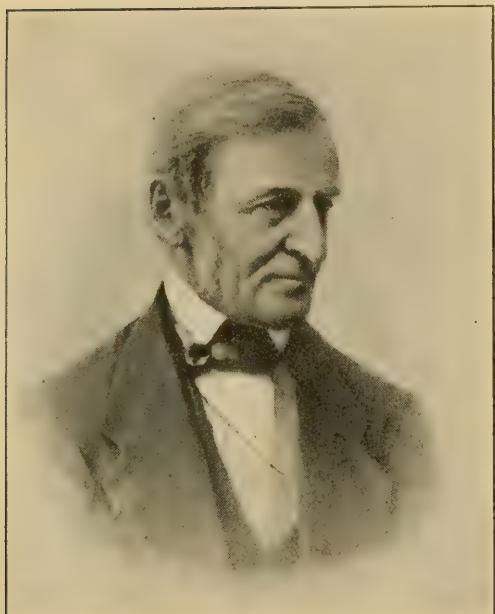
*The annotated selections from Poe, pages 487-500, include "The Raven" and "The Masque of the Red Death."*

In addition the student should read "Lenore," "To Helen," "Ulalume," "The Bells," "Annabel Lee," "The Haunted Palace," "The Conqueror Worm," "The City in the Sea," "Eulalie," and "Israfel," among his poems, and among his tales "The Fall of the House of Usher," "Ligeia," "The Descent into the Maelstrom," "The Murders of the Rue Morgue," and "The Mystery of Marie Roget."

Geo. E. Woodberry's "Edgar Allan Poe" (Am. Men of Letters Series); J. H. Ingram's "Memoir of Poe"; Wm. A. Harrison's "Life of Poe."

For critical estimates, consult the general bibliography and Poole's "Index." E. C. Stedman's "Poets of America."

## *RALPH WALDO EMERSON*



RALPH WALDO EMERSON

### **362. A Record of Thought.**

— In literature the historian records less of action than of thinking. Literature is a product of thought. The biography of many great writers is a story of “plain living and high thinking.” This is pre-eminently true of Ralph Waldo Emerson. His outward life was uneventful. He filled no high civic or political station; he led no great reformatory movement that changed the character of society. His quiet, unostentatious life was devoted

to the discovery and the proclamation of truth. As he said of Plato, his biography is interior. From time to time, as he felt called upon, he gave forth, in essays, lectures, and poems, the choice treasures he had carefully stored up in retirement and silence.

**363. Relative Originality.** — He deserves to rank as one of our greatest thinkers. It should not be forgotten, however, that absolute originality is far less frequent than is sometimes supposed. As some writer has wittily said, the ancients have stolen our best thoughts. Other ages, no less than the present age, have had earnest, reflective souls. The same problems that press on us — nature, life, society, freedom, death, destiny — pressed on them for solution. In large measure the profound thinkers of the past

have exhausted the field of speculative philosophy. "Out of Plato," says Emerson, "come all things that are still written and debated among men of thought. Great havoc makes he among our originalities." Only small advances can be made now and then, even by the children of genius. Emerson had a deep affinity for the imperial thinkers of our race. He made them his intimate friends, and assimilated their choicest thoughts. He settled the matter of plagiarism very simply. "All minds quote," he said. "Old and new make the warp and woof of every moment. There is no thread that is not a twist of these two strands. By necessity, by proclivity, and by delight, we all quote."

**364. Intuitive Gift.** — Emerson was a philosopher only in the broad, original meaning of the word. He had but little power as a close, logical reasoner. He was incapable of building up a system. "I do not know," he says, "what arguments mean in reference to any expression of a thought. I delight in telling what I think; but if you ask me how I dare say so, or why it is so, I am the most helpless of mortal men." He belongs to that higher class of men whom we revere as prophets or seers. His method was not logic, but intuition. In the pure light of genius, he saw the truth that he announced. His was "the oracular soul." He does not argue; he only states or reveals. He gives utterance to what is communicated to him, whether men will receive it or not.

**365. An Idealistic Philosopher.** — There is an unbroken line of idealists and mystics running through the ages. While idealism and mysticism have often run into absurd extremes, they have fostered what is deepest and noblest in life — belief in God, in truth, and in immortality. The greatest representative of this idealistic tendency in the past was unquestionably Plato. Since his day there have been many others — Plotinus, Augustine, Eckhart, Tauler, Schelling, Coleridge — who have sought to transcend the realm of the senses, and to commune immediately with the Infinite. Emerson is the leading representative of this philosophy in America. It is the source of his inspiration and power; it contains in varied application the great message he had to

deliver to our superficial, commercial, money-loving country. His principal essays and poems rest on a mystic sense of the all-originating and all-pervading presence of God,—the source of all life, of all beauty, of all truth.

**366. His Common Sense.**— Yet it must be remembered that he was a New Englander as well as a transcendentalist. In spite of his idealism and mysticism, he never cut entirely loose from common sense. If at times he came perilously near ecstatic and unintelligible utterance, he soon recovered his balance. His sturdy Puritan sense saved him. His mysticism never drove him out of his comfortable home into starving asceticism. It did not wholly paralyze his active energies. Notwithstanding his strivings after communion with the Over-Soul, he was not so lost to the commonplace obligations of life as to neglect his family. It is true that he often grudged the time spent in attending to ordinary matters of business. “Do what I can,” he said, “I cannot keep my eyes off the clock.” But, unlike many another mystic, he did not let go of commonplace realities; and in spite of his addiction to ineffable communings, he was an estimable and useful citizen.

**367. Ancestry and Education.**— Ralph Waldo Emerson was of Puritan descent, and counted seven ministers in the immediate line of his ancestry. Born in Boston, May 25, 1803, he may be considered the consummate flower of a healthy and vigorous stock. Nature seems to have seized upon the intellectual and ethical qualities of his Puritan ancestors, and to have wrought them into the solid foundation of his character. He was fitted for college in the public Latin School of Boston, and entered Harvard in 1817. He took high rank in his classes, delighted in general reading, and exhibited a gentle and amiable disposition. In his senior year he took the second prize in English composition, and at the conclusion of his course, in 1821, delivered the class-day poem.

**368. Teacher and Preacher.**— After his graduation, Emerson devoted the next five years to teaching, and met with an encourag-

ing degree of success. He is described by one of his pupils as being "very grave, quiet, and impressive in his appearance. There was something engaging, almost fascinating, about him; he was never harsh or severe, always perfectly self-controlled, never punished except with words, but exercised complete command over the boys." Along with his teaching, he pursued the study of theology under Channing, the great Unitarian leader and preacher. After three years of theological study he was "approved to preach," though grave doubts had begun to trouble his mind. After spending a winter in South Carolina and Florida for his health, he returned to Boston, and was ordained as colleague of the Rev. Henry Ware, pastor of the second Unitarian Church. After the resignation of his colleague a few months later, Emerson became sole pastor, and performed his duties diligently and acceptably. With a broad and liberal spirit, he took an interest in the affairs of the city, served on the School Board, acted as chaplain of the State Senate, and co-operated in the philanthropic work of other denominations.

**369. Increasing Doubt.** — His sermons, both in matter and form, foreshadowed his lectures and essays. Their profound thought was clothed in simple but felicitous diction. His manner as a speaker was quiet, earnest, and impressive. His voice was peculiarly pleasing — "the perfect music of spiritual utterance." A brilliant career lay before him in the pulpit. But, as is usual in such cases, his doubts in regard to certain points of Christian doctrine and traditional ceremonies increased. At last he came to feel conscientious scruples against administering the Lord's Supper. His expanding views outgrew even the very spacious liberality of his church. Had he been a time server or a hypocrite, he would have concealed his scruples. But a man of transparent integrity, he frankly avowed his difficulties to his people; and finding the prevailing sentiment of the congregation against his views, he resigned his office, and gradually withdrew from the ministry. But on neither side was there any bitterness of feeling; and whatever errors there may have been

in Christian doctrine, we must recognize the presence of the charity that " thinketh no evil."

**370. A Trip Abroad.** — In 1833, the year following his resignation, he went to Europe for a few months, and visited Sicily, Italy, France, and England. He met a number of distinguished authors, among whom were Coleridge, De Quincey, Landor, Wordsworth, and Carlyle. A " quiet night of clear, fine talk " was the beginning of a warm friendship between him and Carlyle. His idealistic tendencies naturally made him partial to Wordsworth's poetry, which was not without influence upon his intellectual development.

**371. Reputation as Lecturer.** — After his return from Europe, Emerson entered upon his new career as lecturer. For half a century he continued to appear upon the platform as a lecturer, and gradually made his way to a foremost place. He exemplified the truth of what De Quincey wrote: " Whatever is too original will be hated at the first. It must slowly mould a public for itself." When Emerson began to present his idealistic and mystical views, he was not generally understood. His philosophy was an exotic growth. By the prosaic multitude he was looked upon as mildly insane. James Freeman Clarke thus describes the general impression made by his earlier lectures: " The majority of the sensible, practical community regarded him as mystical, or crazy, or affected, as an imitator of Carlyle, as racked and revolutionary, as a fool, as one who did not himself know what he meant. A small but determined minority, chiefly composed of young men and women, admired him and believed in him, took him for their guide, teacher, master. I, and most of my friends, belonged to this class. Without accepting all his opinions, or indeed knowing what they were, we felt that he did us more good than any other writer or speaker among us, and chiefly in two ways, — first, by encouraging self-reliance; and, secondly, by encouraging God-reliance."

**372. Matter and Manner.** — Emerson was not, in the usual sense of the term, an eloquent speaker. He did not call to his

aid the resources of intonation, gesture, and vehemence. But, in a spirit of earnestness and sincerity, he spoke his deepest convictions; and, in spite of his unimpassioned delivery, he was singularly impressive. His discourses were enveloped in an atmosphere of cheerful hopefulness that was especially helpful to the young. He believed in the ultimate triumph of truth over



EMERSON'S HOME IN CONCORD, MASSACHUSETTS

error, and inculcated a manly self-reliance and an absolute trust in God.

Such a preacher (for he regarded the platform as his pulpit) could not fail to exert a profound influence upon many lives. James Russell Lowell has described for us the effect of Emerson's lectures on his younger hearers: "To some of us that long past experience remains the most marvelous and fruitful we have ever had. Emerson awakened us, saved us from the body of this death. It is the sound of the trumpet that the young soul longs for, careless of what breath may fill it. Sidney heard

it in the ballad of 'Chevy Chase,' and we in Emerson. Nor did it blow retreat, but called us with assurance of victory."

**373. Residence at Concord.** — In 1829, a few months after becoming a pastor in Boston, Emerson married Miss Ellen Louisa Tucker. It is to her that the poem, "To Ellen at the South,"

is addressed. Apparently as delicate as the flowers that called to her in their devotion, she died of consumption in 1832. Three years later Emerson married Miss Lydia Jackson, and at once occupied the house at Concord in which he resided till his death. In this town of historic and literary associations, "He was surrounded by men," to use the words of Oliver Wendell Holmes, "who ran to extremes in their idiosyncrasies: Alcott in speculations, which often led him into the fourth dimension of mental space; Hawthorne, who brooded himself into a dream-peopled solitude; Thoreau, the nullifier of



CONCORD BRIDGE AND BATTLE MONUMENT

civilization, who insisted on nibbling his asparagus at the wrong end; to say nothing of idolaters and echoes. He kept his balance among them all." He became the most distinguished citizen of the place; and, as the years passed by, his home became the object of pious pilgrimages for his disciples and admirers. In 1836 he composed the "Concord Hymn," which was sung at the completion of the battle monument:—

“By the rude bridge that arched the flood,  
Their flag to April’s breeze unfurled,  
Here once the embattled farmers stood,  
And fired the shot heard round the world.”

**374. Source and Message of “Nature.”** — For some years Emerson’s studies had been in the line of idealistic and mystical philosophy. He gave much time to Plato; dipped into Plotinus and the German mystics; read with enthusiasm the poems of George Herbert, and the prose writings of Cudworth, Henry More, Milton, Jeremy Taylor, and Coleridge. In 1836, as a result of these studies, he published a little volume entitled “Nature,” which contained the substance of his subsequent teachings in both prose and poetry. It is based on a pure idealism, which teaches that matter is only a manifestation of spirit. “We learn that the Highest is present to the soul of man, that the dread universal Essence, which is not wisdom, or love, or beauty, or power, but all in one, and each entirely, is that for which all things exist, and that by which they are; that spirit creates; that behind nature, throughout nature, spirit is present; that spirit is one, and not compound; that spirit does not act upon us from without, that is, in space and time, but spiritually, or through ourselves.” The book was variously judged, according to the insight or prejudices of the critics. From its very nature it could not be popular, and some years elapsed before it reached a sale of five hundred copies.

**375. The Transcendental Club.** — The year “Nature” was published, the transcendental movement began to assume tangible form. Its representatives, drawn together by common sympathies and aspirations, organized themselves into a society for mutual aid and encouragement. This society was known as “The Transcendental Club,” and held informal meetings from house to house for the discussion of philosophical questions. As a class the transcendentalists, among whom were Emerson, Alcott, Channing, George Ripley, Theodore Parker, James Free-

man Clarke, Thoreau, Margaret Fuller, and others, were earnest in their search after truth. They were optimistic, and generally

favorable to all sorts of reforms and innovations; but occasionally they were also extravagant and impractical — such people, in short, as in the hard realism of to-day are denominated cranks.



EMERSON'S STUDY

**376. Transcendentalism.** — Transcendentalism is but another name for idealism. It recognizes an all-pervading spiritual presence as the ultimate reality. It is opposed to materialism. It teaches that man has a faculty transcending the senses and the understanding as an organ of truth. It believes in the existence of a Universal Reason, of which the human soul is an individual manifestation

— a divine spark. The highest knowledge is intuition; it is an inspiration of the omnipresent Spirit. All things, animate and inanimate, are but a manifestation of infinite Spirit, which binds the universe together in a sublime unity, and is the source of all wisdom, truth, and beauty. The material world is the image or symbol of the spiritual world; all natural objects and laws are ideas of God.

**377. The Dial.** — For the dissemination of these philosophic principles, which now gave character to all of Emerson's thinking, *The Dial* was established. It was edited at first by Margaret Fuller, and afterwards by Emerson, who furnished numerous contributions in both prose and poetry. With its vague and often unintelligible lucubrations, it drew a good deal of hostile criticism. Emerson complained that it was "honored by attacks from almost every newspaper and magazine." Even Carlyle wrote: "I love your *Dial*, and yet it is with a kind of shudder. You seem to me in danger of dividing yourselves from the Fact of this present Universe, in which alone, ugly as it is, can I find any anchorage, and soaring away after Ideas, Beliefs, Revelations, and such like, — into perilous altitudes, as I think." It proved too ethereal a plant for this hard, common-sense world, and after four years it died.

**378. Brook Farm Experiment.** — There was still another important product of the transcendental movement. In 1840 Emerson wrote to Carlyle: "We are all a little wild here with numberless projects of social reform. Not a reading man but has a draft of a new community in his waistcoat pocket. I am gently mad myself, and am resolved to live cleanly. George Ripley is talking up a colony of agriculturists and scholars, with whom he threatens to take the field and the book. One man renounces the uses of animal food; and another, coin; and another, domestic hired service; and another, the state; and, on the whole, we have a commendable share of reason and hope."



MARGARET FULLER

The following year Ripley's project took form in "The Brook Farm Association for Education and Agriculture." The object of the association, in the words of its originator, was "to insure a more natural union between intellectual and manual labor than now exists; to combine the thinker and the worker, as far as possible in the same individual; to guarantee the highest mental freedom by providing all with labor adapted to their tastes and talents, and securing to them the fruits of their industry." Its aim, in short, was to furnish a model of an ideal civilization, in which there would be the least possible manual toil, and the largest amount of intellectual and spiritual culture. Emerson, while looking on the experiment with friendly interest, held aloof from active participation. His profound knowledge of human nature seems to have inspired misgivings as to its practical workings. Yet when the Brook Farm Association came to an end in 1846, he pronounced it in its aims a noble and generous movement.

**379. First Volume of Essays.** — In 1841 Emerson published his first volume of "Essays," containing History, Self-Reliance, Compensation, Spiritual Laws, Love, Friendship, Prudence, Heroism, The Over-Soul, Circles, Intellect, and Art. Composed under the fresh inspiration of his idealism, these essays are unsurpassed in depth and richness by anything he subsequently wrote. Perhaps nothing more suggestive and inspiring has been produced in the whole range of American literature. But when the "Essays" appeared, New England did not breathe freely at such altitudes of speculation; and various critics, failing to catch its fundamental philosophy, stigmatized the book as vague, extravagant, meaningless.

**380. Key-Note of the Series.** — It is worth while to dwell for a moment on this work. To understand it is to master Emerson. The first essay, on History, sounds the key-note to the whole series: "There is one mind common to all individual men. Every man is an inlet to the same and to all of the same. He that is once admitted to the right of reason is made a freeman of the whole estate. What Plato has thought, he may think; what a

saint has felt, he may feel; what at any time has befallen any man, he can understand. Who has access to this universal mind is a party to all that is or can be done, for this is the only sovereign agent." The verses prefixed as a kind of motto or text embody the same idea: —

"There is no great and no small  
To the Soul that maketh all;  
And where it cometh, all things are;  
And it cometh everywhere."

The following lines, presenting the same thought in more concrete form, will be found a little startling: —

"I am owner of the sphere,  
Of the seven stars and the solar year,  
Of Cesar's hand, and Plato's brain,  
Of Lord Christ's heart, and Shakespeare's strain."

**381. Duty of Self-Reliance.** — In *Self-Reliance*, Emerson urges us to be true to our own thought, to trust our own conviction, to shake off all spiritual bondage. No less than other men, whether of the present age or former ages, we are organs of the Universal Reason. "We lie in the lap of immense Intelligence, which makes us organs of its activity and receivers of its truth. When we discern justice, when we discern truth, we do nothing of ourselves, but allow a passage to its beams. If we ask whence this comes, if we seek to pry into the soul that causes, — all metaphysics, all philosophy, is at fault. Its presence or its absence is all we can affirm." The same thought, which lies at the basis of nearly all his Essays in inexhaustible richness, is fully developed in *The Over-Soul*.

**382. A Simple, Studious Life.** — Emerson's life at this time was simple, busy, studious. He took a lively interest in his vegetable garden and in his little orchard of thirty trees. He had an income of about thirteen hundred dollars from invested funds, to which he added eight hundred dollars by his winter lectures. In a letter to Carlyle, dated May 10, 1838, he gives

us a pleasing glimpse of his home life: " My wife Lydia is an incarnation of Christianity — I call her Asia — and keeps my philosophy from Antinomianism; my mother, whitest, mildest, most conservative of ladies, whose only exception to her universal preference for old things is her son; my boy, a piece of love and sunshine, well worth my watching from morning to night,— these, and three domestic women, who cook and sew and run for us, make all my household. Here I sit and read and write, with very little system, and, as far as regards composition, with the most fragmentary results; paragraphs incompressible, each sentence an infinitely repellent particle."

**383. Bereavement and Consolation.** — But, alas! this quiet abode of domestic joy was not to remain unsmitten. That idolized boy of five years — that " piece of love and sunshine " — was taken away. " A few weeks ago," wrote the stricken father, " I accounted myself a very rich man, and now the poorest of all." His grief blossomed in the " Threnody," one of the noblest elegies ever written. To his overwhelming sorrow, doubt, and despair, " the deep Heart " back of all things at last spoke comfort and cheer: —

"Wilt thou not ope thy heart to know  
What rainbows teach, and sunsets show?  
Verdict which accumulates  
From lengthening scroll of human fates,  
Voice of earth to earth returned,  
Prayers of saints that inly burned, —  
Saying, *What is excellent*  
*As God lives, is permanent;*  
*Hearts are dust, hearts' loves remain,*  
*Hearts' love will meet thee again."*

**384. Essays and Addresses.** — In 1844 Emerson published a second volume of " Essays " in his characteristic vein. Almost every year, from the time he gave up his pastoral work, added to the list of his notable addresses. He brought his idealism to bear on various questions connected with theology, edu-

tion, and government. In theology he drifted farther away from orthodox Unitarianism; and an address delivered before the senior class of Divinity College, Cambridge, in 1838, caused a sensation and started a controversy, in which he "had little more than the part of Patroclus when the Greeks and Trojans fought over his body."

He was not a controversialist, but a seer. He deplored the materialistic tendency of this rapidly developing commercial age, and raised his warning voice. In a college address in 1841 he declares that the thirst for wealth "acts like the neighborhood of a gold-mine to impoverish the farm, the school, the church, the house, and the very body and feature of man." His face was turned to the future with perpetual youth, and his message always carried with it encouragement and hope. He sympathized with every reformatory movement that promised a better social condition. He favored the abolition of slavery, and encouraged the movement for "woman's rights." In an address in 1855, he said: "The new movement is only a tide shared by the spirits of man and woman; and you may proceed in the faith that whatever the woman's heart is prompted to desire, the man's mind is simultaneously prompted to accomplish."

**385. Second Visit to England.** — In 1845 Emerson made a second visit to England, and delivered a number of lectures to enthusiastic audiences. The best of these lectures he afterwards published under the title of "Representative Men." It is one of his most interesting and valuable works, intelligible even to the uninitiated. In 1856 appeared his "English Traits," in which he embodied the shrewd observation and interesting reflections of his sojourn in England. He was delighted with English life, which, of course, he saw on the best side; but he still preserved his equilibrium sufficiently to smile at a foible, or point out an unflattering truth. Of Emerson's other prose works, "The Conduct of Life," "Society and Solitude," "Letters and Social Aims," though meriting extended notice, no more than mere mention can be made.

**386. Poetry.** — In 1846 Emerson published his first volume of "Poems," and in 1867 appeared "May Day and Other Pieces." In spite of Matthew Arnold's judgment to the contrary, Emerson was a true poet, as well as an impressive lecturer and surpassing essayist. His poetry, no less than his prose, is pervaded by his idealistic philosophy. In his admirable poem, "Wood-Notes," he thus speaks of nature: —

"Ever fresh the broad creation,  
A divine improvisation,  
From the heart of God proceeds,  
A single will, a million deeds."

**387. A Continual Revelation.** — As a product of spirit, the world is full of meaning. It is pervaded by a divine symbolism, which it is the office of the poet to read and interpret. Emerson calls the world "a temple, whose walls are covered with emblems, pictures, and commandments of the Deity." "Poetry," he says, "is the perpetual endeavor to express the spirit of the thing." Nature is to him a continual revelation; hence he says in the little poem, "Good-by," —

"And when I am stretched beneath the pines,  
Where the evening star so holy shines,  
I laugh at the lore and the pride of man,  
At the sophist schools and the learned clan;  
For what are they all, in their high conceit,  
When man in the bush with God may meet?"

**388. The Poetic Office.** — Emerson took his poetic office seriously. He considered poetry the highest vocation. "The poet," he says, "is the sayer, the namer, and represents beauty. He is a sovereign, and stands at the centre. For the world is not painted or adorned, but is from the beginning beautiful; and God has not made some beautiful things, but Beauty is the creator of the universe. Therefore the poet is not any permissive potentate, but is emperor in his own right." In "Merlin," Emerson says: —

"Thy trivial harp will never please  
 Or fill my craving ear;  
 Its chords should ring as blows the breeze,  
 Free, peremptory, clear.  
 No jingling serenader's art,  
 Nor tinkle of piano strings,  
 Can make the wild blood start  
 In its mystic springs."

**389. Metre-Making Argument.** — Impressed with the grandeur of the poet's vocation, Emerson was more or less indifferent to the art of versification. He rose above ingenious tricks and petty fancies. He has been called a poet "wanting the accomplishment of verse." He depended for success upon grandeur of thought, and truth of revelation. "For it is not metres," he says, "but a metre-making argument, that makes a poem, — a thought so passionate and alive, that, like the spirit of a plant or an animal, it has an architecture of its own, and adorns nature with a new thing." Again in "Merlin," he says: —

"Great is the art,  
 Great be the manners, of the bard.  
 He shall not his brain encumber  
 With the coil of rhythm and number;  
 But, leaving rule and pale forethought,  
 He shall aye climb  
 For his rhyme."

**390. A Student of Nature.** — Emerson was a loving student of nature. He reminds us of Wordsworth in his painstaking observation. His exquisite appreciation of natural beauty is often expressed in words nobly wedded to the sense. In "The Snow-Storm," the retiring north wind —

"Leaves, when the sun appears, astonished Art  
 To mimic in slow structures, stone by stone,  
 Built in an age, the mad wind's night-work,  
 The frolic architecture of the snow."

And again in "Wood-Notes":—

"Thou canst not wave thy staff in air,  
Or dip thy paddle in the lake,  
But it carves the bow of beauty there,  
And the ripples in rhymes the oar forsake."

**391. Lessons of Wisdom.** — He deduces from the humblest objects in nature the richest lessons of practical wisdom. To him the humblebee is —

"Wiser far than human seer,  
Yellow-breeched philosopher.  
Seeing only what is fair,  
Sipping only what is sweet,  
Thou dost mock at fate and care,  
Leave the chaff, and take the wheat."

He knew the sweet, soothing influence of nature, of which Bryant spoke. In "Musketaquid," he says:—

"All my hurts  
My garden spade can heal. A woodland walk,  
A quest of river grapes, a mocking thrush,  
A wild rose, or rock-loving columbine,  
Salves my worst wounds."

**392. Estimate of his Poetry.** — Notwithstanding his treasures of beauty and wisdom, Emerson can hardly be a popular poet. He dwells in the higher regions of song. He must be content with a small but select audience. He does not deal in sentimentality — "poetry fit to be put round frosted cake;" he does not clothe his thought in the richest music of numbers. He is profoundly thoughtful; he earnestly strives to voice the speechless messages of the Over-Soul. He grows upon us as we grasp more fully his meaning. Though not the most entertaining of our poets, he brings us the deepest and most helpful messages. His poetry, like his prose, brings courage and hope to burdened and struggling men. He calls them to sincerity, to faith, to truth. In the tasks that come to us, divine help is near: —

"So nigh is grandeur to our dust,  
So near is God to man,  
When Duty whispers low, *Thou must*,  
The youth replies, *I can.*"

If there are any who question this estimate, let them read, besides the poems already mentioned, "Each and All," "The Problem," "The Rhodora," "Astræa," "Sursum Corda," "Ode to Beauty," "Give All to Love," "Voluntaries," and many others.

**393. Literary Method.** — Emerson was peculiar in his literary methods. It is doubtful whether we have had another author so frugal in husbanding every thought. Besides the work done in his study day by day, he was accustomed to jot down in a note-book the stray thoughts that came to him in conversation or on his walks. The suggestions that occurred to him in his studies, conversations, and meditations he elaborated in a commonplace book, where he noted the subject of each paragraph. He thus preserved the best thoughts of his most fertile moments. When he had occasion to prepare an essay or a lecture, he brought together all the paragraphs relating to the subject in his commonplace books, supplying, at the same time, such new connective matter as might be necessary. This method will explain the evident absence of logical treatment in most of his writings, and also account for the fact, noted by Alcott, that "you may begin at the last paragraph and read backwards." Emerson subjected his writings to repeated and exacting revisions. Paragraphs were condensed, and every superfluous sentence and word were mercilessly pruned away. "Nowhere else," as Burroughs says, "is there such a preponderance of pure statement, of the very attar of thought, over the bulkier, circumstantial, qualifying, or secondary elements."

**394. Twilight Years.** — The year 1867 is indicated as about the limit of his working life. He gave pathetic expression to his experience in the poem entitled "Terminus" :—

"It is time to be old,  
To take in sail : —  
The god of bounds,  
Who sets to seas a shore,  
Came to me in his fatal rounds,  
And said, 'No more.'"

The closing years of his life resembled an ever-deepening twilight. Hearing, sight, memory, slowly but gradually gave way. At last, April 27, 1882, surrounded by those he loved, he was beckoned "to his vaster home." Shall we not say that his life was beautiful? Men testified of him that he was radiant with goodness, that his presence was like a benediction, that he exhibited the meekness and gentleness of Christ. To have been such a man is better than to have been a great writer.

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

*The annotated selection, pages 501-513, is Emerson's essay on "Art," which is illustrated by extracts from his poems and other writings.*

In addition to this essay the student is advised to read "History," "Self-Reliance," "Compensation," and "The Over-Soul" from the Essays. Among the poems he should read "Wood-Notes," "Good-by," "Merlin," "The Snow-Storm," "Musketquid," "Each and All," "The Problem," "The Rhodora," "Astræa," "Sursum Corda," "Ode to Beauty," "Concord Hymn," and "The Humble-Bee."

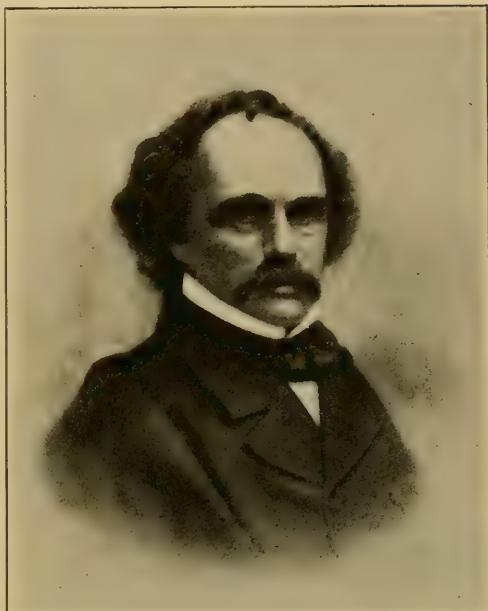
J. E. Cabot's "Memoir of Ralph Waldo Emerson"; G. W. Cooke's "Ralph Waldo Emerson: His Life, Writings, and Philosophy"; Oliver Wendell Holmes's "Ralph Waldo Emerson" (Am. Men of Letters Series); Richard Garnett's "Ralph Waldo Emerson" (Great Writers Series).

For critical estimates consult the general bibliography and Poole's "Index." Edmund Clarence Stedman's "Poets of America"; Matthew Arnold's "Discourses in America"; James Russell Lowell's "Emerson the Lecturer."

## *NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE*

### **395. Men of Genius.—**

It is not difficult to portray the lives of ordinary men. Their outward circumstances present nothing unusual, and their inward experiences admit of ready comprehension and description. All that is needed in such cases is diligent research. But it is different with the man upon whom Providence has lavished such a wealth of gifts as raises him high above his fellows. The outward incidents of his life may indeed be easily narrated. But when these have been presented in the fullest measure, how inadequate and unsatisfactory the portrait still remains! That which distinguishes him from other men, and exalts him above them, is felt to be untouched. And when we essay to penetrate the secret of his genius, we are puzzled and baffled at every step. Only unsatisfactory glimpses reward our most patient observation. Strange and beautiful flowers may burst forth under our very gaze; but the marvellous energy that produces them remains invisible and mysterious. These reflections force themselves upon us as we study the life of the most original and most gifted of all our American writers.



*NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE*

**396. Ancestry.**—The interesting historic town of Salem, Mass., has the distinction of being the birthplace of Nathaniel Hawthorne. Here he first saw the light, July 4, 1804. He sprang from Puritan stock almost as old as the Plymouth colony. The strong traits of his ancestry, as he himself recognized, intertwined



HAWTHORNE'S BIRTHPLACE, SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS

themselves with his personality. His ancestors occupied a position of social and official prominence, and won an unenviable distinction in persecuting Quakers and killing witches. For a hundred years before his birth they followed the sea, "a gray-headed shipmaster, in each generation, retiring from the quarter-deck to the homestead, while a boy of fourteen took the hereditary place before the mast, confronting the salt spray and the gale,

which had blustered against his sire and grandsire." His father was a reserved, thoughtful man of strong will; his mother, a gifted, sensitive woman, who led the life of a recluse after her husband's death. These traits, as will be seen, were transmitted to their son in an intensified degree.

**397. School Days.** — Only glimpses of his boyhood — brief, but very distinct — are afforded us. "One of the peculiarities of my boyhood," he tells us, "was a grievous disinclination to go to school, and (Providence favoring me in this natural repugnance) I never did go half as much as other boys, partly owing to delicate health (which I made the most of for the purpose), and partly because, much of the time, there were no schools within reach." One of his early teachers was Worcester of dictionary fame. He spent a year at Raymond on the banks of Sebago Lake in Maine, where he ran wild, hunting, fishing, skating, and reading at pleasure, — a period that subsequently remained with him as a happy memory. Returning to Salem, he was tutored for college, and entered Bowdoin in the autumn of 1821.

**398. Careless College Career.** — His college career cannot be cited as a model. "I was an idle student," he confesses, "negligent of college rules and the Procrustean details of academic life, rather choosing to nurse my own fancies than to dig into Greek roots and be numbered among the learned Thebans." He played cards on the sly; he drank (a student never drinks anything stronger) "wine" and "hard cider"; he went fishing and hunting when the faculty thought he was at his books. But in spite of his easy-going habits he maintained a respectable standing in his classes, and his Latin composition and his rendering of the classics were favorably spoken of. He was an exceedingly handsome young man; and it is said that an old gypsy woman, suddenly meeting him in a lonely forest path, was startled into the question, "Are you a man or an angel?" Among his college associates, who afterwards achieved distinction, were Henry W. Longfellow and Franklin Pierce.

**399. Inclination to Literature.** — The youth of Hawthorne

gave no startling premonitions of future greatness. But there is evidence that he was not unconscious of his latent extraordinary powers; and some at least of his intimate friends discerned his literary gifts. In a letter to his mother, written in his boyhood, he says: "I do not want to be a doctor and live by men's diseases, nor a minister to live by their sins, nor a lawyer and live by their quarrels; so I don't see that there is anything left for me but to be an author. How would you like, some day, to see a whole shelf full of books written by your son, with '*Hawthorne's Works*' printed on their backs?" To Horatio Bridge, an old and intimate friend, he says: "I know not whence your faith came; but while we were lads together at a country college, . . . doing a hundred things that the faculty never heard of, or else it had been the worse for us, still it was your prognosis of your friend's destiny that he was to be a writer of fiction."

**400. Reading and Observation.** — His youthful reading was sufficiently extensive. "*The Pilgrim's Progress*," as with so many others, was a favorite book. He read Scott, Rousseau, and Froissart, though he was not fond of history in general. He loved poetry; and with catholic taste he studied Thomson and Pope, as well as Milton and Shakespeare. The first book he bought with his own money was "*The Faerie Queene*." But it can hardly be said that he was a great lover of books. He never made any pretence to scholarship, and there are few quotations in his writings. But he was one of the keenest observers; and the books he loved most were the forms of nature and the faces of men. These he read as it were by stealth; and, excepting the mighty Shakespeare, no one else ever read them more deeply. The quiet forest and the stirring city were to him great libraries, where he traced the almost invisible writing of the Creator. Thus, as he said of the simple husbandman in "*The Great Stone Face*," he "had ideas unlike those of other men, not gained from books, but of a higher tone,—a tranquil and familiar majesty, as if he had been talking with the angels as his daily friends."

**401. Study and Seclusion.** — After his graduation, in 1825,

Hawthorne returned to his home in Salem, and for several years led a life of phenomenal seclusion and toil. His habits were almost mechanical in their regularity. He studied in the morning, wrote in the afternoon, and wandered by the seashore in the evening. He sedulously shunned society; and "destiny itself," he afterwards wrote, "has often been worsted in the attempt to get me out to dinner." But his recluse life should not be looked upon as gloomy and morbid. In pondering human life, he was indeed fond of the weird and the mysterious. He explored the hidden crypts of the soul. But his mind was far too healthy and strong to be weighed down with permanent gloom. He never lost his anchorage of common sense; and a genial humor cast its cheerful light upon his darkest musings.

**402. Literary Apprenticeship.** — During this period of retirement he was serving a laborious apprenticeship to his craft. Never was a writer more exacting in self-criticism. Much that he wrote was mercilessly consigned to the flames. In these years of pains-taking toil, from which even the highest genius is not exempt, he acquired his exquisite sense of form, and his marvellous mastery of English. "Hawthorne's English," as Hilliard says, is "absolutely unique; very careful and exact, but never studied; with the best word always in the best place; pellucid as crystal; full of delicate and varied music; with gleams of poetry, and touches of that peculiar humor of his, which is half smile and half sigh."

**403. "Twice-Told Tales."** — During the period in question he published in the *Token*, the *New England Magazine*, and other periodicals a considerable number of tales. They appeared anonymously, and attracted but little attention. Hawthorne had for a good many years what he called "the distinction of being the obscurest man of letters in America." It was a grievous disappointment and humiliation. In 1837 most of these scattered productions were brought together, and published in a volume with the happy title of "Twice-Told Tales." It had but a limited circulation. While it charmed a class of cultivated, reflective readers, its very excellence prevented it from becoming widely

popular. In a review of the book, Longfellow, with clear, critical acumen, said: "It comes from the hand of a man of genius. Everything about it has the freshness of morning and of May. These flowers and green leaves of poetry have not the dust of the highway upon them. They have been gathered fresh from the secret places of a peaceful and gentle heart. There flow deep waters, silent, calm, and cool; and the green trees look into them, and 'God's blue heaven.' The book, though in prose, is written, nevertheless, by a poet. He looks upon all things in the spirit of love and with lively sympathies, for to him external form is but the representation of internal being, all things having a life, and end and aim." This volume, together with a second series of "Tales" published in 1842, was in truth a remarkable contribution to American literature, and, by its enduring interest, beauty, and truth, has since established itself as a classic.

**404. The Boston Custom-House.** — The year 1838 brought an important change in Hawthorne's life. Under the Democratic administration of Van Buren, he was appointed weigher and gauger in the Boston custom-house. It was well for him that he was thus called to common labor. He himself recognized that his life of seclusion had been sufficiently protracted. "I want to have something to do with this material world," he said. His new employment rescued him from the danger of becoming morbid, broadened his sympathies, and enriched his mind with new stores of observation and experience. He learned to know life, not as it may be conceived of in seclusion, but as it is in reality. Henceforth he was able to take up his pen with the conviction "that mankind was a solid reality, and that he himself was not a dream."

**405. At Brook Farm.** — After two years of laborious and faithful service, during which his literary work was suspended, a change of administration resulted in his being turned out of office. He engaged in the socialistic experiment of Brook Farm; and, as we learn from his letters, he entered upon his new duties with considerable enthusiasm. He chopped hay with such "righteous vehemence" that he broke the machine in ten minutes. Armed

with a pitchfork he made what seemed to him a gallant attack upon a heap of manure. He turned grindstones and milked cows; hoed potatoes and picked apples; made hay and gathered squashes; and then for supper devoured huge mounds of buckwheat cakes. But at last his sense of humor, which kept him for a time from taking life at Brook Farm too seriously, began to fail him. His tasks became intensely prosaic; and finally he fell into the carnal state that made him welcome the idleness of a rainy day, or kept him on the sick-list longer than the necessities of the case actually required.

**406. “The Blithedale Romance.”** — At Brook Farm, as elsewhere, Hawthorne not only made “a prey of people’s individualities,” to use his own phrase, but he observed nature also with microscopic vision. According to his custom, which he kept up through life, he stored his note-books with interesting observations and reflections. A few years later he etherealized his Brook Farm experience into the “Blithedale Romance,” which ranks as one of his best productions. It was published in 1852. Though he protests in the preface against a too literal understanding of his romance, Margaret Fuller is thought to have furnished some traits of Zenobia; and it is impossible not to associate Hawthorne himself with Miles Coverdale.

The following extract, which sets forth the cruel disillusion of the Brook Farm visionaries, is not fiction: “While our enterprise lay all in theory, we had pleased ourselves with delectable visions of the spiritualization of labor. It was to be our form of prayer and ceremonial of worship. Each stroke of the hoe was to uncover some aromatic root of wisdom, heretofore hidden from the sun. Pausing in the field to let the wind exhale the moisture from our foreheads, we were to look upward, and catch glimpses into the far-off soul of truth. In this point of view, matters did not turn out quite so well as we anticipated. . . . The clods of earth, which we so constantly belabored and turned over, were never etherealized into thought. Our thoughts, on the contrary, were fast becoming cloddish. Our labor symbolized nothing, and

left us mentally sluggish in the dusk of the evening. Intellectual activity is incompatible with any large amount of bodily exercise."

**407. A Happy Union.**—Hawthorne remained at Brook Farm not quite a year. He returned to Boston, where he married Miss Sophia Peabody in 1842. The union was a peculiarly happy one. Mrs. Hawthorne was a gifted and amiable woman, who appreciated her husband's genius; and throughout their wedded career, which seems to have been unmarred by a single misunderstanding, she stood at his side as a wise counsellor, sympathetic friend, and helpful companion. Their correspondence, not only during the days of courtship, but also during the whole course of their wedded life, constantly breathes a spirit of delicate, tender, reverent love.

**408. Poverty and Contentment.**—The newly wedded pair at once took up their residence in the Old Manse at Concord, where they numbered among their friends Emerson, Ellery Channing, and Thoreau. Hawthorne had not waited for wealth before marrying. It sometimes became a serious problem to satisfy the grocer and the butcher. But in spite of the cares growing out of their humble circumstances, the happy pair maintained a cheerful courage. "The other day," wrote Mrs. Hawthorne, "when my husband saw me contemplating an appalling vacuum in his dressing-gown, he said he was 'a man of the largest rents in the country, and it was strange he had not more ready money.' Our rents are certainly not to be computed; for everything seems now to be wearing out all at once. . . . But, somehow or other, I do not care much, because we are so happy. We —

‘Sail away  
Into the regions of exceeding day,’

and the shell of life is not of much consequence."

**409. “Mosses from an Old Manse.”**—In the introductory chapter to the "Mosses from an Old Manse," a delightful book made up of stories written for the most part at this period, Hawthorne gives us a minute description of his new home. The Old

Manse had never been "profaned by a lay occupant," he says, "until that memorable summer afternoon when I entered it as my home. A priest had built it, a priest had succeeded to it, other priestly men from time to time had dwelt in it, and children born in its chambers had grown up to assume the priestly character. It was awful to reflect how many sermons must have been written



THE OLD MANSE AT CONCORD

there. . . . There was in the rear of the house the most delightful little nook of a study that ever offered its snug seclusion to a scholar. It was here that Emerson wrote 'Nature'; for he was then an inhabitant of the Manse, and used to watch the Assyrian dawn and the Paphian sunset and moonrise from the summit of our eastern hill. When I first saw the room, its walls were blackened

with the smoke of unnumbered years, and made still blacker by the grim prints of Puritan ministers that hung around. These worthies looked strangely like bad angels — or, at least, like men who had wrestled so continually and so sternly with the devil that somewhat of his sooty fierceness had been imparted to their own visages."

**410. Opinion of his Native Town.** — Hawthorne lived at Concord four years, a period of ripened manhood and deepened character. He was then appointed surveyor in the custom-house at Salem, where he went to live in 1846. He was not very partial to his native town; and in one of his letters of an earlier date he gives humorous expression to his dislike: "Methinks, all enormous sinners should be sent on pilgrimage to Salem, and compelled to spend a length of time there, proportioned to the enormity of their offences. Such punishment would be suited to crimes that do not quite deserve hanging, yet are too aggravated for the State's prison." He discharged the duties of his office with exemplary fidelity. He did but little literary work; but he was not so entirely absorbed in his prosaic duties as not to make his customary but silent and unsuspected observations upon the characters of those about him.

**411. Portraits from the Custom-House.** — In the introduction to "The Scarlet Letter," which was published in 1850, he gives an account of his custom-house experiences, and furnishes us a delightful series of portraits of his subordinates. Take, for example, a single trait in the character of the patriarch of the custom-house: "His gormandism was a highly agreeable trait; and to hear him talk of roast meat was as appetizing as a pickle or an oyster. As he possessed no higher attribute, and neither sacrificed nor vitiated any spiritual endowment by devoting all his energies and ingenuities to subserve the delight and profit of his maw, it always pleased and satisfied me to hear him expatiate on fish, poultry, and butcher's meat, and the most eligible methods of preparing them for the table. His reminiscences of good cheer, however ancient the date of the actual banquet, seemed to bring

the savor of pig or turkey under one's very nostrils. There were flavors on his palate that had lingered there not less than sixty or seventy years, and were still apparently as fresh as the mutton-chop which he had just devoured for his breakfast. I have heard him smack his lips over dinners, every guest at which, except himself, had long been food for worms. . . . The chief tragic event of the old man's life, so far as I could judge, was his mishap with a certain goose which lived and died some twenty or forty years ago; a goose of most promising figure, but which at table proved so inveterately tough that the carving-knife would make no impression on its carcass, and it could only be divided with an ax and handsaw."

**412. "The Scarlet Letter."**— After three years a change of administration again led to Hawthorne's retirement. "Now you will have leisure to write your book," cheerfully exclaimed his wife, when he told her of his removal. When he asked what they would live on meanwhile, she led him to a desk, and proudly pointed to a heap of gold that she had saved out of her weekly allowance for household expenses. He set to work at once upon "The Scarlet Letter," perhaps the best known of his writings, and one of the most subtle and powerful pieces of fiction produced in this country. It is a tragedy of sin and remorse, in which thoughts are acts. Its extraordinary merits were at once recognized, and at a single bound Hawthorne attained the literary eminence that his genius deserved. His day of obscurity was past; the praises of "The Scarlet Letter" in America were re-echoed in England. This enthusiastic reception of his work, which his frequent disappointments had not prepared him for, brought him satisfaction and encouragement. It seems to have acted upon him as a stimulus to renewed effort; and the years immediately following were the most productive of his life. Even the greatest genius needs the encouragement of appreciation.

**413. "The House of the Seven Gables."** — In 1850, the year in which "The Scarlet Letter" appeared, Hawthorne moved to Lenox in western Massachusetts. He occupied a small red cot-

tage, which, but for its commanding view of mountain, lake, and valley, could not have been considered in keeping with his gifts and fame. His limited means still enforced simplicity of living. Here he wrote "The House of the Seven Gables," one of his four great romances, which was published in 1851. It was written, as were most of his works, to set forth a spiritual truth. The story was never with Hawthorne the principal thing. It was simply the skeleton, which he clothed with the flesh of thought and vitalized with the breath of truth. "The House of the Seven Gables" illustrates the great truth "that the wrong-doing of one generation lives into the succeeding ones, and, divesting itself of every temporary advantage, becomes a pure and uncontrollable mischief."

**414. Various Literary Labors.** — While at Lenox, Hawthorne wrote also his "Wonder-Book," for boys and girls, a beautifully modernized version of ancient classic myths. Though intended for children, it is not without interest for older people. With his growing popularity his financial condition improved; and in 1852 he purchased a house at Concord, formerly owned by Alcott, to which he gave the name of the Wayside. Here he took up his abode, and completed his "Tanglewood Tales," another admirable volume intended for young people. Upon the nomination of his friend Franklin Pierce for the presidency, he consented, not without urgent solicitation, to prepare a campaign biography. It is characterized by good taste and sobriety of judgment. After the election of Pierce, he received the appointment of consul to Liverpool, and sailed for Europe in 1853.

**415. Irksome Consular Duties.** — This opportunity to spend some time abroad came to the Hawthornes as the realization of a long-cherished dream. Few Americans have been better fitted in culture to appreciate and enjoy the society, historic associations, and art treasures of the Old World. Though Hawthorne discharged the duties of his position with conscientious fidelity, its emoluments, which were considerable, constituted its principal charm. "I disliked my office from the first," he says, "and

never came into any good accordance with it. Its dignity, so far as it had any, was an incumbrance; the attentions it drew upon me (such as invitations to mayors' banquets and public celebrations of all kinds, where, to my horror, I found myself expected to stand up and speak) were — as I may say without incivility or ingratitude, because there is nothing personal in that sort of hospitality — a bore. The official business was irksome, and often painful. There was nothing pleasant about the whole affair, except the emoluments."

**416. Our Old Home.** — As at Salem, Hawthorne kept his eyes open to his surroundings, and filled his note-books with many charming incidents and descriptions. At intervals he made brief excursions to the most noted parts of England. His literary fame caused him to be much sought after, and he saw the most distinguished men of the time. Like Irving, he entertained a friendly feeling toward the mother-country, which he fondly calls, in a work recording his experience and impressions, "Our Old Home." But he had no disposition, as he said, to besmear our self-conscious English cousins with butter and honey. "These people," he says, "think so loftily of themselves, and so contemptuously of everybody else, that it requires more generosity than I possess to keep always in perfectly good humor with them."

**417. Travel and Observation.** — After five years Hawthorne resigned the consulate at Liverpool, and then devoted two years to travel, chiefly in France and Italy. It was a period of rest, observation, and reflection. The art treasures of Rome, as well as its historic associations, were a source of exquisite pleasure. His Italian impressions he embodied in the last of his great romances, "The Marble Faun." It was sketched out in Italy, rewritten in England, and published in 1860. It abounds in art criticism and descriptions of Italian scenery. But through it all there runs a deathless story, with the profound moral that a perfect culture is unattainable in a state of innocence, and that the noblest character can be developed only through spiritual conflict.

**418. Deep Sense of Sin.** — Hawthorne had a deep sense of

human sin and guilt. It enters into many of his writings, and tinges them with a sombre hue. His works appeal most to those who have been chastened in toil and suffering. He everywhere breathes a spirit of tender sympathy, from which no one, however erring and fallen, is excluded. "Man," he says, "must not disclaim his brotherhood even with the guiltiest since, though his hand be clean, his heart has surely been polluted by the flitting phantoms of iniquity." In the conflicts and sufferings of humanity he recognized the struggle of the race after a better and purer life than has yet been realized on earth.

**419. Failing Strength and Death.** — The year "The Marble Faun" appeared, Hawthorne returned to his native country, and made his home once more at the Wayside. But the fire of genius was burning low. He no longer enjoyed robust health; and, while the country was engaged in the throes of civil war, he found it impossible to give himself to the calm, secluded task of inventing stories. No other great work came from his magic pen. He indeed essayed other achievements; but "Septimus Felton" was never finished, and "The Dolliver Romance" remained a fragment. His health gradually declined. At last, in the faint hope of improvement, he started with his lifelong friend, Pierce, on a journey through northern New England. But the sudden death that he had desired came to him at Plymouth, N. H., May 19, 1864. A few days later he was laid to rest with Thoreau in the cemetery at Concord.

**420. Character and Genius.** — This survey of Hawthorne's life and work enables us to distinguish some of the elements that entered into his unique character. His piercing vision gave him a deep sense of spiritual reality. Like every finely organized nature, he was profoundly reverent. In the seclusion of his chamber and on his lonely rambles he felt what he calls "the spirit's natural instinct of adoration towards a beneficent Father." This was the secret of his independence and of his loyalty to truth. His ideals were lofty, and any departure from the strictest integrity of thought or act appeared to him in the light of treason. With

his eye constantly fixed on the realities of life, he demanded everywhere the most perfect sincerity. Few men have ever had a more cordial contempt for every form of pretence and hypocrisy. He was a keen reader of character, and only true and honest natures were admitted to the sacred intimacy of his friendship. His tastes were almost feminine in their delicacy. He had an exquisite appreciation of the beauties of nature and art. He caught their secret meaning. Retiring and modest in disposition, he loathed the vulgarity of every form of obtrusiveness. He was peculiarly gentle in manner and in spirit; but it was that noble gentleness born, not of weakness, but of conscious power. His reflective temperament had a predilection for the darker and more mysterious side of life. He fathomed the lowest depths of the soul. As we read his romances and tales, we have a new sense of the meaning and mystery of existence.

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

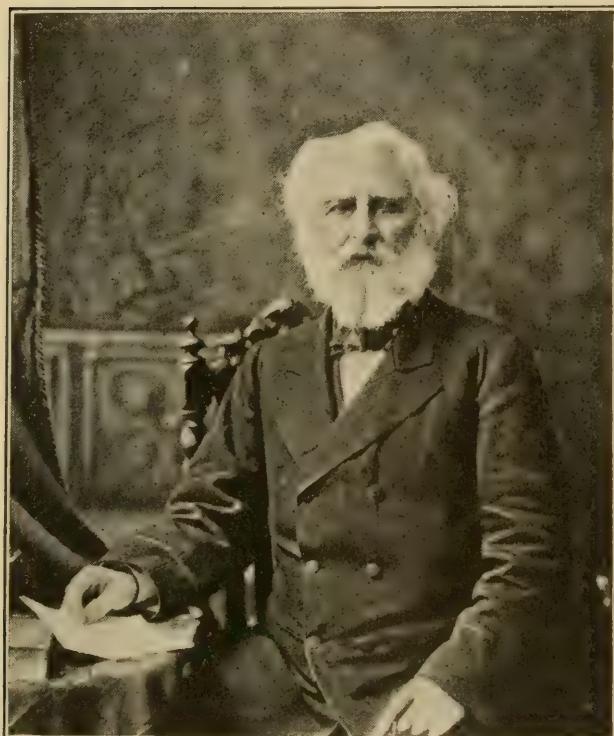
*The annotated selections, pages 514-529, include "The Gray Champion" and "Fancy's Show-Box" from the "Twice-Told Tales."*

In addition it is recommended that the student read "The Minister's Black Veil," "A Rill from the Town Pump," "The Gentle Boy," "The Snow Image," "The Celestial Railroad," and "The Great Stone Face"—all "Twice-Told Tales,"—"The Old Manse" in "Mosses from an Old Manse," "Blithedale Romance," and "The Scarlet Letter."

Henry James's "Nathaniel Hawthorne" (Am. Men of Letters Series); Moncure D. Conway's "Nathaniel Hawthorne" (Great Writers Series); Julian Hawthorne's "Nathaniel Hawthorne and His Wife" (2 vols.); Rose Hawthorne Lathrop's "Memories of Hawthorne."

For critical estimates consult the general bibliography and Poole's "Index," James T. Fields's "Yesterdays with Authors," and G. P. Lathrop's "A Study of Hawthorne."

## HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW



HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW

highest genius is perhaps excluded from popularity by its very originality. Longfellow, while possessing poetic gifts of a high order, has treated themes of general interest. He has wrought within the range of ordinary thought and sentiment.

**422. Beauty of his Life.** — His life was beautiful in its calm, gradual, healthful development. It was not unlike the river Charles, of which he sang: —

“Oft in sadness and in illness,  
I have watched thy current glide,

**421. Great Popularity.** — Longfellow has gained an enviable place in the affections of the American people; and in England his works, it is said, have a wider circulation than those of Tennyson. This popularity has not been attained by brilliancy of genius. There have been more exquisitely gifted poets, who by no means have held so large a place in public esteem. The

Till the beauty of its stillness  
Overflowed me like a tide.

“And in better hours and brighter,  
When I saw thy waters gleam,  
I have felt my heart beat lighter,  
And leap onward with thy stream.”

His life was itself a poem — a type of all that he has written. It was full of gentleness, courtesy, sincerity, and manly beauty. It was free from eccentricity; it breathed a large sympathy; it grounded itself on invisible and eternal realities. The message he brought was sane and helpful. He did not aim at the solution of great problems; he was not ambitious to fathom the lowest depths. But for half a century he continued to send forth, in simple, harmonious verse, messages of beauty, sympathy, and hope.

**423. Parentage.** — Henry Wadsworth Longfellow was born in Portland, Me., Feb. 27, 1807. He sprang from a sturdy, honorable New England family, the founder of which came to Massachusetts toward the close of the seventeenth century. His father was a graduate of Harvard, a prominent lawyer in Portland, and at one time a member of Congress. The poet inherited the disposition and manners of his father, who has been described as a man “free from everything offensive to good taste or good feeling.” On his mother’s side the poet counted in his ancestral line John Alden and Priscilla Mullen, whom he has immortalized in “The Courtship of Miles Standish.” While his ancestors on both sides were characterized by strong sense and sterling integrity, there was no indication of latent poetic genius. Its sudden appearance in the subject of our sketch is one of those miracles of nature that cannot be fully explained by any law of heredity.

**424. Early Environment.** — During the early years of his life, Portland possessed the charm of beautiful scenery and stirring incident. The city rises by gentle ascent from Casco Bay. Its

principal streets are lined with trees, so that it has been not inaptly called "The Forest City." Back of the town are the stately trees of Deering's Woods. It was a place of considerable commercial importance, and foreign vessels and strange-tongued sailors were seen at its wharves. In the War of 1812 defensive works were erected on the shore. In a naval combat off the coast between the British brig *Boxer* and the United States brig *Enterprise*, the captains of both vessels lost their lives. The deep impression made by these scenes and associations is reflected in the beautiful poem, "My Lost Youth."

**425. College Career.** — Longfellow entered Bowdoin College at the age of fifteen. He was courteous in his bearing, refined in his taste, and studious in his habits. A classmate, writing of him, a half-century later, says, "He was an agreeable companion, kindly and social in his manner, rendering himself dear to his associates by his disposition and deportment." He held a very high rank in a large and able class. His strong literary bent manifested itself early. During his college course he composed a number of poems of marked excellence, a few of which have been given a place in his "Complete Poetical Works." All young writers are apt to be more or less imitative; and in the poems of this period, especially in those treating of nature, the influence of Bryant is clearly perceptible.

**426. Strong Literary Bent.** — He early showed a strong predilection for a literary career. In his eighteenth year he wrote to his father: "The fact is, I most eagerly aspire after future eminence in literature; my whole soul burns most ardently for it. There may be something visionary in this, but I flatter myself that I have prudence enough to keep my enthusiasm from defeating its own object by too great haste. . . . Whether nature has given me any capacity for knowledge, or not, she has, at any rate, given me a very strong predilection for literary pursuits; and I am almost confident in believing that, if I can ever rise in the world, it must be by the exercise of my talent in the wide field of literature."

**427. Professor of Modern Languages.** — After his graduation in 1825, Longfellow began the study of law in his father's office; but, like several other American authors, he found his legal books exceedingly tedious. Soon the way was opened for him to enter upon the literary career for which he was eminently fitted by taste and talents. While at college his linguistic ability had attracted attention. Accordingly, when the department of modern languages was established at Bowdoin, he was elected professor, and granted leave of absence for travel and study abroad. He sailed for Europe in 1826, and spent the next three years in France, Germany, Italy, Spain, Holland, and England. He studiously familiarized himself with the scenery, customs, language, and literature of those countries. Like Paul Flemming in "Hyperion," "He worked his way diligently through the ancient poetic lore of Germany, from Frankish legends of St. George and Saxon Rhyme-Chronicles, . . . into the bright, sunny land of harvests, where, amid the golden grain and the blue cornflowers, walk the modern bards, and sing." After his return, he taught five years in his *Alma Mater* with eminent success.

**428. "Outre Mer."** — One of the fruits of his stay abroad was a little work in prose entitled "Outre Mer," in which he gave some of the "scenes and musings" of his pilgrimage. It is made up of a series of pleasant sketches in the manner of Irving's "Sketch Book." It was written, as he tells us, when the duties of the day were over, and the world around him was hushed in sleep. "And as I write," he concludes, "the melancholy thought intrudes upon me, — To what end is all this toil? Of what avail these midnight vigils? Dost thou covet fame? Vain dreamer! A few brief days, — and what will the busy world know of thee? Alas! this little book is but a bubble on the stream; and, although it may catch the sunshine for a moment, yet it will soon float down the swift-rushing current, and be seen no more!"

**429. "Footsteps of Angels."** — In 1831 he married Miss Mary Storer Potter of Portland, a lady of great personal attractions and of exceptional culture. Their married life was brief. She

accompanied him on his second visit to Europe, where she died in Rotterdam in November, 1835. She is the “being beauteous” commemorated in the “Footsteps of Angels”: —

“With a slow and noiseless footstep  
Comes the messenger divine,  
Takes the vacant chair beside me,  
Lays her gentle hand in mine.

“And she sits and gazes at me  
With those deep and tender eyes,  
Like the stars, so still and saint-like,  
Looking downward from the skies.

“Uttered not, yet comprehended,  
Is the spirit’s voiceless prayer,  
Soft rebukes, in blessings ended,  
Breathing from her lips of air.”

**430. “Hyperion.”** — Longfellow’s reputation as a teacher and writer was not confined to Brunswick. He was generally recognized as a rising man; and hence, when the chair of modern languages and literature became vacant at Harvard by the resignation of Professor George Ticknor, he was called to Cambridge. But before entering upon his duties there, he again went abroad, and spent two years in study. In “Hyperion,” his second prose work, he gave a poetic diary of his wanderings abroad. Its style is somewhat dainty and artificial, but in excellent keeping with its quaint scholarship. It repeats old legends, translates delightful lyrics, indulges in easy criticism, abounds in graphic descriptions, and admirably reproduces the spirit of German life. Now and then a serious reflection affords us a glimpse into the depths of thought and feeling beneath the facile narrative. The book is still eagerly bought, we are told, at the principal points it commemorates.

**431. Home in Cambridge.** — In 1836 Longfellow returned to this country, and took up his residence in the Craigie house in

Cambridge. Though it already possessed historic interest as at one time Washington's headquarters, it was destined to become still more illustrious as the home of the poet. The beauty of its



LONGFELLOW'S HOME, THE CRAIGIE HOUSE, CAMBRIDGE

surroundings rendered it no unfit abode for the Muses. With reference to its former majestic occupant, the poet says:—

“Once, ah, once within these walls,  
One whom memory oft recalls,  
The Father of his Country, dwelt.  
And yonder meadows broad and damp  
The fires of the besieging camp  
Encircled with a burning belt.”

**432. Methods as Teacher.**—For seventeen years he faithfully discharged his duties as head of the department of modern languages at Harvard. His position was not a sinecure. Though his lectures were prepared with great care, they were seldom written out in full. He cared but little for the soulless, mechanical

learning that consists in a knowledge of insignificant details. He wrought with profounder spirit. He introduced his students into the beauty of foreign literature, and awakened a desire for literary study and culture.

**433. A Literary Group.** — He became a prominent figure in the remarkable group of Cambridge scholars and writers. His friendships were select and warm. His relations with Felton, Hawthorne, and Sumner were particularly close, as may be seen in the series of sonnets entitled "Three Friends of Mine." There is deep pathos in the concluding lines : —

"But they will come no more,  
Those friends of mine, whose presence satisfied  
The thirst and hunger of my heart. Ah me !  
They have forgotten the pathway to my door !  
Something is gone from nature since they died,  
And summer is not summer, nor can be."

Among his other intimate friends may be mentioned Lowell and Agassiz, both of whom find affectionate remembrance in his poems.

**434. "Voices of the Night."** — In 1839, the year in which "Hyperion" appeared, Longfellow published a slender volume of poetry entitled "Voices of the Night." For the first time the public was able to form a fair idea of the qualities of the new singer. The key-note of the poems is given in the "Prelude": —

"Look, then, into thine heart, and write !  
Yes, into Life's deep stream !  
All forms of sorrow and delight,  
All solemn Voices of the Night,  
That can soothe thee, or affright,  
Be these henceforth thy theme."

**435. Favorite Poems.** — The poet struck a sympathetic chord, and several of the poems have since remained popular favorites. Every poem in the collection has a personal interest. "A Psalm

of Life," so familiar for two generations, is the voice of courage that came into the poet's heart as he was rallying from the depression of bereavement. "The Reaper and the Flowers," which was the unlabored expression of a long-cherished idea, he wrote, as he tells us, "with peace in his heart, and not without tears in his eyes." The pathetic interest of "Footsteps of Angels" has already been mentioned.

**436. "Ballads and Other Poems."** — Two years later appeared another small volume with the title, "Ballads and Other Poems." It reveals an expansion of the poet's powers. "The Skeleton in Armor" rests upon an interesting historical basis. "The Wreck of the Hesperus" is written in the old ballad style, the spirit of which it successfully reproduces. After the wreck, for example, —

"At daybreak, on the bleak sea-beach,  
A fisherman stoodaghast,  
To see the form of a maiden fair,  
Lashed close to a drifting mast.

"The salt sea was frozen on her breast,  
The salt tears in her eyes;  
And he saw her hair, like the brown sea-weed,  
On the billows fall and rise."

In "The Village Blacksmith," we catch the beauty and excellence of a life of humble, faithful labor: —

"Toiling, — rejoicing, — sorrowing,  
Onward through life he goes;  
Each morning sees some task begin,  
Each evening sees it close:  
Something attempted, something done,  
Has earned a night's repose."

The little poem, "Excelsior," has a deeper meaning than appears on the surface. The poet's intention, as explained by himself, was "to display, in a series of pictures, the life of a man of genius,

resisting all temptations, laying aside all fears, heedless of all warnings, and pressing right on to accomplish his purpose."

**437. Fundamental Characteristics.** — In these two initial volumes we have the fundamental characteristics of Longfellow's verse. His poetry afterwards swept a wider range; he undertook more ambitious themes, and gained in amplitude of genius. But in its essential features, his poetry always retained the same qualities. His verse is simple, smooth, melodious, serious. He had learned from German lyrists — Heine, Müller, Uhland — the effectiveness of simple measures; and no other poetic forms would have been suited to his range of thought and emotion. His poetry was but the reflex of the man himself. To use the words of Curtis, "What he was to the stranger reading in distant lands, by —

'The long wash of Australasian seas,'

that he was to the most intimate of his friends. His life and character were perfectly reflected in his books. There is no purity, or grace, or feeling, or spotless charm in his verse which did not belong to the man."

**438. Subject and Spirit.** — In Europe he steeped himself in mediæval literature. He familiarized himself with its wonderful legends. He breathed the romantic spirit that had recently brought new life into the literature of Germany, France, and England. Discarding conventionality, he strove to be true to nature. With true poetic discernment, he pointed out the beauty and pathos of human life. His poetry does not display erratic brilliancy; it does not suddenly blaze out in meteoric splendor, and then sink into darkness. It breathes an atmosphere of faith, hope, and courage. Longfellow does not indeed rise to the rank of the greatest masters of song. But whatever he has lost in admiration, he has more than gained in the higher tribute of love.

**439. Three Notable Things.** — The year 1843 is notable in the poet's life for three things. The first was the publication of "The Spanish Student," a pleasant drama intended for reading,

rather than acting. Its characters are drawn with sufficient clearness; and Preciosa, the gypsy dancing-girl, is a charming creation. The play exhibits the poet's intimate knowledge of Spanish character and customs, and is full of interesting incident and passionate poetry. The second event was the appearance of his small collection of "Poems on Slavery." He was not an agitator; his modest, retiring nature unfitted him for the tasks of a bold, popular leader. But, during the agitation of the great slavery question, he was not an entirely passive spectator. Through his anti-slavery poems, which set forth strongly the darker side of slavery, he lent the weight of his influence to the friends of emancipation. In the light of subsequent events, the last stanza of "The Warning" seems almost like prophecy: —

"There is a poor, blind Samson in this land,  
Shorn of his strength and bound in bonds of steel,  
Who may, in some grim revel, raise his hand,  
And shake the pillars of this Commonweal,  
Till the vast Temple of our liberties  
A shapeless mass of wreck and rubbish lies."

The third event of the year was the poet's marriage to Miss Frances Elizabeth Appleton of Boston, the original of Mary Ashburton in "Hyperion." She was fitted in mind and person to walk at the poet's side; and years afterwards, when surrounded by her five children, she was described as a Cornelia in matronly beauty and dignity.

**440. Noteworthy Volumes.** — In 1845 appeared "Poets and Poetry of Europe," a large volume containing nearly four hundred translations from ten different languages. In its preparation, which occupied him nearly two years, he had the assistance of his friend Professor Felton. In December of the same year he published "The Belfry of Bruges, and Other Poems," in which appears some of his best work. The initial poem and "Nuremberg" are admirable "poems of places." "The Day is Done" has long been a general favorite; and, excepting the unfortunate

simile in the first stanza, it is almost faultless in its simplicity and beauty. "The Arsenal at Springfield" deservedly ranks among the best of his shorter poems. It is quite "warlike against war," and expresses faith in its ultimate banishment from the earth:—

"Down the dark future, through long generations,  
    The echoing sounds grow fainter, and then cease,  
And like a bell, with solemn, sweet vibrations,  
    I hear once more the voice of Christ say 'Peace.'"

Among the other poems of this collection deserving especial notice is "The Old Clock on the Stairs." The old-fashioned country-seat commemorated in the poem was the homestead of Mrs. Longfellow's maternal grandfather, whither the poet went for a short time after his marriage in 1843.

**441. "Evangeline."** — Two years later appeared "Evangeline," which Holmes regards as our author's masterpiece, — a judgment sustained by general opinion. The story Longfellow owed to Hawthorne, to whom he gracefully wrote after the publication and success of the poem: "I thank you for resigning to me that legend of Acady. This success I owe entirely to you, for being willing to forego the pleasure of writing a prose tale which many people would have taken for poetry, that I might write a poem which many people take for prose." The metre is dactylic hexameter, which has had great difficulty in naturalizing itself in English poetry. Longfellow, who had made previous experiments in this measure, did not share the common prejudice against it. "The English world," he wrote, "is not yet awake to the beauty of that metre." He was, perhaps, encouraged by the success of Goethe in "Hermann and Dorothea."

**442. An Interesting Test.** — The result has amply sustained the poet's judgment. The story could hardly have been so delightful in any other measure. He has himself made the test in a single passage. In the second canto of Part Second, the singing of the mocking-bird is described as follows: —

“Then from a neighboring thicket the mocking-bird, wildest of singers,  
Swinging aloft on a willow spray that hung o'er the water,  
Shook from his little throat such floods of delirious music,  
That the whole air and the woods and the waves seemed silent to listen.  
Plaintive at first were the tones, and sad; then soaring to madness  
Seemed they to follow or guide the revel of frenzied Bacchantes.  
Single notes were then heard, in sorrowful, low lamentation  
Till, having gathered them all, he flung them abroad in derision,  
As when, after a storm, a gust of wind through the tree-tops  
Shakes down the rattling rain in a crystal shower on the branches.”

In comparison with this, how tame the following rendering in the common English rhymed pentameter: —

“Upon a spray that overhung the stream,  
The mocking-bird, awaking from his dream,  
Poured such delirious music from his throat  
That all the air seemed listening to his note.  
Plaintive at first the song began, and slow;  
It breathed of sadness, and of pain and woe;  
Then, gathering all his notes, abroad he flung  
The multitudinous music from his tongue, —  
As, after showers, a sudden gust again  
Upon the leaves shakes down the rattling rain.”

**443. Hostile Criticism.** — It is not to be supposed that Longfellow escaped criticism. His success and popularity excited envy, and Poe especially was relentless in his attacks. He labored hard but ineffectually to establish his favorite charge of plagiarism. The transcendentalists were scant in their praise. Though Longfellow counted some of their leading representatives among his friends, his poetry shows scarcely a trace of transcendentalism. His simple themes and familiar truths seemed elementary and trivial to the transcendentalists. The editor of the *Dial* irreverently described him as “a dandy Pindar.” But the poet endured harsh criticism with rare equanimity. He never replied to any criticism, no matter how unjust or severe. When critiques were sent to him, he read only those which were written in a pleasant

spirit. The rest he dropped into the fire; and "in that way," he remarked, "one escapes much annoyance."

**444. Prose and Poetry.** — After the publication of "Evangeline," the poet's muse was less productive for a time; and he himself lamented that the golden days of October, usually so fruitful in verse, failed to stir him to song. Still, it was not a period of complete inactivity. He amused himself in writing the prose tale of "Kavanagh," which, in spite of Hawthorne's generous praise, has remained the least popular of his works. By 1849 he accumulated sufficient verse for a slender volume, which was published under the title of "The Seaside and the Fireside." Among the sea-pieces, which show the poet's fondness for the ocean, "The Building of the Ship" is most worthy of notice. It is modelled after Schiller's "Song of the Bell"; and in its details, as in its general plan, it is admirably conceived and wrought out.

"His heart was in his work, and the heart  
Giveth grace unto every art."

**445. "Resignation."** — Among the fireside pieces, "Resignation" has been read with tears in many a mourning household. It was written after the death of the poet's little daughter Fanny, of whom he noted in his diary: "An inappeasable longing to see her comes over me at times, which I can hardly control." He found consolation only in the great truth of immortality.

"There is no death! What seems so is transition;  
This life of mortal breath  
Is but a suburb of the life elysian,  
Whose portal we call death.

"She is not dead, — the child of our affection, —  
But gone unto that school  
Where she no longer needs our poor protection,  
And Christ himself doth rule."

**446. "Hiawatha."** — His numerous works now brought the poet a comfortable income. With increasing devotion to literary work, he found the exacting duties of the class-room irksome. Accordingly, in 1854, he resigned his chair in Harvard College. He was in his intellectual prime, and several of his greatest works were yet to be written. About the time of his resignation the idea of "Hiawatha" occurred to him; and he wrote in his diary: "I have at length hit upon a plan for a poem on the American Indians, which seems to me the right one and the only. It is to weave together their beautiful traditions into a whole. I have hit upon a measure too, which I think the right and only one for such a theme." The peculiar trochaic metre, with its repetitions and parallelisms, was suggested by the Finnish epic "Kalevala," to which also, in some slight degree, he seems otherwise indebted. The legends of the poem were taken from Schoolcraft. Longfellow worked at the poem with great interest and industry, and finished it in nine months. But, as it approached completion, he was troubled with grave doubts as to the success of his novel venture.

**447. Parody and Ridicule.** — Its publication in 1855 created something of a literary sensation. Never before, perhaps, was a poem so criticised, parodied, and ridiculed. When most fiercely assailed, the poet preserved his usual equanimity and silence. "My dear Mr. Longfellow," exclaimed his excited publisher, rushing into the poet's study, "these atrocious libels must be stopped." Longfellow silently glanced over the attacks in question. As he handed the papers back, he inquired, "By the way, Fields, how is 'Hiawatha' selling?" "Wonderfully," was the reply; "none of your books has ever had such a sale." "Then," said the poet calmly, "I think we had better let these people go on advertising it." The poem finally established itself as a general favorite — a position which it deserves. To remove any doubts, it will be sufficient to read "Hiawatha's Wooing," with its familiar opening lines: —

"As unto the bow the cord is,  
 So unto the man is woman;  
 Though she bends him, she obeys him;  
 Though she draws him, yet she follows;  
 Useless each without the other."

**448. "Courtship of Miles Standish."** — At this period the poet was abundant in labors. Scarcely was one work off the anvil till another was taken up. After the publication of "Hiawatha," the success of which was encouraging, he turned his attention to a New England colonial theme. "The Courtship of Miles Standish" rests upon a trustworthy tradition. The Pilgrims of Plymouth were less austere than the Puritans of Boston. Their sojourn in Holland had softened somewhat their temper and manners. The poem reproduces the manners of the early colonial times with sufficient accuracy. It is less ideal than "Evangeline"; and its realism renders its hexameters more rugged. The reply of the Puritan maiden Priscilla, as John Alden was pleading the cause of his rival, was not a poetic fiction: —

"But as he warmed and glowed, in his simple and eloquent language,  
 Quite forgetful of self, and full of the praise of his rival,  
 Archly the maiden smiled, and, with eyes overrunning with laughter,  
 Said, in a tremulous voice, 'Why don't you speak for yourself, John?'"

**449. Some Notable Pieces.** — "The Courtship of Miles Standish" was published in 1858, along with a number of miscellaneous poems, several of which deserve especial mention. "The Ladder of St. Augustine" contains the well-known stanza: —

"The heights by great men reached and kept  
 Were not attained by sudden flight;  
 But they, while their companions slept,  
 Were toiling upward in the night."

"The Two Angels," a poem of tender pathos, was written, as the poet tells us, "on the birth of my younger daughter, and the death of the young and beautiful wife of my neighbor and

friend, the poet Lowell." For the dark problem of life he finds but the one solution of absolute trust in Providence : —

"Angels of life and death alike are his;  
Without his leave they pass no threshold o'er;  
Who, then, would wish or dare, believing this,  
Against his messenger to shut the door?"

The poem, "Children," like the later one, "The Children's Hour," reveals to us the poet's tender, sympathetic nature : —

"For what are all our contrivings,  
And the wisdom of our books,  
When compared with your caresses,  
And the gladness of your looks?

"Ye are better than all the ballads  
That ever were sung or said;  
For ye are living poems,  
And all the rest are dead."

**450. Bereavement and Toil.** — In 1861 an awful calamity befell the poet. His wife was so severely burned, in spite of his efforts to extinguish the flames, that she died in a few hours.

He was for a time prostrated by the blow. When he began to recover, he sought, like Bryant, relief from his sorrow in the work of translation. Throughout life he found pleasure in turning the thoughts of foreign poets into his native tongue. His various lyrical versions are sufficient to fill a good-sized volume. But he now gave himself to the serious task of turning Dante's "Divina Commedia," of which he had long been a devout student, into English verse. The translation closely follows the original, and is, perhaps, the most satisfactory version of the great Italian in our language.

**451. "Tales of a Wayside Inn."** — The first series of "Tales of a Wayside Inn" was published in 1863, the two succeeding parts appearing in 1872 and 1873. The plan is obviously borrowed

from Boccaccio and Chaucer. The Wayside Inn was an old tavern at Sudbury, and the characters supposed to be gathered there were all real. The youth —

“Of quiet ways,  
A student of old books and days,”

was Henry Ware Wales, a liberal benefactor of Harvard College. The young Sicilian was Professor Luigi Monti, an intimate friend, who for many years was in the habit of dining with the poet on Sunday. The Spanish Jew was Israel Edrehi, who is described as the poet knew him. The theologian was Professor Daniel Treadwell. The poet was T. W. Parsons, a man of real genius, but of very retiring nature. The musician was Ole Bull. The tales are borrowed from various sources, — modern, mediæval, Talmudic, — and many of them possess great merit. “Paul Revere’s Ride” is written with rare vigor. Among the other more notable tales are “The Falcon of Ser Federigo,” “King Robert of Sicily,” “Torquemada,” “The Birds of Killingworth,” “The Bell of Atri,” “The Legend Beautiful,” and “Emma and Eginhard.”

**452. “The Golden Legend.”** — Longfellow early conceived the purpose “to build some tower of song with lofty parapet.” In 1841 he noted in his diary: “This evening it has come into my mind to undertake a long and elaborate poem by the holy name of Christ; the theme of which could be the various aspects of Christendom in the Apostolic, Middle, and Modern Ages.” Though the task was long delayed, this lofty purpose was never relinquished, and through years of thought it slowly assumed definite shape. After nine years he set to work in earnest to compose “The Golden Legend,” which was intended to illustrate Christianity in the Middle Ages. It gives a vivid picture of the manners of the thirteenth century. The story running through “The Golden Legend” is taken from the minnesinger Hartmann von der Aue. The poem was published in 1851, without any intimation of the larger work of which it forms the central part.

**453. "New England Tragedies."**— Nearly a score of years passed before another part of the trilogy of "Christus" appeared. It was properly entitled "The New England Tragedies," and is a sickening record of delusion, intolerance, and cruelty. Unfortunately the imagination had but a small share in the work, which is little more than a skilful metrical version of official records. It was published in 1868 as an independent work, and was received rather coldly. Considered in its relation to the larger work, it must be judged unfortunate. It is depressing in itself; it does not represent the spirit of modern Christianity; and it leaves the trilogy of "Christus" incomplete.

**454. "The Divine Tragedy."**— "The Divine Tragedy," which was published three years later, in 1871, is a close metrical version of the Gospel history. It presents the successive scenes in the life of Christ in a graphic and interesting way. The effort to adhere as closely as possible to the language of the Gospels has prevented a very high degree of metrical excellence. With the publication of "The Divine Tragedy," the plan of the poet was revealed. Though "Christus" will always be read with gentle interest, especially "The Golden Legend," it can hardly rank among his greatest works.

**455. Several Admirable Poems.**— Of his other poems, only a few can be mentioned. "The Hanging of the Crane" is a pathetic picture of the common course of domestic life. "Morituri Salutamus" is an admirable poem, written for the fiftieth anniversary of the class of 1825 in Bowdoin College. "Keramos" is a second successful effort in the manner of Schiller's "Song of the Bell." "A Book of Sonnets" shows Longfellow to have been a master in that difficult form of verse. The several small volumes of lyrics of his later years, while adding little to his fame, showed that the poetic fires within his breast were still burning brightly.

**456. Death and Burial.**— Longfellow had now lived beyond the allotted age of man. He had filled out a beautiful, well-rounded life. Both as a man and as a poet he had gained the respect and love of two generations. But at last, with little

warning, the end came. On March 15, 1882, he completed his last poem, "The Bells of San Blas," with the words,—

"Out of the shadows of night  
The world rolls into light;  
It is daybreak everywhere."

A little more than a week later, March 23, he passed away. The funeral service, in keeping with his unassuming character, was simple. Only his family and a few intimate friends — among them Curtis, Emerson, and Holmes — were present; but two continents were mourning his death.

"His gracious presence upon earth  
Was as a fire upon a hearth;  
As pleasant songs, at morning sung,  
The words that dropped from his sweet tongue  
Strengthened our hearts, or, heard at night,  
Made all our slumbers soft and light."

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

*The annotated selections, pages 530-554, include "A Psalm of Life," "Footsteps of Angels," "The Skeleton in Armor," "The Arsenal at Springfield," and "The Building of the Ship."*

Read also "My Lost Youth," "Three Friends of Mine," "The Wreck of the Hesperus," "The Village Blacksmith," "The Bridge," "The Warning," "The Belfry of Bruges," "The Day is Done," "The Old Clock on the Stairs," "The Two Angels," "The Children's Hour," "Paul Revere's Ride," "The Hanging of the Crane," "Keramos," "Morituri Salutamus," "Hiawatha's Wooing," "The Courtship of Miles Standish," and "Evangeline."

Samuel Longfellow's "Life of Longfellow" (3 vols.); E. S. Robertson's "Henry W. Longfellow" (Great Writers Series).

For critical estimates consult the general bibliography and Poole's "Index," particularly Geo. Wm. Curtis's "Longfellow," *Harper*, June, 1882; Horace E. Scudder's "Men and Letters," and E. C. Stedman's "Poets of America."

## *JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL*

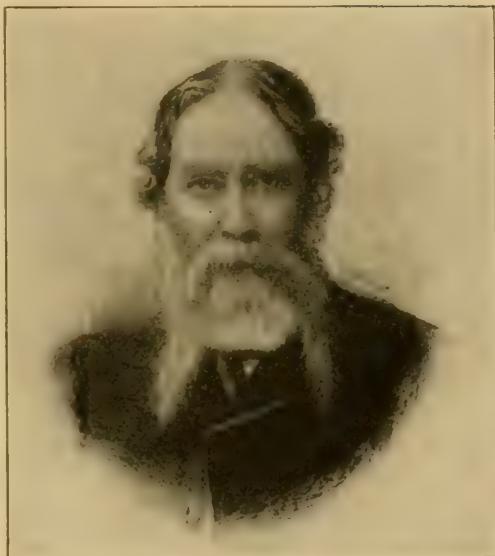
### **457. More than a Writer.**

— Lowell was more than a writer. His writings, numerous and excellent as they are, do not fully represent him. He tried to follow his own precept:—

“The epic of a man rehearse;  
Be something better than thy  
verse.”

None of our literary men were great in so many ways. He ranks high as a poet. His critical papers are among the most elaborate and excellent produced in this country. He was a speaker of no mean ability, and a scholar of wide attainments. But overshadowing all these literary accomplishments stands his personality,—a man of strong intellect, with wide sympathies, and sterling integrity.

**458. Forceful Originality.**—He appeared among the earlier singers of the century. Though influenced for a time, as all young writers are apt to be, by favorite authors, Lowell is strikingly original. In his earlier verse we detect an occasional note from Tennyson or Wordsworth; but his strong intellect soon hewed out a course of its own. His mind was tumultuous with the interests of his day. He rushed to the combat for truth and freedom with abounding zeal. He proclaimed his message in



*JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL*

verse distinguished, not for harmony and grace, but for vehemence and force. He was armed with heroic courage:—

“They are slaves who dare not be  
In the right with two or three.”

He believed in bravely doing his part to right existing wrongs; for—

“God hates your sneakin’ creturs that believe  
He’ll settle things they run away and leave.”

**459. New England Spirit.** — Lowell was a New Englander, not only by birth, but by spirit and affection. He was proud of his Puritan ancestry. He loved the landscape of New England and the character of its people. This affection gave him a keen insight into the strength and weakness of New England character, and made him delight in its peculiar dialect:—

“For puttin’ in a downright lick  
’Twixt Humbug’s eyes, there’s few can metch it,  
And then it helvess my thoughts ez slick  
Ez stret-grained hickory doos a hatchet.”

Though a broad-minded patriot, he remained throughout life a doughty champion of New England.

**460. Distinguished Ancestry.** — The Lowell name has an honored place in the history of Massachusetts. Each generation, since the first settlement of the family at Newbury in 1639, has had its distinguished representative. The city of Lowell is named after Francis Cabot Lowell, who was among the first to perceive that the prosperity of New England was to come from its manufactures. John Lowell was an eminent judge, and introduced into the Constitution the section by which slavery was abolished in Massachusetts. John Lowell, Jr., by a bequest of \$250,000, founded Lowell Institute in Boston. As a family, the Lowells have been distinguished for practical sense, liberal thought, and earnest character.

**461. Parentage.** — James Russell Lowell was born in Cambridge, Feb. 22, 1819. His father, as well as his grandfather, was an able and popular minister. The poetic strain in Lowell's character seems to have been inherited from his mother. She was of Scotch descent, had a talent for languages, and was passionately fond of old ballads. Thus Lowell's opening mind was nourished on minstrelsy and romance. He early learned to appreciate what is beautiful in nature and in life.

**462. Career at Harvard.** — He entered Harvard College in 1835; but no part of his fame rests on his record as a student. He had an invincible repugnance to mathematics; and he read everything else, it has been said, but his text-books. For irregularity in attending morning prayers, he was suspended for a time; but prayers were then held at sunrise! His genial nature and recognized ability made him a favorite among his fellow students. When he graduated, in 1838, he was chosen poet of his class. Then followed the study of law. He opened an office in Boston, but his heart was not in his profession. Various poets — Byron, Shelley, Keats, Coleridge, Tennyson — were more to him than his law-books. In his abundant leisure he wrote a story entitled "My First Client," but it is doubtful if he ever got that far in a successful legal career.

**463. "A Year's Life."** — While waiting for the clients that never came, he found solace in poetry. Love touched his heart, and caused a copious fountain of verse to gush forth. In 1841 he published a little volume with the title "A Year's Life." Its motto, borrowed from Schiller, gave the key-note to the poetry: "*Ich habe gelebt und geliebet.*" The verse was inspired by Miss Maria White, a refined, beautiful, and sympathetic woman, whom the poet married three years later, and with whom for nearly a decade he lived in almost ideal union. This volume revealed the presence of poetic gifts of a high order.

**464. The Pioneer.** — The next step in Lowell's career was to become an editor, — a calling in which he subsequently achieved enviable distinction. In company with Robert Carter, he estab-

lished the *Pioneer* in 1843. It was a literary journal of high excellence. Among its contributors were Hawthorne, Poe, Whittier, Story, and Parsons,—a galaxy sufficient, one would think, to insure success. But only three numbers appeared. The public of that time was not distinguished for literary culture. The *Pioneer* was in advance of its day; and, after a brief career, it may be said to have died a glorious death.

**465. Second Volume of Poetry.** — In 1844 appeared a second volume of poems, in which the hand of a master is apparent. He aims to rise above the empty rhymer, —

“Who lies with idle elbow on the grass,  
And fits his singing, like a cunning timer,  
To all men’s prides and fancies as they pass.”

He sings of love, truth, patriotism, humanity, religion, courage, hope — great themes which his large soul expands to meet. His verse may be at times exuberant and rhetorical, but it embodies virile power of thought and emotion. The fundamental principles, not only of all his poetry but of his character, are found in this volume. In “An Incident in a Railroad Car” we see his sense of human worth, regardless of the accidents of fortune: —

“All that hath been majestic  
In life or death, since time began,  
Is native in the simple heart of all,  
The angel heart of man.

And thus, among the untaught poor,  
Great deeds and feelings find a home,  
That cast in shadow all the golden lore  
Of classic Greece and Rome.”

**466. Fundamental Beliefs.** — He had unwavering confidence in the indestructible power of truth. In “A Glance Behind the Curtain,” he says: —

“Get but the truth once uttered, and 'tis like  
A star new-born, that drops into its place,  
And which, once circling in its placid round,  
Not all the tumult of the earth can shake.”

A well-known passage in “The Present Crisis” reveals his faith in the watchful care of God:—

“Careless seems the great Avenger; history's pages but record  
One death-grapple in the darkness 'twixt old systems and the Word;  
Truth forever on the scaffold, Wrong forever on the throne,—  
Yet that scaffold sways the future, and, behind the dim unknown,  
Standeth God within the shadow, keeping watch above his own.”

His love of human freedom is revealed in the poem “On the Capture of Fugitive Slaves near Washington”:—

“He's true to God who's true to man; wherever wrong is done,  
To the humblest and the weakest, 'neath the all-beholding sun,  
That wrong is also done to us; and they are slaves most base,  
Whose love of right is for themselves, and not for all their race.”

These are all characteristic themes; and because they came from the poet's heart, we find in subsequent poems the same truths presented again and again in richly varied language.

With his strong, positive nature, it was natural for Lowell to take part in the slavery agitation of the time. When it cost him unpopularity, he had the courage of his convictions. He acted as he wrote:—

“Then to side with Truth is noble when we share her wretched crust,  
Ere her cause bring fame and profit, and 'tis prosperous to be just.”

**467. “The Biglow Papers.”** — The first series of “The Biglow Papers” belongs to the period of the Mexican War; the second series, to the period of the Civil War. In these poems, written in what he calls the Yankee dialect, Lowell gives free rein to all his resources of argument, satire, and wit. He hits hard blows. A forcible truth is sometimes clothed in homely language:—

"Laborin' man an' laborin' woman  
 Hev one glory an' one shame.  
 Ev'y thin' that's done inhuman  
 Injers all on 'em the same."

The "pious editor," who reverences Uncle Sam, "particularly his pockets," confesses his creed : —

"I du believe in prayer an' praise  
 To him that hez the grantin'  
 O' jobs, — in every thin' thet pays,  
 But most of all in CANTIN';  
 This doth my cup with marcies fill,  
 This lays all thought o' sin to rest, —  
 I *don't* believe in princerde,  
 But O, I *du* in interest."

**468. "What Mr. Robinson Thinks."** — The little poem "What Mr. Robinson Thinks" was a palpable hit, with its refrain : —

"But John P.  
 Robinson he  
 Sez he wont vote for Guvener B."

These lines took hold of the public fancy, and were repeated in season and out of season. It is said that Mr. Robinson, who was a worthy man, went abroad to get away from the sound of his own name. But on going to his hotel in Liverpool, the first thing he heard was a childish voice repeating : —

"But John P.  
 Robinson he."

"The Biglow Papers" deservedly ranks as our best political satire.

**469. "The Vision of Sir Launfal."** — In 1848 appeared "The Vision of Sir Launfal," which must always remain his most popular work. It is a treatment of the old legend of the Holy Grail; and, excepting Tennyson's idyl, nothing more worthy of the

theme has ever been written. The poem was written at white-heat. It was composed substantially in its present form in forty-eight hours, during which the poet scarcely ate or slept. We find in it a full expression of his poetic powers,—his energetic thought, his deep emotion, his vigorous imagination. In the preludes the poet's love of nature is apparent, as well as the strong moral feeling that formed the substratum of his character. What lines are oftener quoted than these:—

“And what is so rare as a day in June?  
Then, if ever, come perfect days.”

And the following verses contain a vigorous bit of moralizing:—

“For a cap and bells our lives we pay,  
Bubbles we buy with a whole soul's tasking;  
'Tis heaven alone that is given away,  
'Tis only God may be had for the asking.”

**470. “A Fable for Critics.”**—The same year appeared “A Fable for Critics,” a literary satire without the savagery of Byron’s “English Bards and Scotch Reviewers,” or the malignancy of Pope’s “Dunciad.” It is a humorous review of the leading American authors of the day; but beneath the fun there is a sober judgment that rarely erred in its estimates. Along with atrocious rhymes and barbarous puns, there are many felicitous characterizations. He calls Bryant, to whom he was scarcely just, an iceberg:—

“If he stir you at all, it is just, on my soul,  
Like being stirred up with the very North Pole.”

He hits off Poe as follows:—

“There comes Poe, with his raven, like Barnaby Rudge,  
Three-fifths of him genius, and two-fifths sheer fudge.”

**471. Self-Criticism.**—He was quite as severe to himself as to any of his contemporaries; and, as will be seen from the following lines, he was not blind to his own peculiarities:—

"There is Lowell, who's striving Parnassus to climb —  
With a whole bale of *isms* tied together with rime.  
He might get on alone, spite of brambles and boulders,  
But he can't with that bundle he has on his shoulders ;  
The top of the hill he will ne'er come nigh reaching,  
Till he learns the distinction 'twixt singing and preaching ;  
His lyre has some chords that would ring pretty well,  
But he'd rather by half make a drum of the shell,  
And rattle away till he's old as Methusalem,  
At the head of a march to the last New Jerusalem."

The poem is loose in construction and unsymmetrical in form, and it is to be regretted that the poet never thought it worth while to bring it into artistic shape. It was first published anonymously, but its authorship was soon fixed. Lowell was the only man in America who could have written it.

**472. Course of Lectures.** — A larger career was now opening before him. Up to the time of her death, in 1853, his wife, in their beautiful home at Elmwood, had stimulated him to high endeavor. Always fond of reading, and blessed with a capacious memory, he had acquired a wide range of knowledge. In the winter of 1854–55, he delivered before the Lowell Institute a course of twelve lectures on the British poets. Disdaining the arts of the popular orator, he placed his reliance for success, where alone it can permanently rest, on genuine merit. He read his lectures in an earnest, manly way ; and their learning, thought, critical insight, and poetic feeling gave to every discourse an indescribable charm.

**473. Successor to Longfellow.** — In 1855, on the resignation of Longfellow, he was appointed professor of modern languages at Harvard, with a leave of absence for two years, to study abroad. He resided chiefly at Dresden, and gave himself to a methodical course of reading in European literature. Like all men of large mould, he had an immense capacity for assimilation. When he returned to America in 1857, and entered upon his duties, he was not unworthy to occupy the chair of his illustrious predecessor. He was an admirable lecturer ; and while his ability commanded

the respect, his ready kindness won the affection, of the students. Harvard has never had, perhaps, a more popular professor.

**474. Editorial Labors.** — The year 1857 witnessed two important events in the life of Lowell. The first was his marriage to Miss Frances Dunlop of Portland, Me., who had superin-



LOWELL'S HOME, "ELMWOOD"

tended the education of his daughter during his absence abroad. The second was the establishment of the *Atlantic*, of which he became editor-in-chief. His contributions were in both prose and poetry, and were, it is needless to say, of a high order. He continued as editor till 1862, when he was succeeded by Mr. Fields. But his editorial career was not yet ended. In 1864 he took charge of the *North American Review*, of which he remained editor till 1873. He was particularly kind to young writers, and lost no opportunity to speak a word of encouragement.

**475. "Fireside Travels."** — In 1864 he published a volume in prose, entitled "Fireside Travels," containing "Cambridge

Thirty Years Ago," "A Moosehead Journal," and "Leaves from My Journal in Italy and Elsewhere." It is a delightful book, full of wit, wisdom, and exuberant fancy. The tide of a full, strong life is reflected in its pages. Here is a characteristic bit of description: "The chief feature of the place was its inns, of which there were five, with vast barns and courtyards, which the railroad was to make as silent and deserted as the palaces of Nimroud. Great white-topped wagons, each drawn by double files of six or eight horses, with its dusty bucket swinging from the hinder axle, and its grim bull-dog trotting silent underneath, or in midsummer panting on the lofty perch beside the driver (how elevated thither baffled conjecture), brought all the wares and products of the country to their mart and seaport in Boston. These filled the inn-yards, or were ranged side by side under broad-roofed sheds; and far into the night the mirth of their lusty drivers clamored from the red-curtained bar-room, while the single lantern, swaying to and fro in the black cavern of the stables, made a Rembrandt of the ostlers and horses below."

**476. "Under the Willows."** — "Under the Willows," a volume of poems published in 1869, exhibits Lowell's poetic genius at the zenith of its power. It is less luxuriant in manner, and its chaster form adds force to its wisdom and pathos. There is scarcely a poem that is not remarkable for some beauty. Sometimes it is a tender recollection of the past; again it is some weighty truth or telling apologue; or it is a bit of irresistible pathos or prophetic assertion of divine truth. The poems were composed at intervals through many years, according to his usual method: —

"Now, I've a notion, if a poet  
Beat up for themes, his verse will show it;  
I wait for subjects that hunt me,  
By day or night won't let me be,  
And hang about me like a curse,  
Till they have made me into verse."

**477. Noteworthy Poems.** — In "The First Snow-Fall" there is a fine touch of pathos: —

"Then, with eyes that saw not, I kissed her;  
 And she, kissing back, could not know  
 That *my* kiss was given to her sister,  
 Folded close under deepening snow."

The following triplet from "For an Autograph," is a noble summons to lofty purpose:—

"Greatly begin! though thou have time  
 But for a line, be that sublime,—  
 Not failure, but low aim, is crime."

"Mahmood the Image-Breaker" teaches the incomparable worth of human integrity:—

"Little were a change of station, loss of life or crown,  
 But the wreck were past retrieving, if the Man fell down."

**478. Commemoration Odes.** — The Commemoration Odes of Lowell are the best of their kind written in this country. Perhaps they have never been surpassed. He seized upon special occasions to pour forth a rich strain of patriotic reflection, eloquent thought, and poetic feeling and imagery. The "Ode Recited at the Harvard Commemoration," in memory of the ninety-three graduates who had died in the Civil War, appealed most strongly to the poet's heart. Among those who had lost their lives were eight relatives of the poet. As he recited the poem, it is said that his face, always expressive, was almost transfigured with the



"WASHINGTON ELM" AT CAMBRIDGE

glow of an inward light. Its exalted key is struck in the opening lines:—

“Weak-winged is song,  
Nor aims at that clear-ethered height  
Whither the brave deed climbs for light :  
We seem to do them wrong,  
Bringing our robin’s leaf to deck their hearse  
Who in warm life-blood wrote their nobler verse.”

The “Ode” read at the one hundredth anniversary of the fight at Concord bridge is an eloquent pæan of freedom. It pays a glowing tribute to “the embattled farmers”:—

“They were men  
Schooled the soul’s inward gospel to obey,  
Though leading to the lion’s den.”

“Under the Old Elm,” read at Cambridge on the hundredth anniversary of Washington’s taking command of the American army, eloquently commemorates the character and achievements of the “Father of his Country”:—

“Out of that scabbard sprang, as from its womb,  
Nebulous at first but hardening to a star,  
Through mutual share of sunburst and of gloom,  
The common faith that made us what we are.”

**479. “The Cathedral.”** — “The Cathedral” is Lowell’s longest poem. Somewhat uneven in its merits, it contains many noble passages. It might be made to illustrate nearly every prominent point in the poet’s character. As compared with his earlier writings, it reveals the presence of a slightly conservative tendency. The leading incidents of the poem are connected with a visit to the cathedral of Chartres. He was filled with admiration at the consecrated spirit of a former age that sought expression in such a miracle of stone:—

“I gazed abashed,  
Child of an age that lectures, not creates,  
Plastering our swallow-nests on the awful Past,.  
And twittering round the work of larger men,  
As we had builded what we but deface.”

His deep religious nature is evident throughout the poem, though his creed is larger than that of his Puritan ancestors. Softened by the touch of an all-embracing sympathy and charity, he finds that —

“God is in all that liberates and lifts,  
In all that humbles, sweetens, and consoles.”

**480. Wilful Caprice.** — In “The Cathedral” we have a striking instance of the wilful caprice with which his muse sometimes startles us. At the hotel in Chartres he met two Englishmen who mistook him for a Frenchman.

“My beard translated me to hostile French;  
So they, desiring guidance in the town,  
Half condescended to my baser sphere,  
And, clubbing in one mess their lack of phrase,  
Set their best man to grapple with the Gaul.  
‘Esker vous ate a nabitang?’ he asked:  
‘I never ate one; are they good?’ asked I;  
Whereat they stared, then laughed, and we were friends.”

Considered in the most favorable light, the poet’s wit on this occasion can hardly be said to display particular brilliancy; and to introduce the incident into a grave and elevated poem is a bit of freakishness that makes “the judicious grieve.”

**481. Prose Writings.** — Of Lowell’s prose writings, there is not space to speak in detail. The three volumes entitled “My Study Windows” and “Among My Books” (two volumes) are made up of essays. “My Study Windows” is of greatest general interest. It opens with three delightful papers entitled “My Garden Acquaintance,” “A Good Word for Winter,” and “On a

Certain Condescension in Foreigners." In these the keen wit, kindly humor, and shrewd observation of Lowell appear at their best. Of his various garden acquaintance, to give a single quotation, he says: "If they will not come near enough to me (as most of them will), I bring them close with an opera glass,—a much better weapon than a gun. I would not, if I could, convert them from their pretty pagan ways. The only one I sometimes have savage doubts about is the red squirrel. *I think* he oölogizes. *I know* he eats cherries (we counted five of them at one time in a single tree, the stones pattering down like the sparse hail that preludes a storm), and that he gnaws off the small ends of pears to get at the seeds. He steals the corn from under the noses of my poultry. But what would you have? He will come down upon the limb of the tree I am lying under till he is within a yard of me. He and his mate will scurry up and down the great black walnut for my diversion, chattering like monkeys. Can I sign his death-warrant who has tolerated me about his grounds so long? Not I. Let them steal, and welcome. I am sure I should, had I had the same bringing up and the same temptation. As for the birds, I do not believe there is one of them but does more good than harm; and of how many featherless bipeds can this be said?"

**482. An Eminent Critic.**—Lowell occupies a foremost place among American critics. For the critic's office he was eminently qualified, both by natural gifts and broad scholarship. The two volumes of "Among My Books" are devoted chiefly to elaborate studies of "Dryden," "Shakespeare Once More," "Dante," "Spenser," "Wordsworth," "Milton," and "Keats." In each case a wide range of reading is made to contribute its treasures. The essays, supplied with numerous foot-notes, are learned to a degree that is almost oppressive. Lowell displays a deep insight and great soundness of judgment. His style is rich in allusion. At times it is epigrammatic; and again it is not unlike his own description of Milton's style. "Milton's manner," he says, "is very grand. It is slow, it is stately, moving as in triumphal procession, with music, with historic banners, with spoils from

every time and region ; and captive epithets, like huge Sicambrians, thrust their broad shoulders between us and the pomp they decorate." Now and then his humor lights up a sentence or paragraph in the most unexpected way.

**483. Diplomatic Career.** — As a few other of our literary men, Lowell was appointed to represent this country abroad. His diplomatic career detracts nothing from his reputation. He was appointed minister to Spain in 1877, and three years later minister to England. Without any occasion to display great diplomatic gifts, he filled his post faithfully, and fostered international good feeling. In the social and literary circles of England his culture and genius gained for him a proud distinction.

**484. "Democracy and Other Addresses."** — Lowell was frequently called on for addresses. Among his works is a volume entitled "Democracy and Other Addresses." He was not an orator so much as a refined and scholarly speaker. He spoke in an earnest, conversational tone, depending upon the weight of his utterance to secure the attention and interest of his hearers. He made no use of gesture. He did not soar to the heights of impassioned utterance, of which we must believe him to have been capable. He did not move a great popular assembly, but to the scholarly and cultivated he was a delightful speaker.

**485. Death.** — Lowell lived beyond the allotted age of three score and ten. His latter years were sweetened by the tribute of honor and love which a great people united in paying him. He died Aug. 12, 1891, recognized at home and abroad as a man of high gifts and noble character. He is, perhaps, our best representative man of letters. An English critic has fairly expressed the feeling abroad : "No poetic note higher or deeper than his, no aspirations more firmly touched towards lofty issues, no voice more powerful for truth and freedom, have hitherto come to us from across the Atlantic."

## FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

The annotated selections, pages 555-575, include "What Mr. Robinson Thinks," "The Present Crisis," and "The Vision of Sir Launfal."

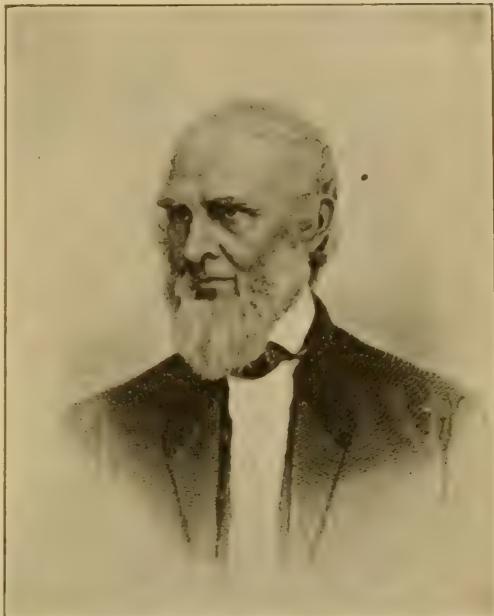
In addition the student should read "An Incident in a Railroad Car," "A Glance behind the Curtain," "The First Snow-Fall," "For an Autograph," "A Fable for Critics," "Mahmood the Image-Breaker," "The Courtin'," "The Pious Editor's Creed," "Under the Old Elm," and "Commemoration Ode" from Lowell's poems; from his prose, "My Garden Acquaintance," "A Good Word for Winter," and "On a Certain Condescension in Foreigners" — all from "My Study Windows."

Horace E. Scudder's "James Russell Lowell," Edward Everett Hale's "Lowell and His Friends," and F. H. Underwood's "James Russell Lowell."

For critical estimates consult the general bibliography and Poole's "Index," particularly W. D. Howells's "A Personal Retrospect," *Scribner*, September, 1900. E. C. Stedman's "Poets of America."

## *JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER*

**486. The Burns of New England.**—Whittier has been called the Burns of New England; and that title is not without justification. He owed the first awakening of his poetic talent to the Scottish bard; and, like him, he has cast a glory over the homely scenes of his native region. In the choice of his themes he is less a national than a sectional poet. Less cosmopolitan than Longfellow and Lowell, he is pre-eminently the poet of New England. It is the spirit, the legend, and the landscape of New England that are reflected in his verse.



JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER

**487. Ancestry and Early Home.**—John Greenleaf Whittier sprang from Quaker ancestry, and the memory of the wrongs inflicted upon his sect at an earlier day never left him. He was born near the town of Haverhill, Mass., Dec. 17, 1807. The house was an old one, surrounded by fields and woods; and in front of it, to use the poet's words, a brook "foamed, rippled, and laughed." The Merrimac River was not far away. He helped to till an unfriendly soil, and in his leisure hours he wandered over the hills or loitered along the streams.

**488. A Self-Made Man.** — Like Franklin, Whittier was a self-made man. His early education was limited to brief terms in the district school. He was fond of reading, but his father's library contained only a score of tedious volumes. For a number of years the Bible was his principal resource for history, poetry, and eloquence; and encouraged and aided by his mother, he made its literary and religious treasures a permanent possession.

**489. Nature his Teacher.** — In spite of the meagre advantages of his frugal home, as compared with our present opulence of books and papers, he had the wealth of exuberant life and observant eyes. Nature became his inspiring teacher. In "The Barefoot Boy," with its childhood memories, he says: —

"I was rich in flowers and trees,  
Humming-birds and honey-bees;  
For my sport the squirrel played,  
Plied the snouted mole his spade;  
For my taste the blackberry cone  
Purpled over hedge and stone;  
Laughed the brook for my delight  
Through the day and through the night."

**490. Poetic Fire Lighted.** — The monotony of the hospitable farmhouse was relieved now and then by the visits of peddlers. Strolling people were looked on more indulgently then than now. When Whittier was fourteen years old his first schoolmaster brought to the Quaker home a volume of Burns, from which he read, to the boy's great delight. It kindled the poetic fire within. "I begged him to leave the book with me," the poet said years afterwards, "and set myself at once to the task of mastering the glossary of the Scottish dialect at its close. This was about the first poetry I had ever read (with the exception of that of the Bible, of which I had been a close student), and it had a lasting influence upon me. I began to make rhymes myself, and to imagine stories and adventures."

**491. Poet and Cobbler.** — In 1826 Whittier made the acquaintance of William Lloyd Garrison, who exerted no small influence upon his subsequent career. Garrison had established the *Free Press* at Newburyport. A poem contributed by young Whittier so impressed him with its indications of genius that he visited the Quaker lad in his home, and warmly urged a cultivation of his talents. The visit was not fruitless. The gifted youth resolved



WHITTIER'S OLD HOME, HAVERHILL, MASSACHUSETTS

to obtain a better education; and to acquire the necessary means, which his father was not able to supply, he learned the art of shoemaking. In 1827 he entered the Academy in Haverhill and by his genial nature and his literary ability quickly attained a position of distinction.

**492. Newspaper Editing.** — After two terms at the academy and a brief interval of teaching, he served an apprenticeship to the literary craft by editing or contributing to several newspapers. His writings, both in prose and in poetry, attracted attention.

Without the breadth of culture enjoyed by some contemporary writers who afterwards became famous, he came to be regarded as a young man of great promise. "The culmination of that man's fame," the *New England Review* declared in 1829, "will be a proud period in the history of our literature."

**493. At Hartford.**—A wider field soon opened before him. In 1830 George D. Prentice gave up the editorial management of the *New England Weekly Review* of Hartford, and Whittier was called to succeed him. For a year and a half he edited the paper with ability and success. He avoided the coarse personalities which at that time disgraced American journalism. He was a strong advocate of temperance, freedom, and religion. A resolute heart beat under his quiet manner and sober Quaker dress. He published in the *Review* no fewer than forty-two poems, most of which he afterwards suppressed. But among those retained in his collected works are "The Frost Spirit," "The Cities of the Plain," and "The Vaudois Teacher." In 1832, on account of ill-health, Whittier severed his connection with the *Review*.

**494. Anti-Slavery Movement.**—He took an earnest and active part in the anti-slavery movement. He surrendered his literary ambition to what he believed the call of duty. He displayed the self-sacrificing heroism of a sincere reformer. In his own words:—

"From youthful hopes, — from each green spot  
Of young Romance and gentle Thought,  
Where storm and tumult enter not, —

From each fair altar, where belong  
The offerings Love requires of Song  
In homage to her bright-eyed throng, —

With soul and strength, with heart and hand,  
I turned to Freedom's struggling band, —  
To the sad Helots of our land."

In 1833 he published a strong pamphlet against slavery, entitled "Justice and Expediency; or, Slavery considered with a view to its Rightful and Effectual Remedy, Abolition." It was printed and circulated at his own expense, costing him a considerable part of his year's earnings.

**495. Mob Violence.** — In his anti-slavery agitation he more than once encountered mob violence in Massachusetts and New Hampshire. In 1837 he went to Philadelphia to write for the *Pennsylvania Freeman*, of which he became editor a few months later. It was issued from Pennsylvania Hall, a large building erected by the anti-slavery people of the city. The building was subsequently sacked and burned by a mob. But in spite of his loss, Whittier continued to issue his paper regularly, until he was forced to give up the enterprise by failing health. It was out of his own experience that he wrote in "The Preacher": —

"Never in custom's oilèd grooves  
The world to a higher level moves,  
But grates and grinds with friction hard  
On granite boulder and flinty shard."

**496. "Voices of Freedom."** — Unlike his friend Garrison, Whittier favored political action. He wished to re-enforce moral suasion with the ballot. He stoutly supported the several political organizations known successively as the Liberty party, Free-Soil party, and Republican party, which were opposed to slavery. During all these years of agitation, he took advantage of every occasion to send forth impassioned anti-slavery verse. In 1849 these poems were collected into a volume entitled "Voices of Freedom." Their vehemence, as in "Stanza," "Clerical Oppressors," "The Pastoral Letter," and "The Branded Hand," almost reaches fierceness. Though Longfellow and Lowell wrote notable anti-slavery poems, Whittier may justly be considered the laureate of the abolition movement.

**497. Literary Contributions.** — While engaged in the anti-slavery movement, Whittier did not wholly give up his purely

literary work. The family residence had been changed to Amesbury, and he depended on his pen for support. He was a valued contributor to several periodicals, among which were the *New England Magazine* and the *Democratic Review*. In these some of his best work appeared. "Mogg Megone" and "The Bridal of Pennacook" are Indian tales, chiefly noteworthy for their vivid description of New England scenery. Of the former Whittier did not have a high opinion, and sarcastically described it as "a big Injun strutting about in Walter Scott's plaid," which is not far from the truth. "Cassandra Southwick" is a justly admired ballad founded on the persecution of the Quakers in Massachusetts.

**498. Intense Democracy.** — Whittier was intensely democratic in his feelings. He did not believe in the divine right of any class to lord it over their fellow-men. Through all the disguises of toil, poverty, and sin, he recognized the innate worth and natural rights of man. In the poem "Democracy" he says: —

"By misery unrepelled, unawed  
    By pomp or power, thou seest a MAN  
In prince or peasant, — slave or lord, —  
    Pale priest, or swarthy artisan.

Through all disguise, form, place, or name,  
    Beneath the flaunting robes of sin,  
Through poverty and squalid shame,  
    Thou lookest on *the man* within.

On man, as man, retaining yet,  
    Howe'er debased, and soiled, and dim,  
The crown upon his forehead set, —  
    The immortal gift of God to him."

**499. "Songs of Labor."** — In harmony with this broad human sympathy, he wrote a series of poems, unsurpassed of their kind, to which he gave the name of "Songs of Labor." They are intended to show, —

"The unsung beauty hid life's common things below."

In these songs the labors of "The Shipbuilders," "The Shoe-makers," "The Drovers," "The Fishermen," "The Huskers," and "The Lumbermen," pass before us in idealized form.

**500. A Hidden Romance.** — Whittier was never married. But little of his poetry is inspired by love, the master motive of song. Yet there are indications, unmistakable and tender, that his life was not without its romance. The little poem "In School Days" is too natural and too charming to have been fiction: —

"He saw her lift her eyes; he felt  
    The soft hand's light caressing,  
And heard the tremble of her voice,  
    As if a fault confessing:

'I'm sorry that I spelt the word;  
    I hate to go above you,  
Because' — the brown eyes lower fell, —  
    'Because, you see, I love you.'"

And in "Memories" we have a fond picture of a later day: —

"I hear again thy low replies,  
I feel thine arm within my own,  
And timidly again arise  
The fringed lids of hazel eyes,  
With soft brown tresses overflown.  
Ah, memories of sweet summer eves,  
Of moonlit wave and willowy way,  
Of stars and flowers, and dewy leaves,  
And smiles and tones more dear than they."

**501. A Bard of Faith.** — Whittier does not belong to the bards of doubt. Like most of the strong singers of the present century, he recognized the divine presence as existent and operative in all things. His verse is filled with the cheer of hope and courage. In "The Reformer" he says: —

“But life shall on and upward go;  
 Th’ eternal step of Progress beats  
 To that great anthem, calm and slow,  
 Which God repeats.

Take heart! — the Waster builds again, —  
 A charmèd life old Goodness hath;  
 The tares may perish, — but the grain  
 Is not for death.

God works in all things; all obey  
 His first propulsion from the night:  
 Wake thou and watch! — the world is gray  
 With morning light.”

It was this faith that sustained him in the midst of detraction, violence, and loss. In “Barclay of Ury,” he exclaims: —

“Happy he whose inward ear  
 Angel comfortings can hear  
 O'er the rabble's laughter;  
 And while Hatred's fagots burn,  
 Glimpses through the smoke discern  
 Of the good hereafter.”

**502. Contributions to National Era.** — For a dozen years Whittier was a regular contributor to the *National Era*, an organ of the anti-slavery party established in 1847. In this paper appeared some of his most characteristic work, both in poetry and prose. His muse had gained in breadth of thought and sentiment. It was at this time he wrote: —

“I love the old melodious lays  
 Which softly melt the ages through,  
 The songs of Spenser’s golden days,  
 Arcadian Sidney’s silvery phrase,  
 Sprinkling our noon of time with freshest morning dew.”

Among the eighty poems contributed to the *National Era*, some of those needing special mention are “Tauler,” “Burns,”

“Kathleen,” “Stanzas for the Times,” “Trust,” “A Sabbath Scene,” “Calef in Boston,” “The Last Walk in Autumn,” “Ichabod,” and “Maud Muller.” They reach the higher levels of song, and give gemlike expression to some noble thought or sentiment. “Ichabod,” meaning, as Bible readers will remember, “the glory hath departed,” is a dirge over Webster for the compromising spirit shown by him in a speech in 1850. It is full of suppressed power.

**503. “The Last Walk in Autumn.”**—“The Last Walk in Autumn” is a beautiful study of New England landscape. It abounds in noble thought, and contains life-like portraits of Emerson, Bayard Taylor, and Sumner. At times, as the poet tells us, he longs for gentler skies and softer air; but after all he prefers the rigor of a colder clime:—

“Better to stem with heart and hand  
 The roaring tide of life, than lie,  
 Unmindful, on its flowery strand,  
 Of God’s occasions drifting by!  
 Better with naked nerve to bear  
 The needles of this goading air,  
 Than, in the lap of sensual ease, forego  
 The godlike power to do, the godlike aim to know.”

**504. Prose Writing.**—Among the prose contributions to the *National Era* was a series of biographical studies, “Bunyan,” “Andrew Marvell,” “Richard Baxter,” and others, entitled “Old Portraits,” and “Margaret Smith’s Journal in the Province of Massachusetts Bay, 1678-9.” The latter is a kind of historical novel, written in the antique style belonging to the period it describes. It introduces the leading characters and incidents of the time, and reproduces the old colonial life in a very realistic way.

**505. “Home Ballads.”**—In 1860 appeared a volume of “Home Ballads, Poems, and Lyrics,” which contains a number of notable pieces. “Skipper Ireson’s Ride,” with its refrain and pathetic conclusion, is well known:—

"So with soft relentings and rude excuse,  
 Half scorn, half pity, they cut him loose,  
 And gave him a cloak to hide him in,  
 And left him alone with his shame and sin.

Poor Floyd Ireson, for his hard heart,  
 Tarred and feathered and carried in a cart  
 By the women of Marblehead."

In "The Shadow and the Light" the poet seeks an answer to the immemorial problem of evil:—

"O, why and whither? — God knows all;  
 I only know that he is good,  
 And that whatever may befall  
 Or here or there, must be the best that could.

For he is merciful as just;  
 And so, by faith correcting sight,  
 I bow before his will, and trust,  
 Howe'er they seem, he doeth all things right."

**506. Beauty of Labor.** — In "Times," written for an agricultural and horticultural exhibition, the beauty and blessedness of labor are finely presented:—

"Give fools their gold, and knaves their power;  
 Let fortune's bubbles rise and fall;  
 Who sows a field, or trains a flower,  
 Or plants a tree, is more than all.

For he who blesses most is blest;  
 And God and man shall own his worth  
 Who toils to leave as his bequest  
 An added beauty to the earth."

**507. The Civil War.** — The Civil War was repugnant to Whittier's Quaker principles. He looked on war as murder; and his preference was to let the South secede, and work out her destiny as a slave-holding country. But he was not an indifferent specta-

tor when once the issue was joined. The collection of songs, "In War Time," is pervaded by a sad yet trustful spirit:—

"The future's gain  
Is certain as God's truth ; but, meanwhile, pain  
Is bitter, and tears are salt ; our voices take  
A sober tone ; our very household songs  
Are heavy with a nation's griefs and wrongs ;  
And innocent mirth is chastened for the sake  
Of the brave hearts that nevermore shall beat,  
The eyes that smile no more, the unreturning feet."

He rejoiced at the freedom that at last came to the negro:—

"Not as we hoped ; — but what are we ?  
Above our broken dreams and plans  
God lays, with wiser hand than man's,  
The corner-stones of liberty."

The best known of his war poems is "Barbara Frietchie," which vividly describes an incident that never happened. After the termination of the war, Whittier favored a magnanimous policy towards the South, and desired that there might be "no unnecessary hangings to gratify an evil desire of revenge."

**508.** "Snow-Bound." — "Snow-Bound," a winter idyl, is an exquisite description of country life in New England two generations ago. It portrays the early home of the poet, showing us its modest interior, and giving us portraits of its various inmates. After the boding storm had buried every object beneath the snow:—

"A prompt, decisive man, no breath  
Our father wasted : 'Boys, a path !'"

At night the spacious fireplace was heaped with wood ;

"Then, hovering near,  
We watched the first red blaze appear,  
Heard the sharp crackle, caught the gleam  
On whitewashed wall and sagging beam,  
Until the old, rude-furnished room  
Burst, flower-like, into rosy bloom."

**509. Family Portraits.** — Whittier's mother was a woman of good sense, native refinement, and benign face. Here is her portrait: —

“Our mother, while she turned her wheel,  
Or run the new-knit stocking-heel,  
Told how the Indian hordes came down  
At midnight on Cocheco town,  
And how her own great-uncle bore  
His cruel scalp-mark to fourscore.  
Recalling, in her fitting phrase,  
So rich and picturesque and free  
(The common unrhymed poetry  
Of simple life and country ways),  
The story of her early days, —  
She made us welcome to her home.”

Another inmate is thus sketched: —

“Our uncle, innocent of books,  
Was rich in lore of fields and brooks.

. . . . .

In moons and tides and weather wise,  
He reads the clouds as prophecies,  
And foul or fair could well divine,  
By many an occult hint and sign,  
Holding the cunning-warded keys  
To all the woodcraft mysteries.”

The maiden aunt is tenderly drawn: —

“The sweetest woman ever Fate  
Perverse denied a household mate,  
Who, lonely, homeless, not the less  
Found peace in love's unselfishness.”

Of his sister Mary the poet says: —

“There, too, our elder sister plied  
Her evening task the stand beside;

A full, rich nature, free to trust,  
 Truthful and almost sternly just,  
 Impulsive, earnest, prompt to act,  
 And make her generous thought a fact,  
 Keeping with many a light disguise  
 The secret of self-sacrifice."

Of his sister Elizabeth, a noble woman of poetic gifts, he thus speaks:—

"As one who held herself a part  
 Of all she saw, and let her heart  
 Against the household bosom lean,  
 Upon the motley-braided mat  
 Our youngest and our dearest sat,  
 Lifting her large, sweet, asking eyes."

Of other portraits and scenes in this admirable poem, which deserves to rank with "The Deserted Village" and "The Cotter's Saturday Night," there is not space to speak.

**510. "The Tent on the Beach."** — "The Tent on the Beach," published in 1867, somewhat resembles Longfellow's "Tales of a Wayside Inn," or Chaucer's "Canterbury Tales," in its structure. The poet and his two friends, Bayard Taylor and James T. Fields, encamping on the seashore, enliven their sojourn with tales of the olden time. The portraits of the party are skilfully drawn, but most interesting of all is the poet's sketch of himself:—

"And one there was, a dreamer born,  
 Who, with a mission to fulfil,  
 Had left the Muses' haunts to turn  
 The crank of an opinion mill,  
 Making his rustic reed of song  
 A weapon in the war with wrong,  
 Yoking his fancy to the breaking plough  
 That beam-deep turned the soil for truth to spring and grow."

Of the nine stories related in "The Tent on the Beach," all but two refer to New England themes.

**511. Declining Years.** — Though troubled with increasing infirmity, especially with deafness, Whittier wore old age gracefully. He continued to write to the last. Many of his later poems are pervaded by a deep religious spirit. Several of them possess an autobiographic interest, as expressly setting forth the poet's views of God and immortality. A profound faith took away his dread of death; and in "The Eternal Goodness" he says: —

"And so beside the Silent Sea  
I wait the muffled oar;  
No harm from Him can come to me  
On ocean or on shore.

I know not where His islands lift  
Their fronded palms in air;  
I only know I cannot drift  
Beyond His love and care."

A similar trust finds expression in "My Birthday." It is repeated in the pathetic lines "What the Traveler Said at Sunset": —

"The shadows grow and deepen round me,  
I feel the dew-fall in the air;  
The muezzin of the darkening thicket,  
I hear the night-thrush call to prayer.

I go to find my lost and mourned for  
Safe in Thy sheltering goodness still,  
And all that hope and faith foreshadow  
Made perfect in Thy holy will."

**512. Characteristics of his Poetry.** — The leading characteristics of Whittier's poetry may be recognized in what has already been presented. We miss, for the most part, a classic finish of style. His verse is vital rather than statuesque. Sometimes we meet with false accents and faulty rhymes. He does not

treat of the great questions started by modern research, nor undertake to solve existing social problems. From the start he takes his stand in the region of faith, which finds a solution of all problems in the love of God. He loved nature; and while his observation was confined chiefly to a part of New England, he has given us landscape pictures of almost matchless beauty. One of the charms of his verse comes from its sincerity. He was no mere artist in verse, seeking themes with prosaic calculation, and then polishing them into a cold, artificial lustre. With him poetry was not so much an end as a means. He used it as his principal weapon in his battle against wrong. He made it the medium of passionate truth. His verse has a vitality that brings it home to the hearts of men, inspiring them with new strength, courage, and hope.

**513. Personal Traits.** — Modest to a marked degree, Whittier did not fully appreciate the grandeur of his life nor the worth of his verse. He had the true dignity of a noble nature. While scorning notoriety, he valued genuine sympathy. The loving spirit of his verse was exemplified in his daily life. He was sympathetic and helpful. His friendships were constant and beautiful. In social life he had a kindly humor that rarely found a place in his earnest verse. His genius was not eccentric. He was a man of conviction of purpose, of courage. He preferred a life of earnest struggle to a life of ignoble ease, — a sentiment to which he gave expression in the beautiful autobiographic poem “My Birthday” :—

“Better than self-indulgent years  
The outflung heart of youth,  
Than pleasant songs in idle years  
The tumult of the truth.”

**514. Closing Scene.** — His last years, as was fitting, were serene. After many stormy years, he had at last won an honored place in the literature of our country, and, what is better, in the hearts of our people. The wisest and best delighted to do him

honor. His home at Danvers, Mass., became a place of pilgrimage. After reaching a ripe old age, he passed away Sept. 7, 1892. In the slightly altered words of Longfellow, addressed to the "Hermit of Amesbury" on his seventieth birthday:—

"Thou too hast heard  
Voices and melodies from beyond the gates,  
And spoken only when thy soul was stirred."

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

*The annotated selections, pages 576-593, include "Memories," "The Ship-Builders," "Barclay of Ury," "Maud Muller," and "Taufer."*

In addition the student should read "The Barefoot Boy," "The Preacher," "Democracy," "The Shoemakers," "In School Days," "The Reformer," "Burns," "A Sabbath Scene," "Ichabod," "The Last Walk in Autumn," "Skipper Ireson's Ride," "Barbara Frietchie," "The Shadow and the Light," "The Eternal Goodness," and "Snow-Bound."

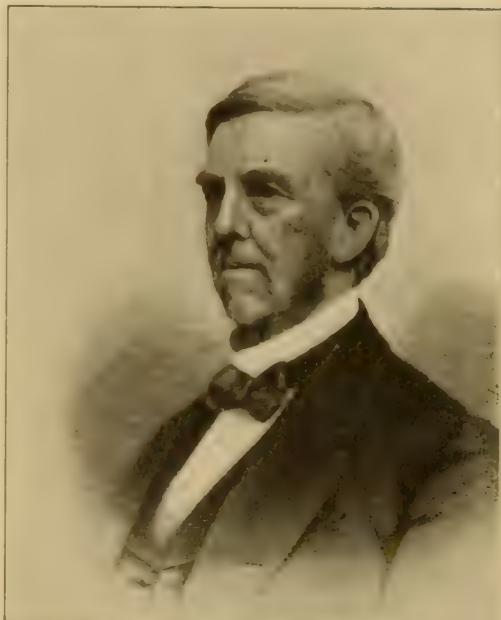
Samuel T. Pickard's "Life and Letters of John Greenleaf Whittier"; M. A. Kennedy's "Life, Genius, and Writings of Whittier"; and F. H. Underwood's "John Greenleaf Whittier."

For critical estimates consult the general bibliography and Poole's "Index," especially George Woodberry's review in *The Atlantic*, November, 1892; E. C. Stedman's "Poets of America," and Lowell's "Fable for Critics."

## *OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES*

**515. Popularity of his Writings.**—Holmes was the latest survivor of the remarkable group of writers who may be said to have created American literature. He was not the greatest of the group; but there is scarcely any other whose works are more widely read. Under the present stress of life in America, there are very many persons who would rather be amused than instructed. When an author succeeds in both amusing and instructing, he has a double claim upon the grateful affection of the public. This twofold end Holmes achieved more fully than any of his contemporaries.

**516. Independent Aloofness.**—He stood aloof, in a remarkable degree, from the great movements in which the other New England writers of his day were more or less engaged. He had but little sympathy with transcendentalism. Instead of depending upon an “inner light,” he placed his reliance, with true Baconian spirit, in observation, evidence, investigation. When, as rarely happened, he attempted to be profound in his speculations, he was not notably successful. Conservative in temperament,



OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES

he did not aspire to the rôle of a social reformer. His indifference to the abolition movement brought upon him the censure of some of its leaders. Unswayed by external influences, he steadfastly adhered to the path he had marked out for himself.

**517. Brilliant Versatility.** — He was one of the most brilliant and versatile of men. Though far more earnest than is commonly supposed, he was not dominated, as was Emerson, by a profound philosophy. His poetry has not the power that springs from a great moral purpose. He did not concentrate all his energies upon a single department of literature or science. He was a physician, lecturer, poet, essayist, novelist; and such were his brilliant gifts that he attained eminence in them all.

**518. Distrust of Men of Wit.** — Right or wrong, most persons distrust the judgment and earnestness of a man of wit. Accustomed to laugh at his play of fancy, they feel more or less injured when he talks in a serious strain. They seek his society for entertainment rather than for counsel. Holmes well understood this popular prejudice; but he was far too faithful to his genius to affect a solemnity he did not feel. In his delightful poem "Nux Postcœnatica," he excuses himself from a public dinner: —

"Besides — my prospects — don't you know that people won't employ  
A man that wrongs his manliness by laughing like a boy?  
And suspect the azure blossom that unfolds upon a shoot,  
As if wisdom's old potato could not flourish at its root?"

**519. A Believer in Heredity.** — Holmes was a firm believer in heredity. No small part of his writings is devoted to a discussion or illustration of inherited tendencies. Yet he did not take a special interest in his own ancestry, though they were of the best New England stock. He had, to use his own words, "a right to be grateful for a probable inheritance of good instincts, a good name, and a bringing up in a library where he bumped about among books from the time when he was hardly taller than one of his father's or grandfather's folios." He was born in Cam-

bridge, Aug. 29, 1809; another *annus mirabilis*, it has been called, as the birth-year also of Lincoln, Darwin, Tennyson, and Gladstone. His father, the Rev. Abiel Holmes, was a Congregational minister of scholarly tastes and attainments. His "Annals of America" is a careful and useful history. Holmes's mother is described as a bright, vivacious woman, of small figure, social tastes, and sprightly manners — characteristics that reappeared in the son.

**520. Autobiographical Notes.** — In his "Autobiographical Notes," only too brief and fragmentary, Holmes has given us glimpses of his childhood. He was a precocious child, thoughtful beyond his years. He made a good record at school, and was fond of reading. Among his favorite books was Pope's "Homer," which never lost its charm for him. His reading was fragmentary. "I have always read *in* books," he says, "rather than *through* them, and always with more profit from the books I read *in* than the books I read *through*; for when I set out to read *through* a book I always felt that I had a task before me; but when I read *in* a book it was the page or the paragraph that I wanted, and which left its impression, and became a part of my intellectual furniture."

**521. Class of '29.** — After a preparatory course at Andover, Holmes entered Harvard College in 1825, graduating four years later in what became "the famous class of '29." There are scant records of his college days. Whatever may have been his devotion to study, it is certain that he was not indifferent to convivial pleasures. His talent for rhyming led to his appointment as class poet. The class feeling was stronger in those days than it is now; and, after a time, the "class of '29" held annual dinners in Boston. No one entered into these reunions with greater zest than Holmes. Beginning with the year 1851, he furnished for twenty-six consecutive years one or more poems for each reunion. The best known of these class poems is "Bill and Joe," which contains, in the poet's happiest manner, mingled humor and pathos:—

"Come, dear old comrade, you and I  
Will steal an hour from days gone by,  
The shining days when life was new,  
And all was bright with morning dew,  
The lusty days of long ago  
When you were Bill and I was Joe."

**522. Student of Medicine.** — After graduation, Holmes began the study of law, and attended lectures for a year. But he found that he was on the wrong track, and gave it up for medicine. He attended two courses of lectures in Boston, and then went abroad to complete his course. He took time to do some sight-seeing, and visited England, Holland, Germany, Switzerland, and Italy. But he spent most of his two years abroad in Paris, where he gave himself diligently to professional study. He had exalted ideas of his profession — a little better than he carried out. "Medicine," he said, "is the most difficult of sciences and the most laborious of arts. It will task all your powers of body and mind, if you are faithful to it. Do not dabble in the muddy sewers of politics, nor linger by the enchanted streams of literature, nor dig in far-off fields for the hidden waters of alien sciences. The great practitioners are generally those who concentrate all their powers on their business."

**523. "Old Ironsides."** — There is an incident in his life while yet a law-student that must not be passed over. He had been writing for *The Collegian* a good many verses that were well received. Indeed, to borrow his phrase, he had become infected with the "lead-poisoning of type-metal." One day he read that the Navy Department had issued orders for the breaking up of the old frigate *Constitution*, then lying at Charleston. His soul was deeply stirred; and, seizing a scrap of paper, he dashed off the passionate lines of "Old Ironsides": —

"Ay, tear her tattered ensign down!  
Long has it waved on high,  
And many an eye has danced to see  
That banner in the sky;

Beneath it rang the battle shout,  
And burst the cannon's roar; —  
The meteor of the ocean air  
Shall sweep the clouds no more!"

The stirring words of the poem, copied in the press throughout the country, found a response in the heart of the people. Under the sudden blaze of indignation, the astonished Secretary revoked his order, and the gallant vessel was spared for half a century. The result was a remarkable achievement for a young man who had just attained his majority.

**524. Practising Physician.** — In 1836 Holmes opened an office in Boston as a practising physician. He was sympathetic, pains-taking, and conscientious; and in a reasonable time he gained a fair practice. In spite of his fondness for literature, he continued his professional studies with unusual diligence and success. He won several prizes by medical essays. But his scholarly tastes fitted him better for a medical lecturer than for a practitioner; and in 1838 he was much gratified to be elected Professor of Anatomy at Dartmouth College, — a position that required his presence there only three months of the session.

**525. First Volume of Verse.** — The year he opened his office in Boston, he published his first volume of verse. From a professional standpoint it was, perhaps, an unwise thing to do. People are instinctively averse to going to poets for prescriptions. But he was far from indifferent to his reputation as a poet. As between the two, he would probably have chosen to go down to posterity famed for his gifts in poetry rather than for his skill in medicine. The slender volume contained several pieces that have since remained general favorites. His poetic powers matured early; and, among all the productions of his subsequent years, there is nothing better than "The Last Leaf" — that inimitable combination of humor and pathos. One of its stanzas is a perfect gem: —

"The mossy marbles rest  
On the lips that he has prest  
In their bloom,

And the names he loved to hear  
Have been carved for many a year  
On the tomb."

His jolly humor nowhere else finds better expression than in "My Aunt," "The September Gale," and "The Height of the Ridiculous."

**526. A Worthy Helpmeet.** — In 1840, the year his connection with Dartmouth College ceased, Holmes thought himself well enough established to end his bachelorhood. His tastes were strongly domestic. Accordingly, he married Miss Amelia Lee Jackson, a gentle, affectionate, considerate woman, who appreciated her husband's talents, and, with a noble devotion, helped him to make the most of them. For nearly fifty years her delicate tact shielded him from annoyances, and her skilful management relieved him of domestic cares.

**527. Professor in Harvard.** — In 1847 Holmes was elected Professor of Anatomy and Physiology in Harvard University. The chair was afterwards divided, and he had charge of anatomy. He held this position for the long period of thirty-five years. He recognized the danger of falling into an unprogressive routine. "I have noticed," he wrote to a friend, "that the wood of which academic *fauteuils* are made has a narcotic quality, which occasionally renders their occupants somnolent, lethargic, or even comatose." But he escaped this danger; and, taking a deep interest in his department, he remained a wide-awake, progressive teacher to the end. His lectures were illuminated with a coruscating humor that made them peculiarly interesting.

**528. A Popular Lecturer.** — About the middle of the century the popular lecture was in great vogue in New England. Men of distinguished ability did not disdain this means of disseminating wisdom and replenishing their pockets. Like Emerson, Holmes made lecturing tours. Though not imposing in person nor gifted in voice, he was much sought after for his unfailing vivacity and wit. In the "Autocrat" he makes a humorous reference to his

experience as a lecturer. "Family men," he says, "get dreadfully homesick. In the remote and bleak village the heart returns to the red blaze of the logs in one's fireplace at home."

'There are his young barbarians all at play.'

No, the world has a million roosts for a man, but only one nest."

**529. "Autocrat of the Breakfast Table."** — The founding of *The Atlantic Monthly*, the name of which he suggested, was an important event in the life of Holmes. He was engaged to write for it; and the result was "The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table," perhaps the best of all his works. He here revealed himself as a charming writer of prose. The "Autocrat" talks delightfully on a hundred different subjects, presenting with a careless grace and irrepressible humor the accumulated wisdom of years of observation and study. Nothing is too small or too great for his reflections. "There are few books," as George William Curtis well said, "that leave more distinctly the impression of a mind teeming with riches of many kinds. It is, in the Yankee phrase, thoroughly wide-awake. There is no languor, and it permits none in the reader, who must move along the page warily, lest in the gay profusion of the grove unwittingly defrauding himself of delight, he miss some flower half-hidden, some gem chance-dropped, some darting bird."

**530. Poems of the "Autocrat."** — Interspersed through the brilliant talk of the "Autocrat" are nearly a score of poems, partly humorous and partly serious. Several of these rank among the poet's choicest productions. A special charm is given to each poem by its setting. "The Chambered Nautilus" was Holmes's favorite among all his poems. "Booked for immortality" was Whittier's criticism the moment he read it. The last stanza gives beautiful expression to the aspiration of a noble spirit: —

"Build thee more stately mansions, O my soul,  
As the swift seasons roll !  
Leave thy low-vaulted past !

Let each new temple, nobler than the last,  
Shut thee from heaven with a dome more vast,  
Till thou at length art free,  
Leaving thine outgrown shell by life's unresting sea."

The humorous poem "Contentment" embodied, as he tells us, "the subdued and limited desires of his maturity":—

"Little I ask; my wants are few;  
I only wish a hut of stone,  
(A *very plain* brown stone will do,)  
That I may call my own;—  
And close at hand is such a one,  
In yonder street that fronts the sun."

Other poems from the "Autocrat" deserving special mention are "Musa," "What We All Think," "Latter-Day Warnings," "Æstivation," and, above all these, "The Deacon's Master-piece."

**531. The Saturday Club.** — About the time the *Atlantic* was founded, the Saturday Club came into existence, and numbered among its members Emerson, Hawthorne, Longfellow, Lowell, Whittier, Motley, Agassiz, and other distinguished literary men of Boston and Cambridge. They dined together the last Saturday of every month. A more brilliant club had not existed since the days of Johnson and Goldsmith. Holmes took great pride in it, and added greatly to its festive meetings. He was a prince of talkers. His wise, witty, genial, vivacious talk is said to have been even better than his books. He called talking "one of the fine arts." He probably had the Saturday Club in mind when, in the "Autocrat," he defined an intellectual banquet as "that carnival-shower of questions and replies and comments, large axioms bowled over the mahogany like bomb-shells from professional mortars, and explosive wit dropping its trains of many-colored fire, and the mischief-making rain of *bon-bons* pelting everybody that shows himself."

**532. Laureate of Boston.** — Holmes was strongly attached to Boston, and was really its poet laureate. He playfully said that the "Boston State House is the hub of the solar system," and in his heart half believed it. He received a proud and affectionate recognition from the city. He was expected to grace every great festive occasion with his presence, and to contribute a poem to its enjoyment. The number of these occasional pieces is surprising; they form no inconsiderable part of his poetical works. Of their kind they are unsurpassed. Year after year Holmes met the demand upon him with unfailing freshness and vigor. But it goes without saying that *vers de société* does not belong to the highest order of poetry. It does not sound the deeper notes of song, nor entitle the poet, no matter how brilliant may be his verse, to rank with those "to whom poetry, for its own sake, has been a passion and belief."

**533. Theological Interest.** — Holmes was strongly drawn to theological subjects. It may be true, as has been suggested, that he inherited "ecclesiastical pugnacity"; but it was not exercised in defending the ecclesiastical beliefs and institutions of his ancestors. A theological thread runs through nearly all his prose writings; and his uniform antipathy to what he believed to be erroneous creeds does more than anything else to give them unity. Yet at heart he was a religious man. His anchor was "trust in God." He held to the doctrine of immortality. He looked upon this world as a training-school. In his "Autobiographical Notes," written in his old age, he says: "This colony of the universe is an educational institution so far as the human race is concerned. On this theory I base my hopes for myself and my fellow-creatures. If, in the face of all the so-called evil to which I cannot close my eyes, I have managed to retain a cheerful optimism, it is because this educational theory is at the basis of my working creed."

**534. "The Professor at the Breakfast Table."** — "The Professor at the Breakfast Table," published in 1859, is devoted chiefly to a discussion of theological subjects. Whatever may be thought

of the "Professor's" views, there can be no question about the confidence and skill with which they are presented. The *dramatis personæ*, if one may use the phrase, are interesting; and the death-scene of the Little Gentleman is the most pathetic incident in all Holmes's writings. Judged from an artistic standpoint, the "Professor" is somewhat below the "Autocrat." It is less spontaneous, being written largely, one might think, to relieve the author's mind of a theological burden. Or, to borrow his own words, "The first juice that runs of itself from the grapes comes from the heart of the fruit, and tastes of the pulp only; when the grapes are squeezed in the press, the flow betrays the flavor of the skin."

**535. "The Poet at the Breakfast Table."** — The third and last of the Breakfast Table series was "The Poet at the Breakfast Table," which appeared in 1873. It is hazardous to attempt to repeat successes; but the result justified what Holmes called his audacity. The "Poet" is a little more serious than his predecessors; but while he is perceptibly inferior to them in novelty and vivacity, he is still delightful. The volume contains in successive cantos "Wind-Clouds and Star-Drifts," Holmes's longest and most ambitious poem. "This poem," he says, "holds a good deal of self-communing, and gave me the opportunity of expressing some thoughts and feelings not to be found elsewhere in my writings." Shall we accept the creeds of "sad-eyed hermits" and "angry conclaves"?

"Ah, not from these the listening soul can hear  
The Father's voice that speaks itself divine!  
Love must be still our Master; till we learn  
What he can teach us of a woman's heart,  
We know not His, whose love embraces all."

**536. Two "Medicated Novels."** — Holmes's two principal novels, "Elsie Venner" which appeared in 1861, and "The Guardian Angel" which appeared in 1867, belong to the class of fiction with a purpose. The first was designed to illustrate the effects

of a powerful pre-natal influence; the other, the law of heredity. They have been spoken of, much to the author's chagrin, as "medicated novels." The scenes are laid in New England, the manners of which are portrayed with graphic realism. These novels have been criticised as crude in form; but, in spite of defect in plot, they have been widely read. They will, no doubt, be less read as interest in their main theme declines; but "*The Guardian Angel*," the better of the two books, will long be deservedly popular for its humor and wisdom.

**537. Writer of Biographies.** — Holmes did not have much confidence in the biographer's art. "I should like to see," he says in "*The Poet at the Breakfast Table*," "any man's biography with corrections and emendations by his ghost." But, in spite of this distrust, he wrote two popular biographies, one of Motley, the other of Emerson. Motley was one of his most intimate friends; and it was not unnatural, therefore, that the biography, which was published in 1878, should bear somewhat the character of a tribute. His temperament hardly qualified him for writing the life of Emerson. He was not inclined toward transcendentalism; and, as he acknowledged, he was "a late comer as an admirer of the Concord poet and philosopher." But, as in all his writings, he gave himself conscientiously to the task. A keen analytical spirit took the place of a profound sympathy. The biography, which appeared in 1884, is more satisfactory to the general public than to the students of Emerson. It is interesting, and at times brilliant; but somehow one feels the absence of a perfectly sympathetic treatment.

**538. Visit to England.** — In 1882, after an incumbency of thirty-five years, he resigned his professorship. Four years later he made a visit abroad, spending nearly all his time in England. He was warmly received in London society. "He is enjoying himself immensely," wrote Lowell, "and takes as keen interest in everything as he would have done at twenty. I almost envy him this freshness of genius. Everybody is charmed with him, as it is natural they should be." He was honored by the

universities of Edinburgh, Cambridge, and Oxford with degrees. The observations of his brief stay abroad he embodied in "Our Hundred Days in Europe."

**539. "Over the Teacups."** — Though now considerably beyond the allotted limit of human life, Holmes did not give up his literary work. In addition to the biography of Emerson, he wrote a third novel, "A Mortal Antipathy," which fell considerably below his previous efforts in that line. "Over the Teacups," a work after the manner of the Breakfast Table series, was written when he had passed his eightieth year. It possesses a pathetic interest. The exuberant wit and brilliancy of his earlier works are largely replaced by the reminiscent soberness of age. "Teacups," he said, "are not coffee-cups. They do not hold so much. Their pallid infusion is but a feeble stimulant compared with the black decoction served at the morning board." Yet it was a pleasure for him to write; it gave him occupation in the loneliness of age, and kept him in relation with his fellow-beings. The successive papers were kindly received, a fact that gave him great satisfaction. "Over the Teacups" contains "The Broomstick Train," a poem in which the old-time fancy and lightness are again apparent. It is not unworthy to be placed by the side of "How the Old Horse Won the Bet," "Grandmother's Story of Bunker Hill Battle," and other of his best pieces.

**540. Last Years.** — But the end was now near, not unheralded by gently failing faculties. His last days were made as happy as possible by the affectionate remembrance and tender consideration of a large circle of friends. He was spared the trial of protracted illness. He was able to take his usual walks up to a few days before his death. He passed away painlessly in his chair, Oct. 7, 1894. Numberless loving tributes were paid to his memory on both sides of the Atlantic.

**541. Personal Characteristics.** — Holmes was an interesting and lovable man, genial, brilliant, witty, and yet deeply earnest withal. His personality is reflected in his books in a rare degree. Whatever the presiding genius at the Breakfast Table may be

called, — Autocrat, Professor, Poet, — we know that it is Holmes himself that is speaking.

“For though he changes dress and name,  
The man beneath is still the same,  
Laughing or sad, by fits and starts,  
One actor in a dozen parts,  
And whatsoe’er the mask may be,  
The voice assures us, *This is he.*”

He might be called the most human of our men of letters. He delighted in touching life at many points. He had the gift of mechanical ingenuity, and always liked to have something to tinker at. He invented the stereoscope, out of which, had he sought to do so, he might have made a fortune. He was fond of boating; and the description he gives of his fleet in the “Autocrat,” was not all fiction. He was fond of a good horse; as he said, —

“An easy gait — two, forty-five —  
Suits me; I do not care; —  
Perhaps for just a *single spurt*,  
Some seconds less would do no hurt.”

**542. Broad Sympathies.** — He felt a broad sympathy with his fellow-men; and, as he felt kindly towards them, he took it for granted that they would be interested in what he wrote. “I do not know,” he said, “what special gifts have been granted or denied me; but this I know, that I am like so many others of my fellow-creatures, that when I smile, I feel as if they must; when I cry, I think their eyes fill; and it always seems to me that when I am most truly myself, I come nearest to them, and am surest being listened to by the brothers and sisters of the larger family into which I was born so long ago.” This broad and tender sympathy will long give him an uncommon hold on the hearts of men.

## FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

*The annotated selections, pages 594-608, include "Old Iron-sides," "The Last Leaf," "The Height of the Ridiculous," "The Chambered Nautilus," "Contentment," and "The Deacon's Masterpiece."*

In addition the student should read "My Aunt," "The September Gale," "Dorothy Q.," "Bill and Joe," "Latter Day Warnings," "Æstivation," "Homesick in Heaven," "The Broomstick Train," "How the Old Horse Won the Bet," "Grandmother's Story of Bunker Hill Battle" from Holmes's poems.

Of his prose works "The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table" and "The Guardian Angel" are recommended.

John T. Morse's "Life and Letters of Oliver Wendell Holmes" (2 vols.); W. S. Kennedy's "Oliver Wendell Holmes."

For critical estimates consult the general bibliography and Poole's "Index." Edward Everett Hale's "Lowell and His Friends"; E. C. Stedman's "Poets of America."

## *SECOND NATIONAL PERIOD*

---

### PROMINENT WRITERS

**LYMAN ABBOTT.** Born in Massachusetts in 1835. A clergyman, editor, and author of large influence. Editor of *The Outlook*, and author of various religious books of liberal spirit, among which are "Jesus of Nazareth," "A Study in Human Nature," "In Aid of Faith," "Evolution of Christianity," "Christianity and Social Problems," "The Life and Literature of the Ancient Hebrews," etc.

**HENRY ADAMS.** Born in Massachusetts in 1838. Editor *North American Review*, 1870-1876. Historical writer. Author of "Life and Writings of Albert Gallatin," "John Randolph," "Historical Essays," etc.

**GEORGE ADE.** Born in Indiana in 1866. A witty and satirical writer. Author of numerous popular stories and plays including "People You Knew," "Breaking into Society," "The College Widow," and "Fables in Slang."

**LOUISA MAY ALCOTT** (1832-1888). One of our best writers for young people. Author of "Little Men," "An Old-Fashioned Girl," "Eight Cousins," "Under the Lilacs," etc.

**THOMAS BAILEY ALDRICH** (1836-1909). Born in New Hampshire. A writer of interesting stories and polished lyric verse. Editor of various periodicals, including *The Atlantic Monthly*. Author of "The Ballad of Babie Bell and Other Poems," "Poems," "The Story of a Bad Boy," "Marjorie Daw, and Other People," "Prudence Palfrey," "The Stillwater Tragedy," etc. (See text.)

**JAMES LANE ALLEN.** Born in Kentucky in 1849. At one time professor in Bethany College, West Virginia, but since 1886 has given himself to literature. Among his works, two or three of which have been quite popular, are "Flute and Violin," "A Kentucky Cardinal," "A Summer in Arcady," "The Choir Invisible," "The Reign of Law," "The Mettle of the Pasture," etc.

**GERTRUDE F. ATHERTON.** Born in California, 1859. Has lived abroad much of the time. Among her numerous works are "American Wives and English Husbands," "The Californians," "The Conqueror," "Rulers of Kings," and "Julia France and Her Times."

**JANE GOODWIN AUSTIN** (1831-1894). Much of her life was spent in Boston. A

writer of historical fiction dealing especially with the colonial period. Author of the following novels: "Standish of Standish," "Betty Alden," "The First-Born Daughter of the Pilgrims," "The Shadow of Moloch Mountain," "The Desmond Hundred," etc.

**IRVING BACHELLER.** Born in New York, 1859. Actively connected with the press of New York for years. Novelist whose best known book is "Eben Holden." Also author of "Silas Strong," "Vergilius," "The Master," "Keeping Up with Lizzie," etc.

**JOHN KENDRICK BANGS.** Born in New York, 1862. Editor at different times of *Harper's Magazine*, *Metropolitan Magazine*, *Puck*, etc. Author of a great many humorous, imaginative, and popular works of fiction, among which may be mentioned "Tiddledywinks Tales," "A House Boat on the Styx," "The Pursuit of the House Boat," "Ghosts I Have Met," "Olympian Nights," "Proposal Under Difficulties" (farce), "Songs of Cheer," and "Tomorrowland" (a musical fantasy).

**AMELIA EDITH BARR.** Born in Ulverston, Lancashire, England, in 1831. Novelist. Among 66 novels may be mentioned "Jan Vedder's Wife," "Remember the Alamo," and "Between Two Loves."

**ARLO BATES.** Born in Maine in 1850. Educator, essayist, and novelist. Author of "A Wheel of Fire," "Sonnets in Shadow," "A Book o' Nine Tales," "Talks on Teaching Literature," and numerous others.

**REX BEACH.** Born in Michigan in 1877. Author of realistic novels dealing with conditions in the Klondike, among which may be mentioned "The Spoilers," "The Iron Trail," etc.

**HENRY WARD BEECHER** (1813-1887). A native of Connecticut. Famous Congregational clergyman and lecturer. Author of "Eyes and Ears," "Lectures to Young Men," "Speeches on the American Rebellion," etc.

**AMBROSE BIERCE.** Born in Ohio, 1842. Civil War veteran, journalist, and author. The following titles are suggestive of his work: "Cobwebs from an Empty Skull," "Fantastic Fables," "The Shadow on the Dial, and Other Essays," and "Write It Right."

**JOSH BILLINGS.** See Henry W. Shaw.

**GEORGE HENRY BOKER** (1823-1890). A native of Philadelphia. Poet, diplomat, and dramatist. Author of "Poems of War," "The Book of the Dead" (poems), and of the tragedies "Calaynos," "Francesca da Rimini," etc.

**HJALMAR HJORTH BOYESEN** (1848-1895). A native of Norway, but for many years a professor in Columbia College. A scholar, novelist, poet, and historian. Author of "Gunnar," "A Norseman's Pilgrimage," "Falconberg," "Goethe and Schiller," "The Story of Norway," "Idyls of Norway, and Other Poems."

ALICE BROWN. Born in New Hampshire in 1857. One of the best known short story-writers of America. Author of "Meadow-Grass" (New England stories), "The Mannerings," "Rose MacLeod," "Country Neighbors" (stories), and numerous others.

CHARLES FARRAR BROWNE ("Artemus Ward") (1834-1867). A humorist and lecturer, whose humor was grotesque and whose satire was good-natured. Author of "Artemus Ward: His Book," "Artemus Ward among the Mormons," "Artemus Ward in London," etc.

HENRY CUYLER BUNNER (1855-1896). A New York journalist, editor of *Puck*, and writer of graceful verse and readable fiction. Author of "Love in Old Cloathes," "The Story of a New York House," "Short Sixes" (a collection of humorous tales), "Airs from Arcady and Elsewhere," etc.

ROBERT J. BURDETTE (1844-1914). A native of Pennsylvania. A newspaper humorist who was for some years editor of *The Hawkeye*, Burlington Iowa. Author of "Hawkeyetems," "Rise and Fall of The Mustache," "Innach Garden, and Other Comic Sketches," and "Life of William Penn."

FRANCES HODGSON BURNETT. Born in Manchester, England, in 1849. A magazine writer and novelist of excellent gifts. Author of "That Lass o' Lowrie's," "Haworth's," "Through One Administration," "Little Lord Fauntleroy," "Sara Crewe," "In Connection with the Willoughby Claim," etc.

CLARA LOUISE BURNHAM. Born in Massachusetts, 1845. Poet and novelist. Author of "Dr. Latimer," "A West Point Wooing," "The Inner Flame," etc.

JOHN BURROUGHS. Born in New York in 1837. An essayist whose sympathetic studies of nature have made him popular. Author of "Wake Robin," "Birds and Poets," "Winter Sunshine," "Indoor Studies," "Squirrels and Other Fur Bearers," etc.

GEORGE W. CABLE. Born in Louisiana in 1844. A distinguished novelist of Creole life. Author of "Old Creole Days," "The Grandissimes," "Madame Delphine," "Dr. Sevier," "John March, Southerner," etc. (See text.)

WILL CARLETON (1845-1912). A native of Michigan. Author, lecturer, and editor. A writer of homely verse, in which the story often takes the place of poetic inspiration. Author of "Farm Ballads," "Farm Legends," "Farm Festivals," "City Ballads," "Rhymes of Our Planet," etc.

BLISS CARMAN. Born in New Brunswick in 1861. A poet and journalist. Author of "Low Tide on Grand Pré," "A Sea-mark," "Behind the Arras," "Ballads of Lost Haven," "Songs from Vagabondia," "The Vengeance of Noel Brassard."

ALICE CARY (1820-1871) and PHŒBE CARY (1824-1871) were born in Ohio but spent the latter part of their lives in New York. The former was

poet and novelist; she wrote "Lyra, and Other Poems," "Ballads, Lyrics, and Hymns," "Pictures of Country Life," "Hagar," "Married, not Mated," etc. The latter wrote "Poems and Parodies," "Poems of Faith, Hope, and Love."

MARY H. CATHERWOOD (1847-1902). A native of Ohio. Writer of careful historical romances dealing with the early days of Canada and the Northwest. Author of "A Woman in Armour," "The Spirit of an Illinois Town," "Old Caravan Days," etc.

MADISON JULIUS CAWEIN (1865-1914). A native of Kentucky. One of the best of recent American lyrists. Author of "Bloom of the Berry," "Lyrics and Idyls," "Poems of Nature and Love," "The Garden of Dreams," "Shapes and Shadows," etc.

ROBERT W. CHAMBERS. Born in New York, 1865. Artist, and author of many popular novels. He has debased a fine talent to the writing of sensuous fiction. Among many works may be mentioned "Ashes of Empire," "The Fighting Chance," "The Firing Line," "The Green Mouse," and "The Witch of Ellangowan" (a drama).

GEORGE RANDOLPH CHESTER. Born in Ohio, 1869. Journalist and story-writer. Author of the popular Wallingford stories. Has written "Get-Rich-Quick Wallingford," "The Cash Intrigue," "Wallingford and Blackie Daw," and a number of others.

JOHN VANCE CHENEY. Born in New York, 1848. Author of "The Old Doctor," "That Dome in Air" (essays), "Out of the Silence" (poems), "At the Silver Gate" (poems), etc.

WINSTON CHURCHILL. Born in Missouri in 1871. One of our most representative American novelists. His "Inside of the Cup" has been widely read and discussed. Author of "Richard Carvel" and "The Crisis," two popular historical novels, also "Mr. Crewe's Career," "Coniston," etc.

JAMES FREEMAN CLARKE (1810-1888). An able Unitarian clergyman of Boston. Among his numerous works are "Orthodoxy: its Truths and Errors," "Ten Great Religions," "Self-Culture," and "Every-Day Religion," the last two being especially helpful.

SAMUEL L. CLEMENS ("Mark Twain") (1835-1910). Born in Missouri. Miner and journalist in Nevada until his popularity as a humorist turned him to lecturing and authorship. The most popular, though not the most delicate, of our humorists. Author of "The Innocents Abroad," "Roughing It," "Adventures of Tom Sawyer," "A Tramp Abroad," "The Adventures of Huckleberry Finn," "A Connecticut Yankee at King Arthur's Court," "Joan of Arc," etc. (See text.)

ROSE TERRY COOKE (1827-1892). Born in Connecticut. A writer of both prose and verse, her short stories being particularly excellent. Author of

"Happy Dodd," "Somebody's Neighbors," "The Sphinx's Children and Other People's," "Poems," etc.

CHARLES EGBERT CRADDOCK. See Mary N. Murfree.

PEARL MARY-TERESA CRAIGIE ("John Oliver Hobbes") (1867-1906). A native of Boston. Among her varied works are "A Study in Temptations," "The Herb Moon," "School for Saints" (both novels), "Tales about Temperaments," "The Wisdom of the Wise" (play), and many others.

CHRISTOPHER P. CRANCH (1813-1892). A native of Virginia. Artist and transcendental poet. Author of "Thought," "The Bird and the Bell, and Other Poems," "Satan, a Libretto," etc.

STEPHEN CRANE (1870-1900). A popular New York novelist. Author of "George's Mother," "The Black Riders and Other Lives" (verse), "The Red Badge of Courage" (romance of the Civil War in America), and "Maggie."

FRANCIS MARION CRAWFORD (1854-1909). Born in Italy, the son of an American sculptor. Studied at Harvard and at universities abroad. He resided in Italy. A prolific and popular novelist; author of "Mr. Isaacs," "A Roman Singer," and the Saracinesca trio (including "Saracinesca," "Sant' Ilario," and "Don Orsino"), "Via Crucis," etc.

RICHARD HENRY DANA, Jr. (1815-1882). A native of Massachusetts. Author of the famous "Two Years Before the Mast," a narrative of personal adventure, which was adopted officially by the British Admiralty for circulation in the navy. His other works include "To Cuba and Back," "Life of Major Vinton," and several others.

RICHARD HARDING DAVIS (1864-1916). A native of Philadelphia. A novelist and journalist; prominent as newspaper correspondent in the war with Spain. Author of "Soldiers of Fortune," "Gallagher, and Other Stories," "The Princess Aline," "Van Bibber and Others," "The King's Jackal," "Episodes in Van Bibber's Life," "With Both Armies in South Africa," etc.

MARGARET WADE DELAND. Born in Pennsylvania in 1857, but has lived in Boston since 1880. A writer of novels and poems. "The Awakening of Helena Richie" had a wide circulation, and her novels in general have been deservedly popular. Author of "John Ward, Preacher," "The Old Garden and Other Verses," "Philip and his Wife," "The Wisdom of Fools," "Old Chester Tales," "The Iron Woman," etc.

THOMAS DIXON. Born in North Carolina in 1864. Lawyer, minister, novelist, and playwright. His novels portraying conditions in the South after the Civil War are overdrawn and sensational, but have been widely read. Author of "The Leopard's Spots," "The One Woman," "The Clansman," "The Sins of the Father," etc.

MARY A. DODGE ("Gail Hamilton") (1838-1896). A native of Massachusetts, whose pungent style made her writings popular. Author of "A New Atmosphere," "Woman's Wrongs," "Sermons to the Clergy," "Woman's Worth and Worthlessness," "Biography of James G. Blaine," etc.

MARY MAPES DODGE (1838-1905). A New York writer of poems and stories for young people, for many years editor of *Saint Nicholas*. The following works may be mentioned: "Donald and Dorothy," "Rhymes and Jingles," "The Land of Pluck," "When Life is Young," "Theophilus and Others," and "Hans Brinker," the last a little classic, which has been translated into French, German, Dutch, and other languages.

MR. DOOLEY. See Finley Peter Dunne.

PAUL LAWRENCE DUNBAR (1872-1906). Born in Ohio. A verse-writer of African descent, best known for his "Lyrics of Lowly Life."

FINLEY PETER DUNNE ("Mr. Dooley"). Born in Chicago in 1867. Journalist and humorist, famous as the creator of Mr. Dooley. Author of "Mr. Dooley's Opinions," "Observations by Mr. Dooley," etc.

HENRY VAN DYKE. Born in Pennsylvania in 1852. Presbyterian clergyman, professor of English literature at Princeton, poet, essayist, minister to Holland. Author of "The Reality of Religion," "The Poetry of Tennyson," "The Other Wise Man," "The Gospel for an Age of Doubt," "The Toiling of Felix, and Other Poems," "The Blue Flower," etc.

EDWARD EGGLESTON (1837-1903). A native of Indiana. A Methodist minister and author. Author of "The Hoosier Schoolmaster," "The End of the World," "The Mystery of Metropolisville," "The Circuit Rider," "The Graysons," works on American history, etc. (See text.)

EUGENE FIELD (1850-1895). A native of Missouri. A journalist and author of Chicago, whose writings, especially his poems for and about children, have attracted much attention. Author of "A Little Book of Profitable Tales," "A Little Book of Western Verse," "Love Songs of Childhood," "With Trumpet and Drum," "Songs and Other Verse," etc.

JOHN FISKE (1842-1901). A distinguished philosopher and historian of Cambridge. As a thinker he belonged to the school of Darwin and Spencer. He wrote "Myths and Myth-makers," "Outlines of Cosmic Philosophy," "The Destiny of Man," "The American Revolution," "Old Virginia and her Neighbours," etc.

PAUL LEICESTER FORD (1865-1902). A historian and novelist of New York City. He edited "The Writings of Thomas Jefferson" in ten volumes. Author of "The Honorable Peter Stirling," "The Story of an Untold Love," "The True George Washington," "Janice Meredith" (which was widely read), etc.

JOHN FOX, JR. Born in Kentucky in 1863. A gifted writer whose novels

dealing with life in the Kentucky mountains have been very popular. Author of "A Cumberland Vendetta," "The Kentuckians," "The Little Shepherd of Kingdom Come," "The Trail of the Lonesome Pine," "The Heart of the Hills," etc.

MARY E. WILKINS FREEMAN. Born in Massachusetts in 1862. A writer for magazines whose poems, short stories, etc., contain an appreciative realism of simple life and character. Author of "Shoulders of Atlas," "Winning Lady," "The Jamesons and People of our Neighborhood," and many others.

Alice French ("Octave Thanet"). Born in Massachusetts in 1850; has resided chiefly in the West. A story-writer and novelist. Author of "Knitters in the Sun," "Otto, the Knight," "Stories of a Western Town," "A Book of True Lovers," "The Heart of Toil," "A Slave to Duty," etc.

ZONA GALE. Born in Wisconsin in 1874. Essayist and writer for magazines whose stories are permeated with a beautiful idealism of simple life and humble people. Author of "The Loves of Pelleas and Etarre," "Friendship Village," "Friendship Village Love Stories," etc.

HAMLIN GARLAND. Born in Wisconsin, 1860. Story-writer, novelist, and dramatist. Author of "Prairie Folks," "Wayside Courtships," "The Eagle's Heart," "The Captain of the Gray Horse Troop," "The Long Trail," etc.

RICHARD WATSON GILDER (1844-1909). Born in New Jersey. Poet, editor, and social reformer. Editor of *The Century Magazine*. Author of "The New Day," "The Celestial Passion," "Lyrics," "Five Books of Songs," "In Palestine," etc.

ELLEN A. GLASGOW. Born in Virginia in 1874. A novelist and poet. Author of "The Descendant," "Phases of an Inferior Planet," "The Voice of the People," "The Freeman, and Other Poems," "The Deliverance," "The Wheel of Life," etc.

MAUD WILDER GOODWIN. Born in New York, 1856. Author of historical romances, among which may be mentioned "The Colonial Cavalier" and "Life of Dolly Madison."

ROBERT GRANT. Born in Boston, 1852. Author of many novels, among which may be mentioned "The Confessions of a Frivolous Girl," "The Little Tin Gods on Wheels," "An Average Man," and "The Reflections of a Married Man."

ANNA KATHERINE GREEN (Mrs. Charles Rohlfs). Born in New York, 1846. Author of many exciting detective stories. "The Leavenworth Case," "That Affair Next Door," "The Filigree Ball," and "The Millionaire Baby" are among the most popular of her works.

LOUISE IMOGEN GUINEY. Born in Boston, 1861. Writer of poems which show true literary instinct and expression. Author of "The White Sail and

Other Poems," "England and Yesterday," "The Martyr's Idyl and Shorter Poems," etc., and editor of "Matthew Arnold" in small Riverside Literature series, Dr. T. W. Parsons' translation of Dante's "Divina Commedia," etc.

**EDWARD EVERETT HALE** (1822-1909). Born in Massachusetts. Unitarian clergyman, historian, poet, editor, and novelist; but as active in philanthropy as in literature. Among his many writings are to be noted "The Man Without a Country," "In His Name," "Ten Times One is Ten," "Philip Nolan's Friends," "For Fifty Years," a collection of poems, etc. (See text.)

**GAIL HAMILTON.** See Mary A. Dodge.

**HENRY HARLAND** ("Sidney Luska") (1861-1905). Born in St. Petersburg, Russia. A novelist of New York City. Author of "The Cardinal's Snuff Box," "My Friend Prospero," "The Land of Love," and "The Lady Paramount."

**MARION HARLAND.** See Mary V. Terhune.

**JOEL CHANDLER HARRIS** (1848-1908). Born in Georgia. An editor of *The Atlanta Constitution*, distinguished especially for his studies in negro folklore. Author of "Uncle Remus: His Songs and His Sayings," "Nights with Uncle Remus," "Uncle Remus and his Friends," "Little Mr. Thimblefinger," "Balaam and his Master," "Stories of Georgia," "Chronicles of Aunt Minerva," etc.

**WILLIAM T. HARRIS** (1835-1909). Born in Connecticut. For thirteen years superintendent of the St. Louis public schools; afterwards lecturer of the Concord School of Philosophy; for many years United States Commissioner of Education. Eminent as an educator and philosopher. Author of "Introduction to the Study of Philosophy," "The Spiritual Sense of Dante's Divina Commedia," "Psychologic Foundation of Education," etc.

**FRANCIS BRET HARTE** (1839-1903). A native of New York, but spent a considerable part of his life in California. An editor, poet, and novelist. Author of some forty different works, among which are "Luck of Roaring Camp," "Poems," "Tales of the Argonauts," "Gabriel Conroy," "Tales of Trail and Town," "Under the Redwoods," etc. (See text.)

**JULIAN HAWTHORNE** (1846-1914). A native of Boston. Son of Nathaniel Hawthorne; a journalist and novelist who inherited much of his father's originality. Author of "Nathaniel Hawthorne and His Wife," "Bressant," "Garth," "Beatrix Randolph," "Fortune's Fool," "Archibald Malmaison," "One of Those Coincidences, and Other Stories," etc.

**JOHN HAY** (1838-1905). Born in Indiana. Private secretary of President Lincoln, ambassador to England, and Secretary of State. Author of "Castilian Days," "Pike County Ballads," "Abraham Lincoln," "Poems," etc.

HENRY HAYES. See Ellen O. Kirk.

LAFCADIO HEARN (1850-1904). A resident first of New Orleans, then of New York, and lastly of Japan. The following titles indicate the nature of his works: "Stray Leaves from Strange Literature," "Some Chinese Ghosts," "Youma, the Story of a West Indian Slave," "Out of the East," and "Hints and Echoes of Japanese Inner Life," etc.

O. HENRY. See Sidney Porter.

ROBERT HERRICK. Born in Massachusetts, 1868. University professor and novelist. Author of "The Man who Wins," "Literary Love Letters, and Other Stories," "The Common Lot," "One Woman's Life," etc.

THOMAS WENTWORTH HIGGINSON (1823-1911). Essayist and littérateur of Cambridge. A prominent abolitionist before the Civil War, and since then active advocate of woman's suffrage. Among varied and numerous works are "Atlantic Essays," "Woman and her Wishes," "Short Studies of American Authors," "Common Sense about Women," "Life of Margaret Fuller Ossoli," "Larger History of the United States," "The Afternoon Landscape" (a collection of poems), and "Cheerful Yesterdays."

JOHN OLIVER HOBBS. See Pearl Mary-Teresa Craigie.

MARIETTA HOLLEY. Born in New York, 1850. Humorous writer of poems, essays, and stories. Her writings include "My Wayward Partner," "Sweet Cicely," "Poems," "Samantha at Saratoga," "Samantha in Europe," and numerous other Samantha stories.

BLANCHE WILLIS HOWARD (1847-1898) (Frau Von Teuffel). Born in Maine, lived in Germany after 1875. Among her novels are "Aunt Serena," "Guenn," and "The Open Door."

JULIA WARD HOWE (1819-1910). A writer of Boston, prominent in philanthropic movements and in the movement for the enfranchisement of women. Her "Battle Hymn of the Republic" is her finest poem. Other works are "Passion Flowers," "Later Lyrics," "Sex and Education," "Modern Society," etc.

WILLIAM DEAN HOWELLS. Born in Ohio in 1837. He began his literary career as a writer of verse. Consul to Venice and later editor of *The Atlantic Monthly*. Among his many volumes of realistic fiction may be mentioned "The Undiscovered Country," "A Modern Instance," "The Rise of Silas Lapham," "A Traveller from Altruria," to which may be added a series of delightful farces, "The Mouse Trap," "The Parlor Car," etc. (See text.)

HELEN HUNT. See Helen Fiske Jackson.

HELEN FISKE JACKSON ("Helen Hunt") (1831-1885). Born in Massachusetts; resided the latter part of her life in Colorado. A prose-writer and poet of unusual gifts. Author of "A Century of Dishonor," "Sonnets and Lyrics," "Ramona," one of our best-known novels, and of many other works.

HENRY JAMES (1843-1916). A native of New York; resided in London since 1869. His numerous novels are written in a style of overdone refinement. Worthy of mention are "The Portrait of a Lady," "Daisy Miller," "The Bostonians," "A London Wife," "The Sacred Fount," etc. (See text.)

SARAH ORNE JEWETT (1848-1909). Born in Maine. Her careful studies of rural New England life and character have justly made her popular. Author of "Old Friends and New," "A Country Doctor," "The King of Folly Island, and Other People," "The Country of the Pointed Firs," etc.

MARY JOHNSTON. Born in Virginia in 1870. Well-known novelist and lecturer on woman's suffrage. Author of "Prisoners of Hope," "To Have and to Hold," "Audrey," "Sir Mortimer," "The Long Roll," "Cease Firing," "Hagar," etc.

RICHARD MALCOM JOHNSTON (1822-1898). A Baltimore educator and a writer of humor and originality. Among varied works may be mentioned "Dukesborough Tales," "Mr. Absalom Billingslea and Other Georgia Folk," "Studies, Literary and Social," "Mr. Billy Downs and his Likes," "Widow Guthrie, a Novel," and "Mr. Fortner's Marital Claims."

HELEN KELLER. Born in Alabama, 1880. Deaf and dumb since the age of 17 months. Lecturer and author. Author of "The Story of my Life," "Optimism" (an essay), "Out of the Dark," and several others.

CHARLES KING. Born in New York in 1844. A brigadier-general in the war against Spain. A resident for many years of Wisconsin. Author of more than thirty volumes, principally military novels, which have been extensively read. Among his publications are "Famous and Decisive Battles," "Between the Lines," "Under Fire," "The General's Double," "A War Time Wooing," "Kitty's Conquest," etc.

GRACE ELIZABETH KING. Born in New Orleans in 1852. Novelist and historical writer. Author of "Monsieur Motte," "New Orleans, the Place and the People," "De Soto and His Men in the Land of Florida," "History of Louisiana," "Stories from History of Louisiana," and several others.

ELLEN OLNEY KIRK ("Henry Hayes"). Born in Connecticut, 1842. Novelist, essayist, and short-story writer. Author of "A Midsummer Madness," "The Story of Margaret Kent," "Dorothy Deane," "Marcia," etc.

SIDNEY LANIER (1842-1881). A native of Georgia. A poet, musician, and novelist. A poet of original genius, who did not live to realize all his possibilities. Author of "Poems," "Tiger Lilies" (a novel), "The Science of English Verse," "The English Novel and its Development," etc. (See text.)

LUCY LARCOM (1824-1893). A native of Massachusetts, who in early life worked in the Lowell mills. She afterwards became popular as a writer both of prose and verse. Among her works are "Childhood Songs,"

"Ships in the Mist, and Other Stories," "The Unseen Friend," "A New England Girlhood," which is autobiographic, etc.

GEORGE PARSONS LATHROP (1851-1898). Born at Oahu, Hawaii. A littérateur of New York City. Author of "Dreams and Days" (verse), "An Echo of Passion" and other works of fiction, "A Study of Hawthorne," "Spanish Vistas," etc.

EMMA LAZARUS (1849-1887). A native of New York; a gifted writer of Jewish descent. Among her writings are "Alide, an Episode of Goethe's Life," "Admetus, and Other Poems," "Songs of a Semite," "Poems and Ballads translated from Heine."

CHARLES GODFREY LELAND (1824-1903). A native of Philadelphia, a poet and educator, and authority in gypsy lore. Author of "Hans Breitmann's Ballads," "English Gypsies," "Practical Education," "Legends of Florence," "Algonquin Legends," "Anglo-Romany Songs," etc.

FRANCES LITTLE. See Fannie C. Macaulay.

DAVID ROSS LOCKE. ("Petroleum V. Nasby") (1833-1888). A native of New York. A widely known political satirist. Author of "Ekkoes from Kentucky," "Struggles of Petroleum V. Nasby," "Nasby in Exile," etc.

HENRY CABOT LODGE. Born in Boston, 1850. Senator, lecturer, editor, and author of many historical and biographical works. Representative of him are his "Short History of the English Colonies in America," "Life of Washington," "Certain Accepted Heroes and Other Essays in Literature and Politics," "Story of the Revolution," and "A Frontier Town and Other Essays."

JACK LONDON. Born in California in 1876. Journalist, lecturer, novelist, socialist, and writer on sociological subjects. An extensive traveler, and war correspondent in the Russo-Japanese War. Author of "The God of his Fathers," "The People of the Abyss," "The Call of the Wild," "John Barleycorn," and many other publications.

CHARLES F. LUMMIS. Born in Massachusetts, 1859. Explorer and author. Among numerous works may be mentioned "Birch Bark Poems," "A Tramp Across the Continent," "The Man Who Married the Moon, and Other Pueblo Indian Folk-Stories," etc.

SIDNEY LUSKA. See Henry Harland.

HAMILTON WRIGHT MABIE. Born in New York in 1846. An essayist and journalist, associate editor of *The Outlook*. Author of "Norse Stories Retold from the Eddas," "My Study Fire," "Short Studies in Literature," "Nature and Culture," "Books and Culture," "Work and Culture," "The Life of the Spirit," "Shakespeare: Poet, Dramatist, and Man," etc.

FANNIE CALDWELL MACAULAY ("Frances Little"). Born in Kentucky, 1863. Author of works of fiction portraying her experiences in Japan, the best-

known being the "Lady of the Decoration." Others are "Little Sister Snow," "The Lady and Sada San," and "The House of the Misty Star."

**GEORGE BARR McCUTCHEON.** Born in Indiana, 1866. Author of romantic and exciting novels. Among the most popular are "Graustark," "Brewster's Millions," "Beverly of Graustark," "Truxton King," and "A Fool and His Money."

**PERCY MACKAYE.** Born in New York, 1875. Lecturer and prominent dramatist. A long list of works includes "The Canterbury Pilgrims" (comedy), "Jeanne D'Arc" (tragedy), "The Playhouse and the Play" (essays), and "Uriel, and Other Poems."

**JOHN BACH McMaster.** Born in New York, 1852. Historical writer and professor of American history at University of Pennsylvania since 1883. Author of "A History of the People of the United States," "Benjamin Franklin as a Man of Letters," "With the Fathers, Studies in American History," "The Struggle for the Social, Political, and Industrial Rights of Man," and other similar works.

**EDWIN MARKHAM.** Born in Oregon in 1852. A teacher, prose-writer, and poet. His poem, "The Man with the Hoe," attracted widespread attention. Author of "The Man with the Hoe, and Other Poems," "Lincoln and Other Poems," etc.

**IK MARVEL.** See Donald G. Mitchell.

**BRANDER MATTHEWS.** Born in Louisiana in 1852. A professor in Columbia University, critic, dramatist, and novelist. Among his many writings are "The Theatres of Paris," "Margery's Lovers" (a comedy), "The Last Meeting," "In the Vestibule Limited," "The Decision of the Court" (a comedy), "His Father's Son," etc.

**HERMAN MELVILLE** (1819-1891). A novelist of New York City, once very popular. Author of "White Jacket," "Mardi," "The Piazza Tales," "The Confidence-Man," etc.

**CINCINNATUS HEINE MILLER** ("Joaquin Miller") (1841-1913). A native of Indiana. Lawyer, judge, editor, and author. Among his principal works are "Songs of the Sierras," "Songs of the Sunland," "The Danites in the Sierras," "Shadows of Shasta," "Songs of Far-Away Lands," etc. (See text.)

**JOAQUIN MILLER.** See Cincinnatus H. Miller.

**DONALD GRANT MITCHELL** ("Ik Marvel") (1822-1908). A littérateur of New Haven. Popular and pleasantly sentimental are his "Dream Life" and "Reveries of a Bachelor." Other works are "Dr Johns" (a novel), "Fudge Doings," "Seven Stories," "English Lands, Letters, and Kings," etc.

**SILAS WEIR MITCHELL** (1829-1914). A distinguished physician of Philadelphia, poet, and novelist. Author of "Poems" (5 vols.), and of "Hephzibah

Guinnes," "Hugh Wynne, Free Quaker," which became very popular, "The Autobiography of a Quack," "Dr. North and His Friends," etc.

WILLIAM VAUGHN MOODY (1869-1910). A native of Indiana. Professor of English Literature at University of Chicago, editor, and poet. Author of "The Masque of Judgement" (a lyrical drama), "Poems," "History of English Literature," etc.

GOUVERNEUR MORRIS. Born in New York in 1876. Well-known short-story writer and contributor to magazines. Author of "Ellen and her Man," "The Footprint, and Other Stories," "Putting on the Screws," etc.

LOUISE CHANDLER MOULTON (1835-1908). Born in Connecticut. A poet and prose-writer of Boston. She was the literary executor of the English poet, Philip Bourke Marston, whose poems she edited. Her works include "This, That and the Other," made up of stories, essays, and poems, "Juno Clifford," "Poems," "Random Rambles," "In the Garden of Dreams, Lyrics, and Sonnets," etc.

MARY NOAILLES MURFREE ("Charles Egbert Craddock"). Born in Tennessee in 1850. A novelist, whose stories of the Tennessee mountains have made her famous. Author of "In the Tennessee Mountains," "The Prophet of the Great Smoky Mountain," "In the Clouds," "The Mystery of Witchface Mountain," "The Bushwhackers, and Other Stories," etc. (See text.)

PETROLEUM V. NASBY. See David R. Locke.

MEREDITH NICHOLSON. Born in Indiana in 1866. Author of "The Hoosiers" (literary history) and of a number of popular novels. Among them may be mentioned "The House of a Thousand Candles," "The Main Chance," "The Port of Missing Men," etc.

JOHN BOYLE O'REILLY (1844-1890). Born in Ireland. Journalist and poet of Boston. Author of "Songs, Legends, and Ballads," "Songs of the Southern Seas," "Stories and Sketches" (prose), etc.

THOMAS NELSON PAGE. Born in Virginia in 1853. A novelist of Southern life. Author of "In Old Virginia," "Two Little Confederates," "Among the Camps," "Meh Lady," "Marse Chan," "Santa Claus' Partner," "Red Rock," "Gordon Keith," etc.

MRS. PARTINGTON. See Benjamin P. Shillaber.

BLISS PERRY. Born in Massachusetts, 1860. Educator, editor, lecturer, and author. Author of "The Broughton House," "Salem Kittredge and Other Stories," "A Study of Prose Fiction," "Walt Whitman," etc.

DAVID GRAHAM PHILLIPS (1867-1911). A native of Indiana. Author of "The Great God Success," "Her Serene Highness," "A Woman Ventures," "Golden Fleece," "The Social Secretary," "The Second Generation," "The Age of Gilt."

SYDNEY PORTER ("O. Henry") (1867-1910). A native of North Carolina. Journalist, editor, and famous master of the realistic short story. Author of "Cabbages and Kings," "The Heart of the West," "The Voice of the City," "Roads of Destiny," etc.

MARGARET J. PRESTON (1820-1897). A poetess and prose-writer of Lexington, Virginia. Author of "Old Songs and New," "Beechenbrook, a Rhyme of the War," "Cartoons," "For Love's Sake," "Silverwood" (a novel), etc.

AGNES REPPLIER. Born in Pennsylvania in 1859. A popular essayist; Roman Catholic in religion. Author of "Books and Men," "Points of View," "Essays in Miniature," "Essays in Idleness," "Philadelphia, the Place and the People," etc.

ALICE HEGAN RICE. Born in Kentucky in 1870. Originator of the famous "Mrs. Wiggs," who was mistress of the divine art of "plucking roses from a cabbage patch." Also author of "Lovey Mary," "Captain June," and several other novels.

CALE YOUNG RICE. Born in Kentucky, 1872. Poet and dramatist. His poems include "With Omar," "Nirvana Days," and "Far Quests"; his poetic dramas include "David," "A Night in Avignon," and "The Immortal Lure."

JAMES WHITCOMB RILEY (1853-1916). Born in Indiana. He has long been known as the "Hoosier Poet." Much of his verse, which is quite popular, is in the Western dialect. Author of "The Old Swimmin' Hole, and 'Leven More Poems," "Rhymes of Childhood," "Green Fields and Running Brooks," "Neighborly Poems," "Poems Here at Home," etc.

MARY ROBERTS RINEHART. Born in Pennsylvania, 1876. Play-writer and author of popular detective stories among which may be mentioned "The Circular Staircase," "When a Man Marries," "The Man in Lower Ten."

AMÉLIE RIVES ("Princess Troubetzkoy"). Born in Virginia in 1863. A writer of prose and poetry of unusual gifts. Author of "The Quick and the Dead," a freakish, perverse production that had considerable vogue, — "Virginia of Virginia," "Herod and Mariamne" (a drama), "Barbara Dering," "Tanis," etc.

EDWARD PAYSON ROE (1838-1888). A Presbyterian clergyman of New York State, who wrote many novels, once quite popular, of a strong moral character. Among them were "The Opening of a Chestnut Burr," "Barriers Burned Away," "A Knight of the Nineteenth Century," "The Earth Trembled," etc.

THEODORE ROOSEVELT. Born in New York in 1858. Ex-president of the United States; vigorous in mind as in body, a fine type of "The Strenuous Life" he advocates. Author of "The Winning of the West," "Life of

Thomas Hart Benton," "Naval War of 1812," "American Ideals and Other Essays," "Ranch Life and the Hunting Trail," "Life of Cromwell," etc.

ABRAM JOSEPH RYAN ("Father Ryan") (1839-1888). A native of Virginia, and priest of the Roman Catholic Church. His poetry, while not reaching the highest excellence, has been widely read in the South. Among the most popular of his poems are "The Sword of Robert Lee," "The Conquered Banner," and "Their Story Runneth Thus." (See text.)

MARGARET M. SANGSTER (1838-1912). Journalist of New York City, editor *Harper's Bazar*, and writer of pleasant poems and stories. Author of "Poems of the Household," "Home Fairies and Heart Flowers," "Little Knights and Ladies," etc.

CLINTON SCOLLARD. Born in New York, 1860. Author of "Old and New World Lyrics," "A Man at Arms," "Songs of Sunrise Sands," "Lawton," "Odes and Elegies," "The Vicar of the Marches," and many other works.

HORACE E. SCUDDER (1838-1903). Born in Boston. A littérateur of his native city; for some years editor of *The Atlantic Monthly*. Author of "Seven Little People and Their Friends," "Stories from My Attic," "Life of Noah Webster," "A History of the United States," "Life of Bayard Taylor," etc.

MOLLY ELLIOT SEAWELL. Born in Virginia in 1860. Story-writer and novelist. Author of "Little Jarvis," "Sprightly Romance of Marsac" (which won a \$3000 prize), "Maid Marion," "A Virginia Cavalier," etc.

ERNEST THOMPSON-SETON. Born in South Shields, England, in 1860, but has done prominent work in the United States as animal painter and illustrator, as lecturer, and writer of out-of-door stories. Author of "Wild Animals I have Known," "The Biography of a Grizzly," "Two Savages," "Scouting for Boys," etc.

HENRY WHEELER SHAW ("Josh Billings") (1818-1885). A native of Massachusetts. A well-known humorist. Author of "Josh Billings' Sayings," "Everybody's Friend," "Josh Billings' Trump Kards," etc.

FRANK DEMPSTER SHERMAN. Born in New York in 1860. Professor of architecture in Columbia University; a lyrical poet. Author of "Madrigals and Catches," "Lyrics for a Lute," "Little Folk Lyrics," etc.

BENJAMIN P. SHILLABER ("Mrs. Partington") (1814-1890). A native of New Hampshire. Humorist of the type which mistakes words of similar sound but dissimilar meaning. Author of "Life and Sayings of Mrs. Partington," "Ike Partington Stories," "Rhymes with Reason," etc.

UPTON SINCLAIR. Born in Baltimore, Maryland, in 1878. Socialistic writer, whose novel, "The Jungle," attracted much attention. Also author of "King Midas," "The Money Changers," "Plays of Protest," etc.

FRANCIS HOPKINSON SMITH (1838-1915). Born in Baltimore, Maryland. Artist, lecturer on art, and novelist. Many of his novels deal admirably with ante-bellum days in the South. Author of "Col. Carter of Cartersville," "Gondola Days," "The Fortunes of Oliver Horn," "The Tides of Barnegat," "Kennedy Square," etc.

SAMUEL F. SMITH (1808-1895). A native of Massachusetts. Famous as the author of "America." Also wrote much religious verse, and published for juvenile readers "Mythology and Early Greek History," "Rambles in Mission Fields," etc.

JOHN LANCASTER SPALDING. Born in Kentucky, 1840. Roman Catholic Archbishop. Author of "Religious Mission of the Irish People," "Education and the Higher Life," "Thoughts and Theories of Life and Education," "America, and Other Poems," "Socialism and Labor," and numerous other similar works.

HARRIET PRESCOTT SPOFFORD. Born in Maine, 1835. Poet and novelist, author of "The Marquis of Carabas," "The Amber Gods," "New England Legends," "The Making of a Fortune," etc.

EDMUND CLARENCE STEDMAN (1833-1908). Born in Connecticut. A poet and literary critic of New York, possessing rare refinement of taste. Author of "Poems," "Victorian Poets," "Poets of America," "The Nature and Elements of Poetry," "A Victorian Anthology," "An American Anthology," etc. (See text.)

FRANCIS RICHARD STOCKTON (1834-1903). A native of Philadelphia; a writer of rare humor and originality. Among his numerous delightful stories are "The Lady or the Tiger?" "Rudder Grange," "The Casting Away of Mrs. Lecks and Mrs. Aleshine," "The House of Martha," "The Watchmaker's Wife," etc. (See text.)

RICHARD HENRY STODDARD (1825-1903). A native of Massachusetts, who spent the most of his life in New York as poet, editor, and critic. A writer of more than usual force. Author of "Adventures in Fairy Land," "Songs of Summer," "Life of Washington Irving," "Under the Evening Lamp," etc. (See text.)

WILLIAM WETMORE STORY (1819-1895). Native of Massachusetts. Poet, sculptor, and essayist. Author of "Conversations in a Studio," "Fiammetta" (a novel), "A Poet's Portfolio," etc.

RUTH McENERY STUART. Born in Louisiana in 1855. A popular writer of short stories. Author of "A Golden Wedding, and Other Tales," "Carlotta's Intended," "The Story of Babette," "Sonny," "Molly and Pizen," etc.

JOHN B. TABB (1845-1909). Born in Virginia. A Roman Catholic priest, and teacher of St. Charles College. A lyric poet of refined feeling. Author of "Poems," "Lyrics," "Poems Grave and Gay," etc.

NEWTON BOOTH TARKINGTON. Born in Indiana in 1869. Popular novelist. Author of "The Gentleman from Indiana," which made him famous, "Monsieur Beaucaire," "The Two Vanrevels," "Penrod" stories, etc.

IDA M. TARBELL. Born in Pennsylvania in 1857. Widely known journalist and editor. Author of "Short Life of Napoleon Bonaparte," "History of the Standard Oil Company," "He Knew Lincoln," "The Tariff in Our Times," etc.

MARY VIRGINIA TERHUNE ("Marion Harland"). Born in Virginia in 1831. A novelist, journalist, and writer on domestic economy. Author of "Alone," "Moss-Side," "The Hidden Path," "Common Sense in the Household," "True as Steel," "Eve's Daughters," "Where Ghosts Walk," etc.

OCTAVE THANET. See Alice French.

CELIA THAXTER (1835-1894). A native of New Hampshire. Her father was keeper of the lighthouse on the Isles of Shoals, where much of her life was spent. "Among the Isles of Shoals" were papers published in *The Atlantic Monthly*. Among her volumes of verse are "Drift Wood," "The Cruise of the Mystery, and Other Poems," "Poems for Children," etc.

EDITH M. THOMAS. Born in Ohio, 1854. Popular poet, among whose works may be mentioned "Lyrics and Sonnets," "In Sunshine Land," "In the Young World," "The Round Year" (prose), and "Cassia and Other Verse."

MAURICE THOMPSON (1844-1901). Born in Indiana. A Confederate soldier, State geologist of Indiana, journalist, novelist, and poet. Author of "A Tallahassee Girl," "His Second Campaign," "A Fortnight of Folly," "Alice of Old Vincennes," "Songs of Fair Weather," "Poems," etc.

ALBION WINEGAR TOURGÉE (1838-1905). Born in Ohio. Officer in the Union army, resident of North Carolina, 1865-1881, consul at Bordeaux. A lawyer and novelist. His novel, "A Fool's Errand," created a sensation. Author of "Bricks without Straw," "Hot Plowshares," "Pactolus Prime," "A Son of Old Harry," "The Man Who Outlived Himself," etc.

WILLIAM P. TRENT. Born in Virginia in 1862. Teacher and author. He has written among other things, "English Culture in Virginia," "Life of William Gilmore Simms," "Southern Statesmen of the Old Régime," "Authority of Criticism," etc.

PRINCESS TROUBETZKOY. See Amélie Rives.

JOHN T. TROWBRIDGE (1827-1916). A native of New York. A popular writer of both prose and verse. His juvenile writings are interesting and wholesome. Among his numerous works are "Neighbor Jackwood," "Neighbors' Wives," "The Vagabonds, and Other Poems," "Laurence's Adventures," "The Young Surveyor," "A Home Idyl, and Other Poems," "Farnell's Folly," "The Lottery Ticket," etc.

MARK TWAIN. See Samuel L. Clemens.

LEWIS WALLACE ("Lew Wallace") (1827-1903). Born in Indiana. A lawyer, soldier, diplomat, and author. Minister to Turkey, 1881-1885. Author of "Ben Hur, a Tale of the Christ," "The Fair God," "The Prince of India," etc.

ARTEMUS WARD. See Charles Farrar Browne.

ELIZABETH STUART PHELPS WARD (1841-1911). A native of Massachusetts.

A writer of admirable gifts in both prose and poetry. Her "Gates Ajar," which appeared in 1867, made her famous. The following are noteworthy in the long list of her writings: "Men, Women, and Ghosts," "Dr. Zay," "The Story of Avis," "A Singular Life," and "Songs of the Silent World."

CHARLES DUDLEY WARNER (1829-1900). An editor, novelist, and essayist of Hartford. To critical acumen he joined a delightful humor. Author of "My Summer in a Garden," "Backlog Studies," "In the Wilderness," "Life of Washington Irving," "In the Levant," etc. (See text.)

EDITH WHARTON. Born in New York in 1862. Author of strong and well-drawn novels. Among her best-known books are "The House of Mirth," "The Fruit of the Tree," and "The Custom of the Country."

E. P. WHIPPLE (1819-1886). An essayist and critic of Boston, who supported his sound judgment with a vigorous style. Among his writings are "Character and Characteristic Men," "Literature and Life," "Success and its Conditions," "Literature of the Age of Elizabeth," etc.

RICHARD GRANT WHITE (1822-1885). A critic, novelist, and Shakespeare scholar of New York. Author of "Words and Their Uses," "Every Day English," "The Fate of Mansfield Humphreys," and a critical edition of Shakespeare in twelve volumes.

STEWARD EDWARD WHITE. Born in Michigan, 1873. Writer of stories dealing with western mountain life. Author of "The Blazed Trail," "The Silent Places," "African Camp Fires," etc.

WILLIAM ALLEN WHITE. Born in Kansas in 1868. Journalist and novelist, best known for the novel "A Certain Rich Man," a strong and well-drawn book. Also author of "The Court of Boyville," "The Old Order Changeth," etc.

WALT WHITMAN (1819-1892). Teacher, printer, editor, carpenter — a unique figure in American literature. Author of "Leaves of Grass," in which the usual poetic forms are discarded. By some esteemed highly as a poet, by others denied that title entirely. (See text.)

ADELINE D. T. WHITNEY (1824-1906). Born in Boston. A popular writer for girls. Author of "Faith Gartney's Girlhood," "Leslie Goldthwaite," "The Other Girls," and in verse, of "Pansies," "Holy Tides," etc.

KATE DOUGLAS WIGGIN (Mrs. George C. Riggs). Born in Philadelphia in 1859.

Novelist and author of a number of works on the kindergarten. She organized the first free kindergartens on the Pacific Coast and has been interested in that work ever since. Her novels throw a delightful joyousness into stories of simple life. Among many may be mentioned "Rebecca," "The Old Peabody Pew," "The Diary of a Goose Girl," and "Tales of Wonder."

ELLA WHEELER WILCOX. Born in Wisconsin in 1855. Best known as a poet, though also journalist and essayist. The versatility and humanitarian interest of her poems have made them very popular. Among many productions may be mentioned "Poems of Pleasure," "Poems of Power," "Poems of Progress and New Thought Pastels," etc.

AUGUSTA JANE EVANS WILSON (1835-1909). Born in Georgia. A once popular novelist. Author of "Inez," "Beulah," "St. Elmo," "Vashti," "At the Mercy of Tiberius," etc.

WOODROW WILSON. Born in Virginia in 1856. President Princeton University, Governor of New Jersey, elected President of the United States in 1912. Writer chiefly on historical subjects. Author of "Division and Reunion," "A History of the American People," "Mere Literature, and Other Essays," "The New Freedom," etc.

WILLIAM WINTER. Born in Massachusetts in 1836. Author and dean of dramatic critics in America. Author of "Shakespeare's England," "Gray Days and Gold," "Shadows of the Stage," "Life and Art of Edwin Booth," "Wanderers" (poems), "Life of Ada Rehan," "Henry Irving: Studies of His Acting," etc.

OWEN WISTER. Born in Philadelphia in 1860. A lawyer and writer of both prose and verse. "The Virginian" and "Lady Baltimore" are his best-known novels; he is also author of "The Simple Spelling Bee," "The Seven Ages of Washington," "U. S. Grant, a Biography," etc.

GEORGE EDWARD WOODBERRY. Born in Massachusetts in 1855. Professor in Columbia University, biographer, poet, and literary critic. Author of "Life of Edgar Allan Poe," "The North Shore Watch, and Other Poems," "Heart of Man," "Makers of Literature," etc.

CONSTANCE FENIMORE WOOLSON (1838-1894). A native of New Hampshire. A novelist of worth, "Horace Chase" being her best-known work. Her writings include also "Two Women" (a poem), "Southern Sketches," "The Front Yard, and Other Italian Stories," and "The Old Stone House."

HAROLD BELL WRIGHT. Born in New York in 1872. Painter and novelist. His "Shepherd of the Hills" and "The Winning of Barbara Worth" have been widely read. "The Calling of Dan Matthews" has also been deservedly popular.

## V

*SECOND NATIONAL PERIOD*

(1861-1925)

**543. An Era of Transition.** — The Second National Period begins with the Civil War, and will probably be terminated by important social or political changes in the first half of the present century. The present time is regarded by many thoughtful persons as a period of transition. It is felt that the old order is changing. What is to follow as the result of influences now at work cannot be clearly discerned. But of one thing we may be sure, whatever changes may come will be in the line of human progress. Humanity is slowly but surely working its way up to greater freedom, intelligence, and goodness.

**544. Diffusive, Critical Literature.** — As compared with previous periods, literature now exhibits a many-sided activity. Its themes are as varied as the interests of our race. Philosophy, history, science, fiction, poetry, are more generally cultivated than ever before. The literature of the present time is characterized by great artistic excellence. The prevailing scientific spirit, rejecting the dicta of mere authority, makes truth its only criterion. The beliefs and opinions of tradition are once more put into the crucible. While there are many conflicting theories and creeds, a liberal-minded urbanity has replaced the old-

time harshness and intolerance. Our literature at the present time is diffusive and critical rather than creative; and thus it happens that, while we have many accomplished writers, there is no great original or dominating personality in American letters.

**545. A Dividing Line.** — Most of the writers considered in the previous period, though they survived far beyond it, were formed under the influences prevailing before the Civil War. In every case they struck the key-note to their literary career before 1861. But most of the writers belonging to the present period were born since that time, or were children while the great struggle was going on. They have developed their literary taste and activity under the influences then and since existing.

**546. Homogeneous Development.** — The Civil War itself, the dividing line between the First and Second National Periods, has exerted no little influence upon our literature. In spite of the effort of self-seeking and narrow-minded politicians to perpetuate sectional prejudice, a strong national feeling, especially since the war with Spain, in which Northern and Southern heroes fought side by side, now binds all parts of our country together in an indissoluble union. With the abolition of slavery and the settlement of State rights, our civilization has become more homogeneous. Our vast railway systems carry the life-blood of trade and commerce to all parts of our country. Through education and periodical literature, the people of all parts of our land share a common intellectual life. Our people are united as never before in a community of interest, and in patriotic devotion to the general welfare. These new conditions are favorable to an expansion of literature, and tend to give it greater breadth of sympathy.

**547. War and Reconstruction.** — But apart from its result in laying a solid foundation for national greatness, the Civil War directly occasioned no insignificant body of literature. Poetry brought its sweet ministrations of comfort or cheer. In our previous studies we learned something of the war poetry of Longfellow, Lowell, and Whittier. Father Ryan may justly, perhaps, be regarded as the martial laureate of the South. “The Blue and the Gray,” by Francis M. Finch, “All Quiet along the Potomac,” by Ethel Beers, “Dixie,” by Albert Pike, and “The Battle Hymn of the Republic,” by Julia Ward Howe, are lyrics that still have power to move the heart.

The hardships, dangers, and sufferings of the war have been frequently portrayed in novels. The period of reconstruction gave rise, as in Judge Tourgée’s “A Fool’s Errand,” Page’s “Red Rock,” and Dixon’s “The Leopard’s Spots,” to interesting and thrilling stories. The war called forth, also, numerous historical works. Apart from the histories of the war itself by John W. Draper, Horace Greeley, John S. C. Abbott, Alexander H. Stephens, Jefferson Davis, and others, we have had many biographical volumes, among which the “Memoirs” of W. T. Sherman, “Personal Memoirs” of U. S. Grant, and “Narrative of Military Operations,” by Joseph E. Johnston, deserve especial mention.

**548. Favorable Conditions.** — During the present period the conditions have been generally favorable to literature. Our country has continued its marvellous development. Its population has more than doubled, and great States have been organized in the far West. Agriculture and manufacture have been developed to an extraordinary degree. New cities have been founded, and many of the older ones have increased

enormously in wealth and population. All this has meant an increase of prosperity, of leisure, and of culture, the conditions antecedent to a flourishing literature.

**549. Press and School.** — Two great educative agencies, the press and the school, have kept pace with the material progress of our country. Every important interest and every considerable community has its periodicals. Our great dailies spread before us every morning the news of the world. The influence of the newspaper upon the taste, intelligence, and character of our people is incalculable. Many of our prominent writers to-day have developed their literary gifts in connection with journalism. Our monthly magazines and reviews, unsurpassed in tasteful form and literary excellence, have been greatly multiplied. They powerfully stimulate literary activity. They are the vehicles, not only for what is most interesting in fiction, poetry, and criticism, but also for what is best in history, science, and philosophy. Nowhere else, perhaps, is there a nation so well informed as the people of the United States.

**550. Interest in Education.** — For some decades the interest in education has been extraordinary. The free-school system has been extended to every part of our country. Graded and high schools are found in every town. The number of colleges, most of them open to both sexes, has largely increased. The courses of study have been expanded, and brought into closer relations with practical life. Some of the older institutions, as well as a few new ones with large endowment, have become in fact, as in name, universities. Educational journals have been established; admirable text-books have been prepared; and, through the study of the history and science of education, the methods of instruction have been greatly improved.

**551. A World Power.** — There is a Providence that watches over the destiny of nations as over that of individuals. The war with Spain, provoked by the tyranny of that country in Cuba, was undertaken in the name of freedom. It sprang from the sentiment of humanity resident in the hearts of the American people. The results of the war were wholly unforeseen. The battle of Manila placed the Philippine Islands in our hands, and brought our country forward as one of the great world powers. No longer isolated between the oceans, the United States are henceforth to play an important part in the development of the history of our globe. As a people, we stand for civil and religious freedom. It has been truly said that the Louisiana purchase of 1803 made America a steamboat nation; the acquisition of California, a railroad and telegraph nation; and, in like manner, the acquisition of Hawaii, Porto Rico, and, above all, the Philippines in 1898, must make our country a naval nation. These new relations will not only affect the commercial interests of our country, but will also exert an influence on literature.

**552. International Relations.** — The present is an age of close international relations. Submarine cables and fleet steamers bring the various nations of the earth close together. With a clearer knowledge of one another, and with the common interests fostered by commerce, kindlier feelings are developed. From time to time the civilized nations of the earth unite in great expositions of their choicest products. Minor international differences are usually settled by diplomacy or arbitration. Thousands of our people go abroad every year for pleasure or study. A few of our writers, as Henry James and F. Marion Crawford, have made their home in England or on

the Continent. The modern languages of Europe are widely studied. Foreign books, either in the original or in translations, are extensively read. In these ways our literature is influenced by movements abroad, and our culture assumes a cosmopolitan character.

**553. Social Progress.** — The present period is an era of social progress. The facilities of production have greatly cheapened the necessities of life. Wages have greatly increased; and the poor, as well as the rich, live better than ever before. But, at the same time, there is social unrest. Many believe that the existing conditions are not final. Wasteful wealth sometimes exists by the side of starving poverty. Our gigantic combinations of capital, which often abuse their power to wrong the people, are commonly recognized as a serious evil. Great attention is given to the study of economic and sociological questions. Along with numerous scientific treatises, we sometimes have presented, as in Bellamy's "Looking Backward," a new Utopia for our contemplation.

**554. Religion and Literature.** — Religion always exerts a strong influence upon literature. It deals with the highest interests of human life. There are many who regard religion as the dominant factor in social progress. In the past, as we have seen, it has been like an atmosphere to our literature. In spite of the scepticism reflected in much of our literature, the religious life of our people was never deeper than it is to-day. But Christianity has become practical rather than dogmatic. A spirit of reverence, righteousness, and charity counts for more than mere adherence to elaborate creeds. A sense of stewardship is leading to a larger practical benevolence. The church is in sympathy with every movement to relieve the unfortunate and reclaim the lost.

It proclaims the unselfish love of the gospel as a solution of our great social problems. No inconsiderable part of our literature to-day, both in periodicals and in books, is occupied in some way with the discussion of religious themes.

**555. Influence of Philosophy.** — In its relation to literature, philosophy is scarcely less influential than religion. Sometimes, as with Emerson, it is difficult to draw the line between them. Philosophy seeks the fullest explanation of nature and of life. It is our way of looking upon the world. We cannot fully understand an author until we know what he thinks of God, nature, and man. His fundamental beliefs in these three great departments of human knowledge will consciously or unconsciously color his thoughts and feelings. In America the prevailing philosophy is theistic; and it gives a pure, sane, and cheerful tone to our literature, which forms, in this particular, a favorable contrast with much of the current literature of Europe. Among the far-reaching influences recently introduced into science and philosophy is the theory of evolution.

**556. The Modern Novel.** — The novel is a modern form of writing. It had its progenitors in the romances of the Middle Ages. It may, perhaps, be claimed that it had its prototype in the tales of ancient Egypt or the stories of ancient Greece. But there is in reality no immediate connection — no blood relationship — between them.

The modern novel dates only from about the middle of the eighteenth century. It is then that we meet with Richardson's "Pamela," Smollett's "Roderick Random," and Fielding's "Tom Jones." It could not indeed have flourished at an earlier period. It is only in recent times that Europe and America have had the free play of intellectual liberty that offers an inviting field for serious fiction.

**557. A Dominant Literary Form.** — The novel is to-day the predominant form of literature. It has triumphed over the epic, the drama, and the essay, which occupied the literary stage of a former time. It has even outstripped poetry in its competition for popular favor. At the present time works of fiction surpass every other form of literary expression.

The novel has made its way against prejudice and opposition. There are men now living who can recall the time when the reading of a novel was regarded with disfavor by our moral teachers. The production of a novel by a Christian minister was considered little less than a public scandal. But to-day the novel is read by all classes of people; and the religious teacher and the social reformer, as well as the professional literary man, employ the novel to embody their ethical or economic teachings.

**558. Romanticism.** — In fiction there has been a notable reaction against the romanticism of the earlier part of the nineteenth century. It is not easy to give a complete and satisfactory definition of romanticism. Victor Hugo says that it is freedom in literature. It presents what is imaginative or fantastic, rather than what is real. It gives prominence to the poetic side of life. It aims at the picturesque in situation, thought, and expression. Its themes are generally such as lend themselves readily to idealistic treatment. It deals largely with the legendary tales and chivalrous deeds of the past. The Waverley novels are written in the romantic spirit, and invest the Middle Ages with an imaginative beauty. In its extreme manifestation, romanticism presents what is unreal, fantastic, melodramatic.

**559. Realism.** — Realism, as the term indicates, adheres to reality. It is a movement in keeping with the practical,

scientific spirit of our age. It begins with discarding what is idealistic or unreal in characters and situations. It aims at being true to life. "For our own part," says W. D. Howells, the leader of the realistic school of novelists in America, "we confess that we do not care to judge any work of the imagination without first of all applying this test to it. We must ask ourselves, before we ask anything else, Is it true, — true to the motives, the impulses, the principles, that shape the life of actual men and women?" For several decades the best fiction of Christendom has been dominated by the realistic spirit. It has given us faithful studies of human society, not as it ought to be, but as it really is.

**560. Representatives of Realism.** — The three great leaders of realism were Tolstoi, Zola, and Ibsen. They were men of extraordinary genius and power, princes in the realm of fiction. Their works are widely read. Some of our leading novelists — Howells, James, Crawford — have been influenced by them. After acknowledging his obligations to Zola and Ibsen, Howells says of Tolstoi: "As much as one merely human being can help another, I believe that he has helped me; he has not influenced me in æsthetics only, but in ethics too, so that I can never again see life in the way I saw it before I knew him."

**561. A One-sided Realism.** — As an effort truly to represent life we must acknowledge the worth of realism. In its proper application, it places the novel on an immovable basis. It holds the mirror up to nature. Unfortunately, the realists have not, in many cases, been true to their fundamental principles. The great leaders of realism abroad have been tainted with a fatal pessimism. They have seen only one side of life — the darker side of sin, and wretchedness, and despair. They often descend to what is coarse, impure,

obscene. No doubt their pictures are true, as far as they go. But the fatal defect of their work is that it does not reflect life as a whole. It does not portray the pure and noble and happy side of life, which is just as real as the other. In this way, though our American novelists have largely avoided the mistake, it is possible for realism to become as false to human life as the wildest romanticism.

**562. New Romanticism.** — Except in the hands of genius, realism is apt to be dull. It gives us tedious photographs. There are times when we do not care so much for instruction as for amusement and recreation. This fact opens a legitimate field for the imaginative story-teller. There is to-day a reaction against realism in the form of what has been called the new romanticism. It does not present to us elaborate studies of life, but entertains us with an interesting or exciting story. The leaders of this movement are the English writers, Doyle, Stevenson, Weyman, and Hope, whose works are extensively read in this country.

**563. Historical Fiction.** — A very notable movement in recent fiction is the historical novel. It comes, perhaps, as something of a reaction against romanticism and realism; at the same time it satisfies, in a measure, the American thirst for knowledge. The historical novel may be regarded as history served up with epicurean accessories. Some of our recent historical fiction, apart from the stories of Reconstruction days already mentioned, has attained a phenomenal circulation. It is necessary to mention only Lew Wallace's "Ben Hur, a Tale of the Christ"; Mary Johnston's "To Have and To Hold," a story of Colonial days in Virginia; Churchill's "Richard Carvel," a story of Maryland before the Revolution; Maurice Thompson's "Alice of Old Vincennes," belonging to the period of the French and Indian

War; and Mitchell's "Hugh Wynne" and Ford's "Janice Meredith," tales of the American Revolution.

**564. International Novel.** — At this point it may be well to say a word in regard to what is known as "the international novel." In this species of fiction the leading characters are born in one country and act their parts in the society of another country. As will be readily recognized, this species of writing affords an excellent opportunity to present in striking contrast the manners and ideals of different countries, and especially of America and Europe.

**565. Henry James.** — Henry James, who was born in New York in 1843, may be regarded as the inventor of the international novel, or at least as its most prominent representative. His early training and his long residence abroad have admirably fitted him for this species of writing. His education, which was of a distinctively literary type, was acquired in New York, Geneva, Paris, and Bonn. Since 1869 he has made his home chiefly in London and Paris. While several of our American novelists, like Howells and Crawford, have acquired, by residence abroad, a more or less intimate knowledge of society there, it is safe to say that no other author of our country has ever obtained such a thorough understanding of European life as Henry James.

**566. Notable Works.** — In 1877 he published "The American," which is regarded by some critics as his best production. In this work a wealthy, self-made American is placed in the midst of aristocratic, cultured Parisian life. The contrasts are often striking and painful. In "Daisy Miller," which appeared the following year, an independent, unconventional, and wilful girl works havoc among the social conventions of Rome. As will be noticed, James has not chosen the finest types of American life; and in the contrasts that he presents

he often shows a partiality for European manners and ideals. It is this fact that has sometimes, and perhaps not unjustly, invited unfriendly criticism.

**567. A Realist.** — As a novelist James is an avowed realist — a disciple of Balzac. He maintains that the novel should be a correct transcript of life ; but in following out this fundamental principle of realism he has avoided the mistakes of some of his European contemporaries. His American moral sense, early developed no doubt under the training of an able, high-minded father, has kept him from writing such contaminating scenes as are sometimes found in Zola and Bourget.

**568. Critic, Dramatist, Story-writer.** — Henry James has achieved distinction in other fields of writing. He is a critic of high rank, as is shown in his "French Poets and Novelists" (1878) and his volume on Hawthorne (1879) in the English Men of Letters Series. He has produced successful dramas. As a writer of short stories he has displayed astonishing fertility and skill. In "A Passionate Pilgrim and Other Tales" (1875), "The Madonna of the Future, and Other Tales" (1879), and many other volumes he shows himself a finished craftsman.

**569. Style.** — Of Henry James it may be said that the style is the man. It is the expression of a refined, cosmopolitan culture. James is, like Howells, a close observer, and therefore delights in details. His work is objective in character ; he reports what he observes ; and yet there is a subtle psychological analysis that serves as a basis of external incident and gives it significance. It is this psychological insight, scarcely inferior to that of his distinguished brother William, that lifts his work out of the level of the commonplace.

Henry James is one of our most prolific authors. His published volumes, sometimes produced at the rate of two or

three a year, number fifty or more. In addition to those already mentioned, "Roderick Hudson" (1875), "The Portrait of a Lady" (1881), and "An International Episode" (1879) may be indicated as showing his work at its best. In his later novels his style sometimes becomes super-refined and therefore less pleasing and effective.

**570. The Short Story.** — The short story may be regarded as a new form of literature, which has been especially cultivated in France and this country since the middle of the nineteenth century. The short story differs from the tale in being more artistic in form; that is to say, more symmetrical in structure and more finished in style.

Poe and Hawthorne are properly considered as the progenitors of the short story. The former was the first to lay down the principles of this form of writing and to exemplify them in practice. Brander Matthews, himself a writer of polished stories, has summarized the teaching of Poe as follows: "The short story must do one thing only, and it must do this completely and perfectly; it must not loiter or digress; it must have unity of action, unity of temper, unity of tone, unity of color, unity of effect; and it must vigilantly exclude everything that might interfere with its singleness of intention."<sup>1</sup>

**571. A Miniature Novel.** — The short story is a miniature novel. It differs from the novel in being shorter, in having fewer characters, and in being restricted to a single effect. But, like the novel, it has its characters, its plot, and its setting. It has the advantage, as Poe pointed out, of being read at a single sitting and consequently of making a deep impression, while the novel is subjected to the disadvantage of interrupted perusal with its inevitable loss of effect.

<sup>1</sup> Brander Matthews, *The Short Story*, p. 26.

**572. Leading Exponents.** — The short story has been encouraged by the multiplication of magazines, to which it gives variety and interest. In large measure literature is obedient to the economic law of supply and demand. The short story, which has been gradually enriched in scope and human interest,



THOMAS NELSON PAGE

has been employed, like the novel, to portray life in all parts of our country. Miss Jewett and Mrs. Freeman have used it to exhibit New England life and character; Bret Harte has employed it to bring before us the scenes of '49 in California; Thomas Nelson Page to describe the society of an older day in Virginia; Charles Egbert Craddock to give us glimpses of mountaineer life in Kentucky and Tennessee;

Hamlin Garland to present etchings of plain folk in Wisconsin ; and Jack London to unveil pictures of the frozen North. Other writers deserving mention are O. Henry, Myra Kelley, Bruno Lessing, Gouverneur Morris, Steward Edward White, and many more.

**573. Literary Centres.** — During the first third of the nineteenth century the literary centre of our country was in New York. Cooper, Irving, Bryant, to say nothing of Drake, Halleck, and Paulding, resided there. Subsequently the centre was changed to Boston, where, or in its vicinity, lived Emerson, Longfellow, Whittier, Lowell, Holmes, and others, who have been the chief glory of American letters. These two groups were successively dominant in our literature. At present the literary talent of our country is widely disseminated. The West and the South have entered the field as never before ; and in recent years writers like Bret Harte, Joaquin Miller, George W. Cable, Sidney Lanier, Joel Chandler Harris, Thomas Nelson Page, Miss Murfree, and many others, have won a fair proportion of literary laurels.

**574. Critical Independence.** — Our literature has attained its critical independence. In forming our estimate of a work of art, we no longer anxiously wait for the European verdict. The multiplication of literary journals, as well as the wide prevalence of literary culture, has fostered a critical spirit. Stoddard, Stedman, Whipple, Howells, not to mention many others, all deserve to rank high, not only for their achievements in other departments of literature, but also for their work in criticism. In some cases, as perhaps with Poe, Joaquin Miller, and Walt Whitman, it has been necessary to set ourselves against the judgment of foreign critics, who are too apt to accept what is eccentric or melodramatic as something distinctively American.

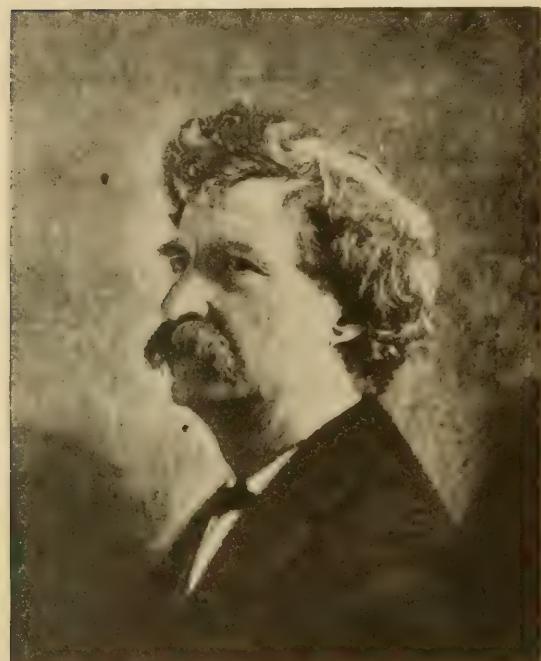
**575. Female Writers.**—A noteworthy feature of the present period is the large number of female writers. In both prose and poetry they have attained a high degree of excellence. The old theory of the intellectual inferiority of woman has been exploded. Admitted to the same educational advantages as men, whether in separate or co-educational institutions, our young women have proved themselves equally successful in study. They have found an open field in literature, and have occupied it with eminent ability. Among those have achieved eminence are Elizabeth Stuart Phelps Ward, Helen Hunt Jackson, Mary Noailles Murfree, Frances Hodgson Burnett, Mary E. Wilkins, and many others.

**576. The Children's Age.**—This has been called the children's age. Never before was the responsibility of training children more strongly felt. The rigorous discipline of former times has given way to a kindly and sympathetic training. Our schools are made as attractive as possible. The methods of instruction are studiously adjusted to child nature. The text-books are interesting in matter and attractive in form. Children's periodicals are multiplied, and in many cases are edited with eminent taste and ability. There never before was such a wealth of literature for young people. Our ablest writers have not disdained to employ their talents for the entertainment and instruction of youth. Among the long list of those who have contributed to our juvenile literature are J. T. Trowbridge, Mrs. A. D. T. Whitney, Louisa M. Alcott, Thomas Bailey Aldrich, Mrs. Burnett, Frank R. Stockton, and Thomas Nelson Page.

**577. American Humor.**—Americans have a strong sense of humor. Nowhere else is a joke more keenly relished. Nearly every periodical, not excluding the religious weekly,

has its column for wit and humor ; and not a few of our papers are devoted exclusively to the risible side of our nature. Among our writers have been a number of humorists. If they have not generally reached a high refinement of wit, they have nevertheless brought the relief of laughter to many a weary moment. Charles Farrar Browne ("Artemus

Ward") and H. W. Shaw ("Josh Billings") may be regarded as professional humorists. Among those who have occupied a higher plane are Charles Dudley Warner, whose humor is delicate in quality, and Samuel L. Clemens ("Mark Twain"), who deservedly ranks as our greatest humorist.



SAMUEL CLEMENS ("MARK TWAIN")

regarded merely as a humorist, was in reality much more. Beneath the broad wit and humor that make his books enjoyable, there was a big, active brain that was interested in almost every phase of life.

**579. Rugged Honesty.** — He was a man of rugged, aggressive honesty. This trait made him utterly intolerant of sham ; and hence he did not hesitate to attack it, though entrenched in respectability and power, with the tremendous force of his

**578. Mark Twain.** — Mark Twain, the pen name of Samuel L. Clemens (1835-1910), though commonly re-

wit and logic. In his "Innocents Abroad" he constantly makes fun of the affected sentimentality of previous travellers. He attempted to correct what he believed to be a false estimate of the literary ability of James Fenimore Cooper. He nobly came to the defence of Harriet Shelley against the whitewashing biographer of her husband. He did not believe in "Christian Science"; and with all the wit of grotesque exaggeration and all the force of serious, massive logic he attempted to set forth what he believed to be its folly and false pretence.

**580. An American Author.**—Mark Twain was a distinctively American author. His best works, such as "Roughing It," "Tom Sawyer," and "Huckleberry Finn," reflect types and phases of American life. In a style remarkable for its graphic force and illumined by incomparable touches of humorously exaggerated description he has portrayed the riches of his own abundant experience.

His life was rich and varied; most of his writings are autobiographical. His formal education did not extend beyond that of the common school; but as a printer, steam-boat pilot on the Mississippi, newspaper man, and miner in the far West, he acquired the larger education of American life in forms that in many respects have forever passed away.

**581. Influence.**—His influence was on the side of right. "He used his gift," to adopt the words of Dr. Van Dyke in his Memorial Address, "not for evil, but for good. The atmosphere of his work is clean and wholesome. He made fun without hatred. He laughed many of the world's false claimants out of court, and entangled many of the world's false witnesses in the net of ridicule. In his best books and stories, colored with his own experiences, he touched the absurdities

of life with penetrating, but not unkindly mockery, and made us feel somehow the infinite pathos of life's realities."

His last years were filled with the sorrow of disappointment and bereavement. He lost his buoyant, hopeful outlook on life; and at the last this big-hearted and gifted man, whose wit and humor have added to the sum of human happiness, fell under the spell of a cynical pessimism.

**582. Place of Poetry.** — Poetry is less prominent in our literature than during the reign of Longfellow, Whittier, and Lowell. Since the death of the great singers of the earlier part of the nineteenth century at home and abroad, no one has risen to take their place. There is no dearth of poets, but they belong to the lower ranges of song. The poetry of the present time is artistic rather than creative, refined rather than powerful. The present may be regarded as an age of prose. Fiction largely predominates. But the sphere of poetry is the highest in literature. It is the language of seers; and when the fulness of time again comes, there will no doubt arise great singers, to give expression to the highest thought and noblest aspirations of our race.

**583. Geographical Groups.** — The writers of the present or Second National Period may be divided, in a general way, into four geographical groups, namely, New England, the Middle Atlantic States, the South, and the Middle and Far West. As would be naturally expected from the large increase of our population and from the growing intelligence of our people, there is a larger number of writers than ever before. A reference to the list prefixed to this period will show the increasing prominence of Southern and Western writers. It will be noted, also, that theology is relatively less prominent, as is history also; on the other hand, there is an increase in poetry of the second order,

and an astonishing development of fiction. It is in these two fields that the literary talent of our country is at present chiefly engaged.

### I. NEW ENGLAND

**584. Thomas Bailey Aldrich.** — Thomas Bailey Aldrich was a New Englander by birth and spent a large part of his life in that part of our country. He is both a poet and prose-writer, and in each field exhibits fine artistic qualities. No other writer of the New England group deserves, perhaps, a higher rank. As often happens, the poetic impulse manifested itself early; and his first volume of verse, "The Bells," appeared in 1854, when he was only eighteen. His "Ballad of Babie Bell, and Other Poems" was issued two years later, and established his reputation as a poet.

**585. "Story of a Bad Boy."** — He received his education in Portsmouth, New Hampshire. He has preserved the



THOMAS BAILEY ALDRICH

incidents of those days in "The Story of a Bad Boy," which was published in 1869. It is largely autobiographical, but the facts hardly justify the title. His earlier manhood was spent in New York, first in the counting-room of an uncle, and afterwards as reader for a publishing house, and editor of various papers. During this New York period he established warm friendships with other writers, among whom Stedman, Stoddard, and Bayard Taylor deserve to be mentioned.

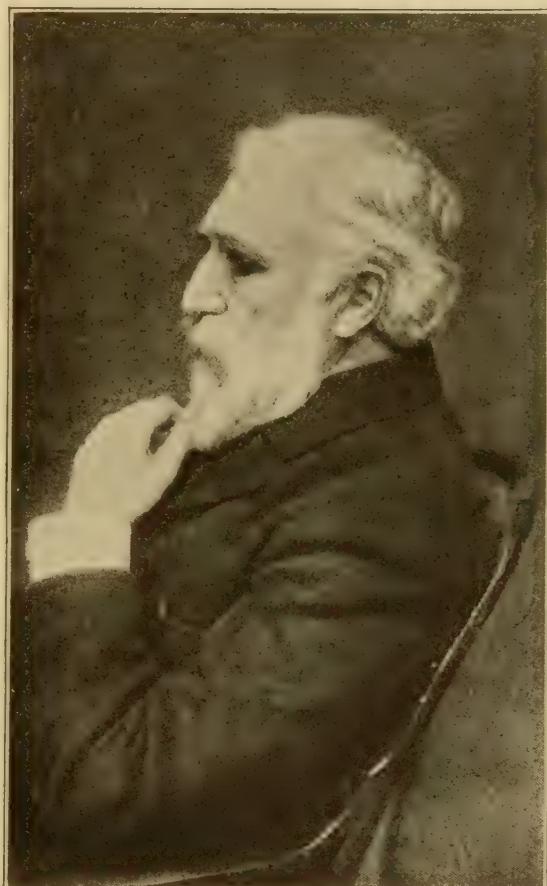
**586. Editorial Activities.** — In 1866 he moved to Boston, where he became editor of *Every Saturday*, an ambitious literary paper. Though deserving success, it failed in 1874. A few years later, in 1881, he became editor of *The Atlantic Monthly*, to which he had long been a welcome contributor. He displayed admirable editorial ability; and it is to his credit that he recognized the ability of several young writers, — Charles Egbert Craddock, Sarah Orne Jewett, Louise Imogen Guiney, — who have since become well known in our literary annals.

**587. Character of his Work.** — Mr. Aldrich's literary activity was pretty well divided between poetry and prose. Among his prose works of fiction are "Marjorie Daw and Other Stories" (1873), "Prudence Palfrey" (1874), "The Queen of Sheba" (1877), and "The Stillwater Tragedy" (1880). Along with artistic delicacy there is the expression of a humorous and genial nature; "a deftness of touch," to use the words of Scudder, "a sureness of aim, a piquancy of flavor, a playfulness of wit, a delicacy of humor," that make his stories perfectly delightful reading. But Aldrich's fame is ultimately to rest, perhaps, on his poetry, of which there is now a collective edition. His poems are as delicate in craftsmanship as they are refined in thought and sentiment. His poetic creed is to be found in one of his sonnets: —

"Let art be all in all ;  
 Build as thou wilt, unspoiled by praise or blame,  
 Build as thou wilt, and as thy light is given :  
 Then if at last the airy structure fall,  
 Dissolve, and vanish — take thyself no shame.  
 They fail, and they alone, who have not striven."

**588. Charles Dudley Warner.** — Charles Dudley Warner was a writer of much versatility. He was editor, essayist, and novelist. He was one of the most refined of our humorists; but his reputation as a humorist, as in the case of some other writers, has rendered his serious work more difficult of acceptance. The public is apt to persist in its refusal to take the humorist seriously. It is a tribute to the ability and worth of Mr. Warner that he was heedfully listened to when he treated seriously of practical life.

**589. Editorial and Other Work.** — After graduation in law at the University of Pennsylvania, he practised his profession for a time in Chicago. In 1860 he



CHARLES DUDLEY WARNER

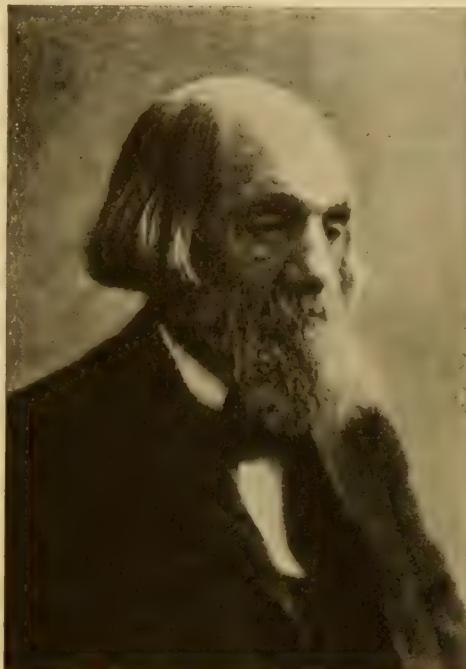
was called to Hartford as assistant editor of *The Press*; and after the consolidation of the paper with *The Courant* in 1867, he became co-editor with Joseph R. Hawley, and retained his connection with the paper till the time of his death. His literary work, which is considerable in amount, was done in spare moments snatched from his editorial duties. "My Summer in a Garden," published in 1870, established his reputation as a refined humorist. "The principal value of a private garden," he says, "is not understood. It is not to give the possessor vegetables and fruit (that can be better and cheaper done by the market-gardeners), but to teach him patience and philosophy, and the higher virtues,—hope deferred, and expectations blighted, leading directly to resignation, and sometimes to alienation." In a similar vein are "Back-log Studies" (1872), "Baddeck and That Sort of Thing" (1874), and "In the Wilderness" (1878).

**590. Books of Travel.** — Warner travelled extensively in Europe and in the Orient, and naturally recorded his impressions in editorial letters to *The Courant*. In 1872 a collection of these letters was published under the title "Saunterings." Other books of travel are "My Winter on the Nile" (1876), and "In the Levant" (1877). These books of travel are unusually interesting. The author's keen observation is re-enforced from time to time by delightful touches of humor and satire. He has an exceedingly neat way of puncturing pretension and humbug.

**591. Varied Literary Labors.** — For the "American Men of Letters Series," of which he was the general editor, he wrote "Washington Irving," a sympathetic biographical study published in 1881. It is one of the most delightful volumes in the series to which it belongs. He became one of the editors of *Harper's Magazine* in 1884, and was not an unworthy

successor of George William Curtis in the department of the Easy Chair. "On Horseback through the South" is an impartial record of observations and impressions. This work, which appeared in 1888, excited a noteworthy influence in removing misapprehensions fostered at the North by uninformed or self-seeking politicians. In his later years Warner tried his hand at fiction, and wrote "Their Pilgrimage," "A Little Journey in the World," and "The Golden House." But, with all his versatility, he was not destined to high achievement in this department of literature; and his novels, while displaying to a greater or less degree the literary charm of his other writings, somehow lack vitality and power.

**592. Edward Everett Hale.**—Edward Everett Hale belonged to an old New England family of decided literary tastes. His father and elder brother were journalists, and his sister Lucretia was a magazine writer and author. He was graduated at Harvard in 1839, and at once became a teacher in the Latin School of Boston. In 1842 he was licensed as a Unitarian minister, and a few years later became pastor of the South Congregational Church, Boston, where he remained till his death in 1909. Though less brilliant as a speaker than many of his contemporaries, there are none,



EDWARD EVERETT HALE

perhaps, who were more active and more successful in philanthropic work.

**593. Editorial Work.** — He did much editorial work in connection with the *Christian Examiner*, the *Sunday School Gazette*, and the *Old and New*, which was subsequently merged into *Scribner's Monthly*. He was not only an able writer himself, but an excellent judge of the productions of others and of the demands of public taste. It was in *Old and New* that his "Ten Times One is Ten" was first published, a work that led to the organization of charitable clubs numbering in the aggregate fully fifty thousand. "In His Name," a story of the Waldenses, issued in 1874, has exerted a moral and religious influence scarcely less extended.

**594. Famous Stories.** — Hale won recognition as a gifted writer by his story of "My Double and How He Undid Me," published in *The Atlantic Monthly* in 1859. It is a story that well deserves a place in the volume entitled "Modern Classics." One of his most famous stories is "The Man without a Country," a piece of realistic writing not inferior to that of Defoe. It served to intensify national feeling during the Civil War. "The Skeleton in the Closet" is another short story that has attained a wide popularity.

**595. Many-Sided Activity.** — The literary activity of Hale was many-sided. He wrote a dozen historical works, including a "Life of Washington" (1887), "Franklin in France" (1887), and a "United States History" for the Chautauqua circles, a work with which he was long identified. "For Fifty Years" is a collection of poems. In all his writings he exhibits a manly, helpful spirit, not unlike his hero, Henry Wadsworth, whose motto was, —

“Look up, and not down;  
Look forward, and not back;  
Look out, and not in;  
And lend a hand.”

**596. Group of Literary Women.** — During this Second National Period, New England has produced a remarkable group of literary women. In number and ability they fairly vie with the authors of the opposite sex. Their principal writings are fiction and poetry, and a few of them, as Rose Terry Cooke, Elizabeth Stuart Phelps Ward, Lucy Larcom, and others, have distinguished themselves in both. Other members of this group are Margaret Wade Deland, Sarah Orne Jewett, Adeline D. T. Whitney, Louisa M. Alcott, Louise Chandler Moulton, Mary A. Dodge (“Gail Hamilton”), Celia Thaxter, Mary E. Wilkins, and Louise Imogen Guiney. For biographical data and a list of their works, the brief notices prefixed to this period are to be consulted.

## 2. THE MIDDLE STATES

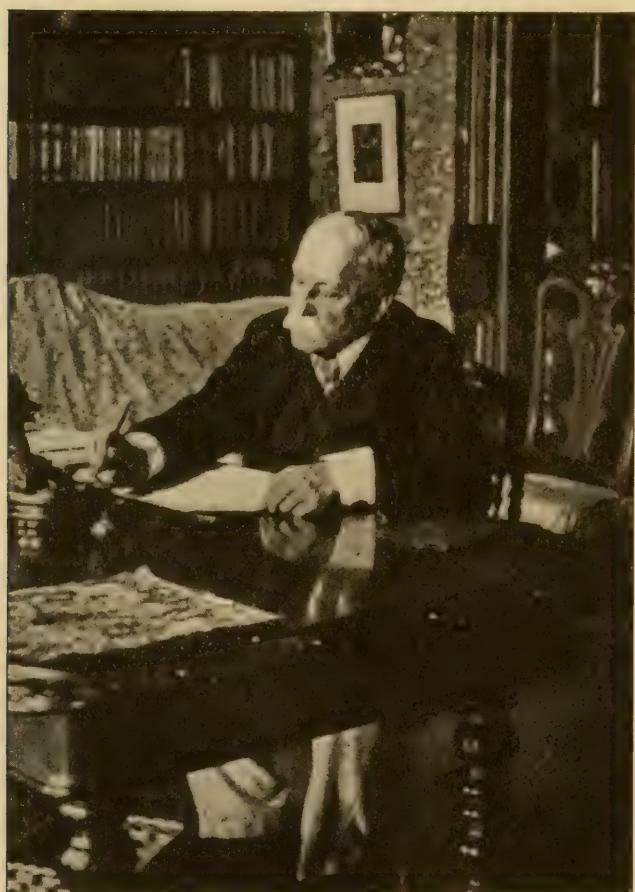
**597. Prominence.** — The Middle Atlantic States have a prominent place in American literature in the period under consideration. New York may be regarded as at present the literary centre of our country. This enviable position it holds by reason of its large number of writers, its great periodicals, and its prominent publishing houses.

**598. William Dean Howells.** — William Dean Howells, though brought up in Ohio, has spent his best years of literary activity in New York. Like so many other men of letters, he possesses great versatility of genius, and has filled many rôles in the literary world. He has been poet, editor,

critic, dramatist, and novelist, though it is in the last that he has won a distinguishing eminence. He has never taken poetry very seriously; indeed, he says in one of his books, "I think it should be a flavor, a spice, a sweet, a delicate relish in the high banquet of literature."

**599. Home Influence.** — Howells sprang from a family of literary taste. His father was specially fond of poetry,

and in his auto-biographic work, "*A Boy's Town*," our author mentions the fact that his father was accustomed to read to the family after the day's work was done. Young Howells' love of reading was unusual; and, as he tells us in the very enjoyable book "*My Literary Passions*," he early made the acquaintance of Goldsmith, Irving, Scott, and the other principal writers of England and America.



WILLIAM DEAN HOWELLS

Without a collegiate education, his literary culture was based on a wide and

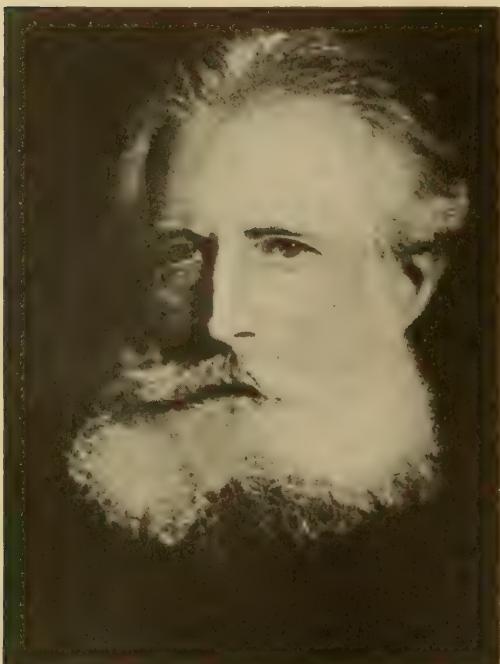
thorough acquaintance with what is best in English literature.

**600. Consul at Venice.** — In 1860, while connected with the editorial staff of the *Ohio State Journal*, he wrote an excellent campaign life of Abraham Lincoln. This resulted, a little later, in his appointment as United States consul at Venice. With the irresistible impulses of a born author, he turned the experience of his three years' sojourn abroad to literary account in his "Venetian Life" (1866) and "Italian Journeys" (1867). These sketches contain a great deal of shrewd observation and genial humor.

**601. Magazine Editor.** — In 1866 Howells became assistant editor of *The Atlantic Monthly*, and in 1871 succeeded James T. Fields as editor. He filled this position for ten years with signal ability, and then resigned in order to devote himself more fully to original literary production. In 1886 he formed a connection with the firm of Harper and Brothers, and contributed many admirable papers to the Editor's Study of their magazine. He there brought a severe indictment against American criticism, affirming that critics "were perilously beset by temptations to be personal, to be vulgar, to be arrogant, which they did not always overcome."

**602. Realistic Novels.** — Howells entered upon his career as a novelist in 1871 with the publication of "Their Wedding Journey." Almost every year since that time has seen the appearance of a new work of fiction. Among the most important of the long list may be mentioned "The Undiscovered Country" (1880), "A Fearful Responsibility" (1882), "A Modern Instance" (1883), "The Rise of Silas Lapham" (1885), and "A Hazard of New Fortunes" (1889). Howells may be regarded as the leader of realism in America, a disciple of Tolstoi, for whom he expresses great admira-

tion. He attempts to describe life as it is; and by his insight, humor, and careful elaboration he succeeds in throwing around commonplace people and incidents a peculiar charm. It is greatly to his credit that, unlike most of the French realists, he avoids portraying the criminal and the obscene. But it must be added that life, as portrayed in his works, is petty and shallow.



EDMUND CLARENCE STEDMAN

experienced in a long connection with Wall Street many vicissitudes of fortune. But the wealth that he probably longed for in order to be able to give himself entirely to literary pursuits never came to him.

**604. "Poems, Lyric and Idyllic."** — Stedman was early drawn to literature, and at college won a prize with a poem on "Westminster Abbey." His newspaper work did not entirely win him away from the poetic muse; and in 1860

**603. Edmund Clarence Stedman.** — Edmund Clarence Stedman came of New England stock. Suspended from Yale College in his junior year for some escapade or other, he entered journalism and worked on the *New York Tribune*, and afterwards on the *New York World*. He was a diligent worker and acquired valuable experience, but displayed no brilliant aptitude as a journalist. He later became a stock-broker, and

he published a volume entitled "Poems, Lyric and Idyllic." Though the volume contained nothing very striking, yet it was favorably received. It had a youthful tone, contained reminiscences of college days, and betrayed the poet's study of Tennyson, particularly in the "Flood-Tide." The only reference to current political events was the poem "How Brown Took Harper's Ferry," the last stanza of which, in the light of subsequent events, appears prophetic.

**605. Two Poetic Ventures.** — The following decade witnessed considerable poetic activity. In 1864 appeared "Alice of Monmouth," an idyl of the Civil War. It is a romantic story in various metres, the very poetry of which will keep it from ever being popular. The best-known passage is the "Cavalry Song": —

"Our good steeds snuff the evening air,  
Our pulses with their purpose tingle ;  
The foeman's fires are twinkling there ;  
He leaps to hear our sabres jingle !  
HALT !  
Each carbine sends its whizzing ball :  
Now, cling ! clang ! forward all,  
Into the fight !"

"The Blameless Prince" (1869) is a delicately voluptuous tale, the moral of which is that saintliness in human life is only hypocrisy in disguise; or, as the poet phrases it: —

"He who brightest is, and best,  
Still may fear the secret test  
That shall try his heart aright."

In spite of its exquisite artistic quality, the poem is at once a surprise and regret to the friends of the poet.

**606. Several Notable Poems.** — Among the author's miscellaneous poems deserving mention, as found in the House-

hold Edition, are "Laura, My Darling," addressed to his wife, "The Doorstep," a delicious reminiscence of youth, "Pan in Wall Street," an exquisite combination of fancy and humor, and "The Undiscovered Country," which vibrates with an earnest reflective note, struck by our poet only too seldom:—

"Could we but know  
The land that ends our dark, uncertain travel,  
Where lie those happier hills and meadows low,—  
Ah, if beyond the spirit's inmost cavil,  
Aught of that country could we surely know,  
Who would not go?"

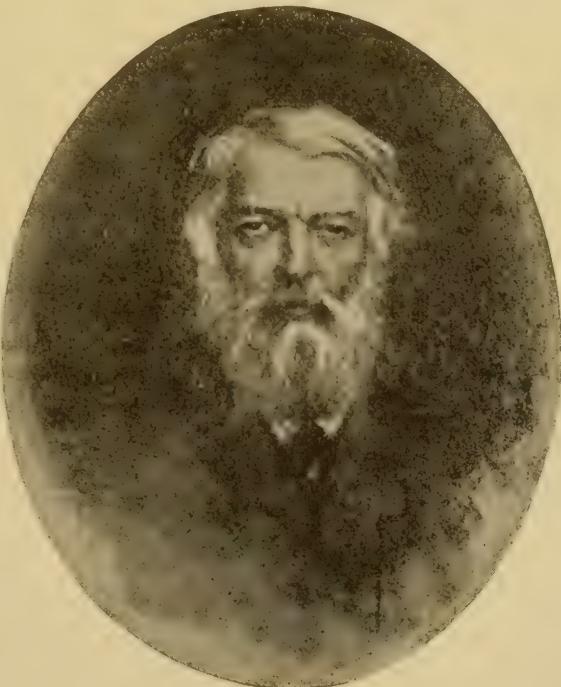
**607. A Literary Artist.**—Stedman's poetry is characterized by a delicate finish and nimble play of fancy. But it is the work of a skilful literary artist rather than of a seer. He had no message for his age, and as a rule his poetry plays only about the surface of things. It is lacking in deep moral earnestness.

**608. Critical Work.**—But Stedman's work extended beyond the bounds of poetry; he was a critic and literary historian as well. It is in these fields that he won, perhaps, the strongest claim upon our gratitude. His "Victorian Poets" appeared in 1875, and a companion volume, "The Poets of America," in 1876. Both volumes have been widely read and represent American criticism at its best. Stedman exhibits a large, catholic spirit; he is generous in the recognition of merit; and he rarely errs in his judgment. Excessive refinement of style is, perhaps, the chief defect in these volumes of criticism. "The Nature and Art of Poetry" (1892), first delivered as a series of lectures at Johns Hopkins University, is unsurpassed in lucidity and thoroughness of treatment. He defines poetry as "rhythmical, imag-

inative language, expressing the invention, taste, thought, passion, and insight of the human soul."

**609. Anthologies.** — Among his other works are "A Library of American Literature" (1888-1891), prepared in collaboration with Miss Ellen M. Hutchinson; "A Victorian Anthology," to illustrate his critical review of British poetry during the reign of Victoria; and "An American Anthology," to serve as a companion volume to his "Review of American Poetry in the Nineteenth Century." No other American was better fitted for this editorial work, and these volumes of selections will long stand as a monument to the author's taste and judgment. By his varied labors Stedman won an honorable and lasting place in American letters.

**610. Richard Henry Stoddard.** — The life of Richard Henry Stoddard is an inspiration; it shows the triumph of literary genius over untoward circumstances. His early life was given to the trade of iron-moulding; he was deprived of education beyond that afforded in the public schools; yet, in spite of his unfavorable surroundings, he finally won a creditable place in American letters.



RICHARD HENRY STODDARD

**611. Literary Aspirations.** — Most of his life was spent in New York. Through the toilsome years of his youth he cherished literary aspirations, and enlarged his culture by diligent reading, especially among the poets. Later he enjoyed the friendship of such men as Bayard Taylor, Stedman, and Aldrich. His contributions to newspapers and magazines gained for him the reputation of a young man of ability. His literary career may be fairly dated from 1852, when he published a volume of poems that bore the impress of genius. Afterwards, at intervals more or less extended, appeared successive volumes of poetry, most of which may be found in the collective edition of 1880.

**612. Poetic Quality.** — Stoddard's poetry covers a wide range, but does not possess great depth. He did not undertake to solve any of the great problems of life. He was a harper rather than a seer. He is best in his brief lyrics, in which he exhibits the same deft handling that characterizes Aldrich and Stedman. He has a keen sense of the beautiful, and at times touches a sad and pathetic note, as in "The Flight of Youth": —

"There are gains for all our losses,  
    There are balms for all our pain ;  
But when youth, the dream, departs,  
    It takes something from our hearts,  
        And it never comes again."

**613. Earning a Livelihood.** — Stoddard never enjoyed the leisure of opulence. The cares of earning a livelihood constantly weighed upon him. He held a position in the custom-house of New York for seventeen years, served as private secretary to General George B. McClellan for three years, and was city librarian in 1874. During all these years his pen was not idle, and he accomplished a large amount

of literary work ; but much of it, though conscientiously and ably done, belonged to what is known as the “ pot-boiling ” kind.

**614. A Melancholy Tone.** — It is painful to note that the burdensome years tinged his later verse with a melancholy hue. The hard realities of life took away his buoyant hopefulness. The change is seen in “An Old Song Reversed” :

“‘There are gains for all our losses,’  
So I said when I was young.  
If I sang that song again,  
'Twould not be with that refrain,  
Which but suits an idle tongue.

No, the words I sang were idle,  
And will ever so remain ;  
Death, and Age, and vanished Youth  
All declare this bitter truth,  
There's a loss for every gain.”

**615. Frank R. Stockton.** — Francis Richard Stockton, better known as Frank R. Stockton, the name on his title-pages, is one of our most original writers. His literary individuality is almost as clearly marked as that of Hawthorne or Poe. There is a quaintness or incongruity in his plots and situations that places him among the most refined of American humorists. He tells an impossible or absurd story, as in “A Tale of Negative Gravity,” with an imperturbable serenity. His style is as simple and matter-of-fact as that of Defoe.

**616. Earlier Years.** — Stockton was born in Philadelphia in 1834, and graduated at the Central High School. He belonged to a literary family, and as a schoolboy won

a prize for a story. His first important story, "Kate," after being rejected by various editors, appeared in the *Southern Literary Messenger* in 1859. Though immature, it contains suggestions of the peculiar vein developed in the work of his later years.



FRANK R. STOCKTON

**617. Various Literary Labors.** —

Though his father wished him to study medicine, he took up wood-engraving, by which, for the next few years, he earned a livelihood. But his literary tastes were not extinguished, and he became a frequent contributor to the periodical press. At length he gave up his trade of wood-engraving, and joined the staff of the Philadelphia

*Morning Post*. A story contributed to *Scribner* in 1872, "Stephen Skarridge's Christmas," attracted the attention of the editor, Dr. J. G. Holland, who induced the author to move to New York. He became assistant editor of *Scribner's Monthly*; and on the establishment of *St. Nicholas* in 1873, he was added to its editorial staff. The "Rudder

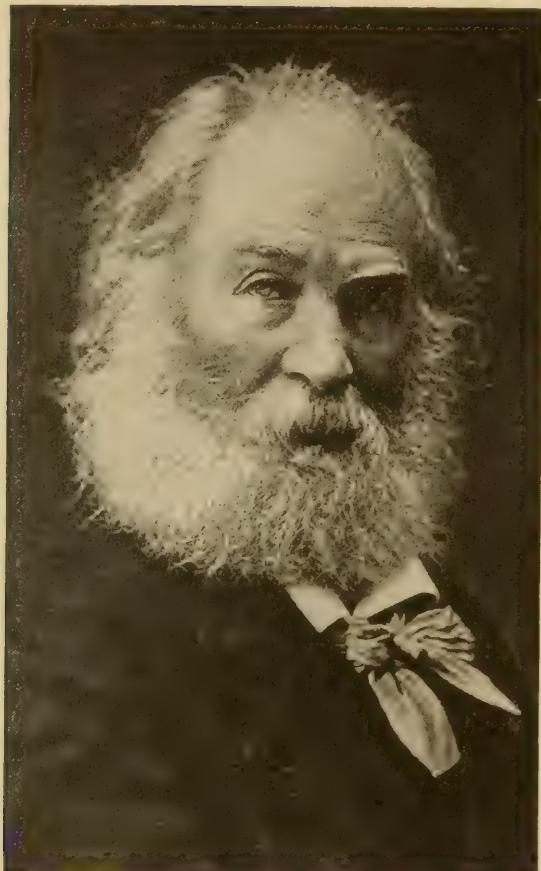
Grange" series, which appeared in *Scribner* in 1878, made him famous.

**618. Noteworthy Volumes.** — He resigned his editorial work in 1882 in order to give himself entirely to original composition. Till his death in 1903 he remained a frequent contributor of delightful sketches to our leading magazines, and almost every year he published some noteworthy book. Among these may be mentioned "The Late Mrs. Null" (1886), "The Casting Away of Mrs. Lecks and Mrs. Aleshine" (1886), "The Dusantes" (1888), "The Great War Syndicate" (1889), "The House of Martha" (1891), "Pomona's Travels" (1895), "The Girl at Cobhurst" (1898), and many others.

**619. Short Stories.** — Stockton is best in his short stories, the most noted of which is "The Lady or the Tiger?" But there are others scarcely less interesting, as "The Remarkable Wreck of the Thomas Hyde," "A Tale of Negative Gravity," "His Wife's Deceased Sister," and "The Clover-fields' Carriage." "With a gentle, ceaseless murmur of amusement," to quote a friendly critic, "and a flickering twinkle of smiles, the story moves steadily on in the calm triumph of its assured and unassailable absurdity, its logical and indisputable impossibility."

**620. Walt Whitman.** — Walt Whitman is a puzzle to critics — a unique figure in American literature. He had neither predecessors nor followers. He has a number of warm partisans at home and abroad, but he has never been a popular poet. He expressed himself as willing to wait for appreciation; but the probability is that posterity will be as unresponsive as his contemporaries have been.

**621. Largeness of Spirit.** — It is well to inquire into the merits which have gained him a circle of warm friends, such



WALT WHITMAN

as Burroughs and Emerson in America, and Professor Dowden in England. Perhaps the most notable characteristic of Whitman is his largeness of spirit and his vigorous type of manhood. He did not write lyrics "to his mistress' eyebrows." His gaze was as broad as the continent, and embraced every class of people and every vocation of life. With something of Shakespeare's breadth, he saw beneath the accidents of fortune and the wrappings of conventionality the

dignity and worth of humanity. He loved mankind; and his broad spirit of democracy recognized no inferiority of sex. Hence he exclaims:—

"I am the poet of the woman the same as the man,  
And I say it is as great to be a woman as to be a man,  
And I say there is nothing greater than the mother of men."

"I chant the chant of dilation or pride,  
We have had ducking and depreciation about enough,  
I show that size is only development."

"Have you outstript the rest? are you the President?  
It is a trifle, they will more than arrive there every one, and still pass on."

I am he that walks with the tender and growing night,  
I call to the earth and sea, half-held by the night."

**622. Various Occupations.** — The circumstances of Whitman's life gave him a wide acquaintance with men and manners. He was born on Long Island in 1819; and after acquiring an elementary education, he became in succession a teacher, printer, editor, and carpenter. He took up his residence for a time in New York. Later he made a leisurely tour through the Southern and Western States, stopping to work whenever his means became exhausted. During the Civil War he was a hospital nurse, and afterwards a clerk in the Treasury Department. Finally in 1873, he settled in Camden, New Jersey, which remained his home till his death in 1892.

**623. Outdoor Life.** — Like Sir Walter Scott and James Fenimore Cooper, Whitman enjoyed outdoor life. Men were more to him than books. He loved the freedom of the far-reaching sky and the exhilaration of exercise in the open air. The earth and sky were little short of intoxication to him. In his "Song of the Open Road" he says:—

"Afoot and light-hearted I take to the open road  
Healthy, free, the world before me,  
The long brown path before me leading wherever I choose.  
Henceforth I ask not good-fortune, I myself am good-fortune,  
Henceforth I whimper no more, postpone no more, need nothing.  
Done with indoor complaints, libraries, querulous criticism,  
Strong and content I travel the open road."

**624. A Mystical Element.** — In spite of the ruggedness of his nature, Whitman had a mystical element in his soul. He not only rejoiced in the external splendors of Nature, but he fancied that they had a meaning and voice. In his poem

"When Lilacs Last in the Dooryard Bloomed" there is a fine passage in which this mysticism is clearly revealed:—

"O western orb sailing the heaven,  
Now I know what you must have meant as a month since I walk'd,  
As I walk'd in silence the transparent shadowy night,  
As I saw you had something to tell as you bent to me night after night,  
As you droop'd from the sky low down as if to my side (while the  
other stars all looked on),  
As we wander'd together the solemn night."

**625. Healthy Optimism.** — Whitman, like Burns, had a fellow-feeling for the lower orders of the animal kingdom. The bird, as it poured forth its song from the midst of the swamp, was his "dearest brother." He sang also a healthy optimism. While he recognized the toils and sorrows of men, he believed that the end of all human struggle and suffering was something higher and better. So he sings:—

"Forever alive, forever forward,  
Stately, solemn, sad, withdrawn, baffled, mad, turbulent, feeble, dis-  
satisfied,  
Desperate, proud, fond, sick, accepted by men, rejected by men,  
They go ! they go ! I know that they go, but I know not where they go,  
But I know that they go toward the best — toward something great."

**626. Lack of Artistic Sense.** — These are characteristics of a great-souled poet. Where, then, are the shortcomings that prevented a general and generous recognition of Whitman's worth? They are found in his wilful disregard of literary traditions and in his lack of a delicate artistic sense. Much of his work falls below the level of respectable prose, and at his best the poet is not without the offence of an obtrusive innovation. He has whole paragraphs made up of a crude enumeration of unpoetical objects. Take, for example, the following:—

"You flagged walks of the cities! you strong curbs at the edges!  
You ferries! you planks and posts of wharves! you timber-lined sides!  
you distant ships!  
You rows of houses! you window-pierced façades! you roofs!  
You porches and entrances! you copings and iron guards!" etc.

Such a passage is not poetry; at the most it can be regarded only as the raw materials of poetry. It is comparable to a collection of stones, bricks, and lumber out of which a beautiful mansion is to be reared. It too often happens — perhaps one might say it generally happens — that Whitman gets no farther than this preliminary collection of materials. Yet what he might have done had he adopted the recognized forms of poetic art is shown in the last stanza of "O Captain, My Captain," a noble threnody, in which he unconsciously falls into metre and rhyme: —

"My Captain does not answer, his lips are pale and still;  
My father does not feel my arm, he has not pulse nor will;  
The ship is anchored safe and sound, its voyage closed and done!  
From fearful trip the victor ship comes in with object won:  
    Exult, O shores, and ring, O bells!  
    But I with mournful tread,  
        Walk the deck my Captain lies,  
        Fallen, cold, and dead."

### 3. THE SOUTH

**627. Literary Prominence.** — A remarkable feature of this period is the literary prominence of the South. Since the Civil War and the social changes it brought about, a group of young and vigorous writers has sprung up and conquered recognition in the field of letters. They breathe the larger life that has come to our country; and with no fond clinging to a provincial spirit, they exhibit the breadth of a

cosmopolitan culture. There is no weak imitation of foreign models, but a clear and successful effort, in both poetry and fiction, to paint nature and life as they are.

**628. Rich Literary Materials.** — The writers of whom we are speaking have discovered that Southern landscape and Southern life are rich in literary materials. Nearly every State in the South has furnished incident, character, and scenery for novels and poems. Cable has portrayed the Creole life of Louisiana; Page has depicted life in Virginia and South Carolina; Joel Chandler Harris has rescued the negro folklore of Georgia; Miss Murfree has brought before us the mountaineers of Tennessee; Allen has described scenes and incidents in Kentucky; Lanier pictures the marshes and corn-fields of Georgia; and Miss Johnston revives the colonial life of the old Dominion. In some of these works we find a literary talent and a literary art unsurpassed in any other part of our country.

**629. George W. Cable.** — George W. Cable was one of the first of the younger race of Southern writers to win literary distinction. This he did with a series of short stories, first published in *Scribner* and afterwards issued in a volume entitled "Old Creole Days." These stories had the merit of introducing an entirely new element into American fiction; and apart from their novelty, they were told with literary grace and dramatic power.

**630. Earlier Career.** — Cable was born and reared in New Orleans. His father came from Virginia, and his mother from New England. He was trained in the school of adversity, and as a youth bore the burden of supporting the family. In 1863 he entered the Confederate army, and served till the close of the war. The scars he bears witness to his courage. He was for a time attached to the staff of the *Picayune*, but

lost his position because, to use his own words, "as a reporter I was a failure." He was employed as clerk in a cotton-broker's office when his literary career began.

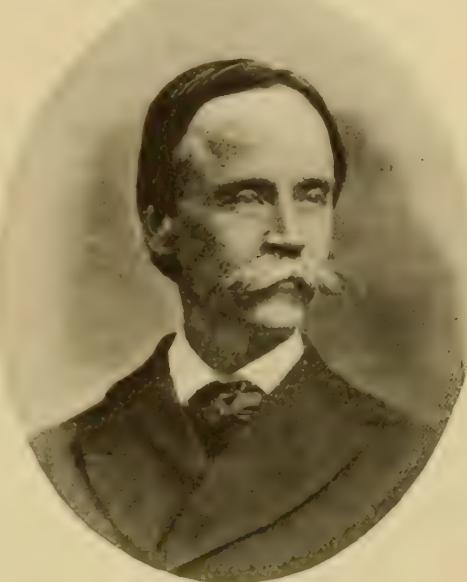
**631. Principal Works.** — His first considerable work was "The Grandissimes" (1880), which appeared serially in *Scribner*. It is a description of New Orleans life in the early part of the last century.

Creole life and character are graphically portrayed. This work introduced the patois of the Creoles at a time when dialect writing was not yet overdone. It was followed by "Madame Delphine" in 1881, and "Dr. Sevier" in 1883. The stories collected in "Bonaventure" (1877) do not add notably to the author's reputation.

**632. The Negro Question.** — In 1885 Cable re-

moved to Massachusetts. He has written on the social and political questions of the day; and his pamphlet, "The Negro Question," in which he gave vigorous expression to sentiments not generally entertained in the South, excited a good deal of ill-feeling against him. It is his distinction as a novelist to have portrayed a unique and vanishing type of civilization with admirable skill.

**633. Mary Noailles Murfree.** — Another prominent figure in the new school of Southern fiction is Mary Noailles Murfree, better known by the pseudonym of "Charles Egbert



GEORGE W. CABLE

Craddock." She was born in 1850 near Murfreesboro, Tennessee, a town named in honor of her great-grandfather, who served with distinction as a colonel in the Revolutionary War. Lamed for life by an accident in childhood, she turned to books for a pastime and made herself familiar with the literary treasures of our language. The summer home of the family in its days of prosperity was at Beersheba in the Tennessee mountains; and it was there that Miss Murfree accumulated the materials of scenery, incident, and character which she afterwards was to turn to such excellent account.

She added a new realm to American literature.



MARY NOAILLES MURFREE

*The Atlantic Monthly* in 1878, under the name of "Charles Egbert Craddock." Other stories, graphically portraying life in the same region, followed at brief intervals. In 1884 they were collected in a volume entitled "In the Tennessee Mountains," which at once placed the writer in the foremost rank of our story-tellers.

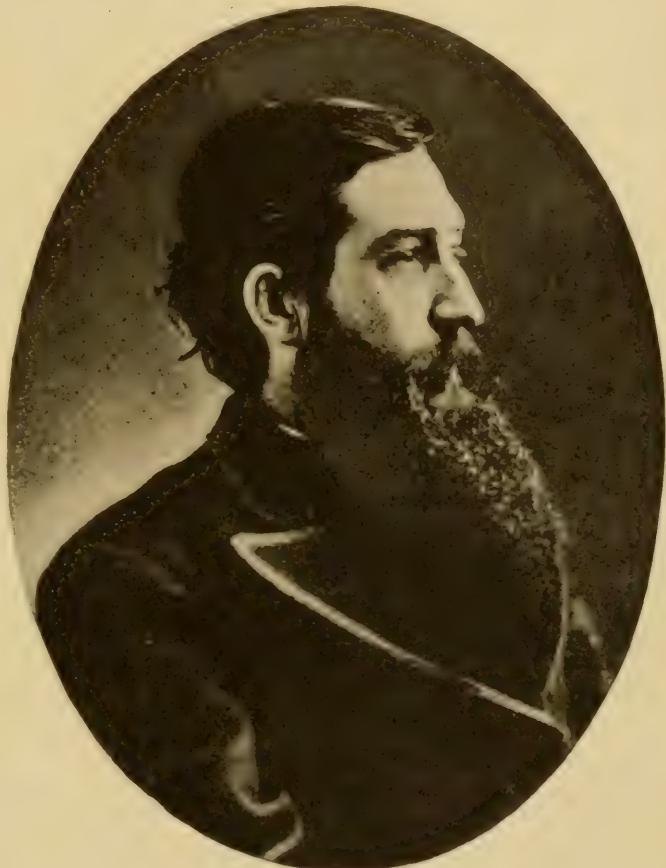
**635. Other Works.** — Encouraged by her success, Miss Murfree undertook larger works, and at brief intervals appeared "Down the Ravine" (1885), "The Prophet of the

**634. "In the Tennessee Mountains."** — Miss Murfree's first notable contribution to literature was "The Dancin' Party at Harrison's Cove," which appeared in

Great Smoky Mountain" (1885), "In the Clouds" (1887), "The Story of Keedon Bluffs" (1887), and other works. She is a conscientious worker. She understands thoroughly the scenes and characters she describes. The life of the mountaineers of eastern Tennessee, together with the rude dialect they speak, is accurately brought before us. She is especially strong in descriptions of natural scenery; and some of her pictures of the mountain clouds and sunlit splendors recall the glowing Alpine or Italian landscapes of Ruskin.

### 636. Sidney Lanier.—The life of Sidney

Lanier, the South's strongest singer since the Civil War, is unutterably sad. Gifted with genius of a high order, he was fettered by unfavorable circumstances. His life became a hard struggle; and though he fought heroically against disease and poverty, he had to leave his work unfinished. As in the



SIDNEY LANIER

case of Keats, we can only surmise what he might have accomplished for the world of letters if his life had been spared for the larger achievement of which he dreamed.

**637. Musical Gifts.** — He was born at Macon, Georgia, in 1842, of mingled French and Scotch ancestry. The fundamental element of his genius was music; and while yet a boy he played the flute, organ, piano, violin, guitar, and banjo. On the flute he ultimately became one of the best players in America. He was educated at Oglethorpe College, where he was graduated in 1860; he then filled a tutorship there till the beginning of the War. Like most men of unusual endowment, he was conscious of his superior powers, and wrote in his college note-book, "I have an extraordinary musical talent, and feel it within me plainly that I could rise as high as any composer."

**638. Military Service.** — On the breaking out of the Civil War he entered the Confederate army and saw hard service, particularly in the seven days' fighting around Richmond. He was afterwards transferred to the signal service, and later he commanded a blockade runner. His vessel, however, was captured on its first trip, and he was imprisoned for five months at Point Lookout. His war experience he embodied in the hastily written novel, "Tiger Lilies," which was published in 1867.

**639. In Baltimore.** — After the war he held a clerkship, taught school, and practised law; but at the same time he found it necessary to begin his long battle with pulmonary consumption, of which he died in 1881. In 1873 he became first flute in the Peabody symphony concerts, — an engagement that brought him musical and literary associations for which his soul had longed. He believed that a poet had need of large attainments on which as materials his genius might

work. The trouble with Poe, he thought, was inadequate knowledge. Accordingly he devoted himself to English literature, including Anglo-Saxon, with scholarly enthusiasm.

**640. Centennial Cantata.** — In 1874, when on a visit to Georgia, he wrote the poem "Corn," which appeared in *Lippincott's Magazine*. It attracted considerable attention from literary persons, among whom was Bayard Taylor. At his suggestion, Lanier was chosen to write the Cantata for the opening of the Centennial Exposition in Philadelphia. The Cantata evoked not a little unfavorable criticism, in reference to which the author exhibited a high and self-confident artistic spirit. "The artist," he wrote, "shall put forth, humbly and lovingly, and without bitterness against opposition, the very best and highest that is within him, utterly regardless of contemporary criticism."

**641. Lecturer on Literature.** — The closing years of his life, though burdened with illness, were surprisingly fruitful in verse. In 1877 he wrote the "Song of the Chattahoochee," and a year later "The Revenge of Hamish." Both are remarkable poems, the former for its musical qualities, and the latter for its strength as a ballad. In 1879 he was appointed lecturer on English literature at Johns Hopkins University, and the same year he wrote his "Science of English Verse." This work traces the parallelism between music and poetry. Though written rapidly, it was based on elaborate investigation, and remains as an original and suggestive contribution to the science of versification.

**642. Metrical Music.** — This work reveals to us the fundamental defect of Lanier's poetry: he seems to be more concerned about the music of his verse than about its thought. Alliteration and tone-color apparently count for more than ideas. Though criticising Poe, Lanier really belongs to the

same school; and even his finest poems, like the "Hymns of the Marshes," partake of the nature of ecstatic rhapsody. Take, for example, the opening strophe of "The Marshes of Glynn":—

"Glooms of the live-oaks, beautiful-braided and woven  
With intricate shades of the vines that myriad cloven  
Clamber the forks of the multiform boughs,—

    Emerald twilights,—

    Virginal shy lights,

Wrought of the leaves to allure to the whisper of vows  
When lovers pace timidly down through the green colonnades  
Of the dim sweet woods, of the dear dark woods,  
    Of the heavenly woods and glades,  
That run to the radiant marginal sand-beach within  
    The wide sea-marshes of Glynn."

The musical effects sometimes attained by Lanier are delightful. His "Song of the Chattahoochee," in its onomatopoetic lilt, recalls Tennyson's "Brook":—

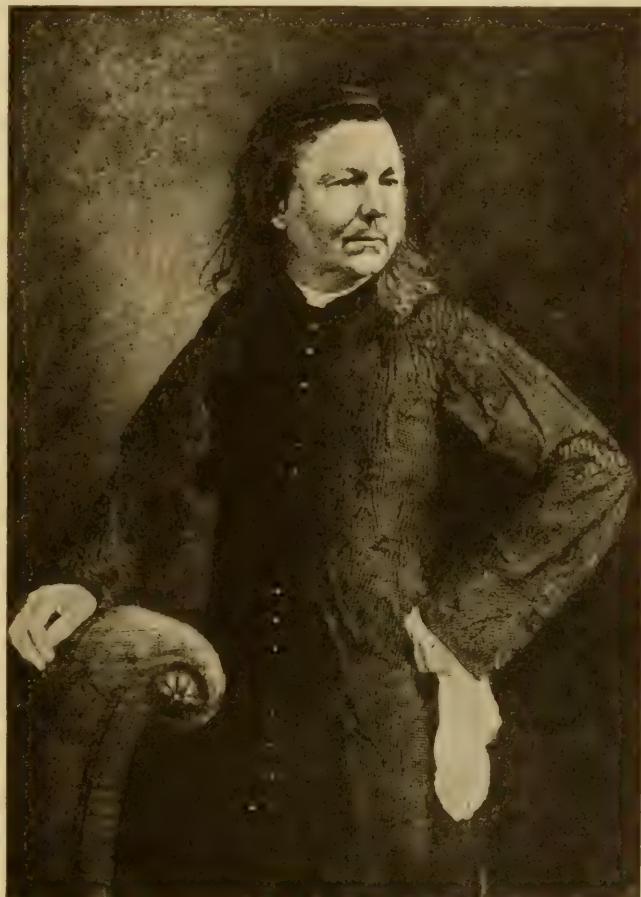
"Out of the hills of Habersham,  
    Down the valleys of Hall,  
I hurry amain to reach the plain,  
Run the rapid and leap the fall,  
Split at the rock and together again,  
Accept my bed, or narrow or wide,  
And flee from folly on every side  
With a lover's pain to attain the plain  
    Far from the hills of Habersham,  
    Far from the valleys of Hall."

**643. Moral Significance of Art.** — It is to the credit of Lanier's insight and character that he was not lured aside from the moral significance of art. He never made the mistake of divorcing art and truth; to his mind a thing had to be right before it could be beautiful. In one of his lectures

to the students of Johns Hopkins University he said: "He who has not yet perceived how artistic beauty and moral beauty are convergent lines which run back into a common ideal origin, and who therefore is not afire with moral beauty just as with artistic beauty — that he, in short, who has not come to that stage of quiet and eternal frenzy in which the beauty of holiness and the holiness of beauty mean one thing, burn as one fire, shine as one light within him, he is not yet the great artist."

**644. Abram J. Ryan.** — Perhaps no poet in the South has been more popular than Abram J. Ryan, better

known as Father Ryan. His poems do not exhibit a polished art; they are rather the emotional outpourings of a heart that readily found expression in fluent melodies. The poet himself modestly wished to call them only verses; and, as he tells us, they "were written at random, — off and on, here,



ABRAM J. RYAN

there, anywhere, — just as the mood came, with little of study and less of art, and always in a hurry." But these hurried, unpolished songs have been dear to many a heart.

**645. Priestly Vocation.** — Abram J. Ryan was born in Norfolk, Virginia, in 1839, whither his parents, natives of Ireland, had immigrated not long before. When he was seven or eight years old, his parents removed to St. Louis. He showed a rare aptitude in acquiring knowledge, and his superior intellectual gifts, associated with an unusual reverence for sacred things, early indicated the priesthood as his future vocation. He studied at the Roman Catholic seminary at Niagara; and his deeply religious nature, as well as the dogmatic beliefs of his church, is reflected in many of his poems.

**646. "Their Story Runneth Thus."** — A touching romance seems to have belonged to his early life — a romance that finds poetic expression in "Their Story Runneth Thus."

"One night in mid of May their faces met  
As pure as all the stars that gazed on them.  
They met to part from themselves and the world,  
Their hearts just touched to separate and bleed;  
Their eyes were linked in look, while saddened tears  
Fell down, like rain, upon the cheeks of each:  
They were to meet no more. Their hands were clasped  
To tear the clasp in twain; and all the stars  
Looked proudly down on them, while shadows knelt  
Or seemed to kneel, around them with the awe  
Evoked from any heart by sacrifice."

**647. Martial Songs.** — On the outbreak of the Civil War, Father Ryan entered the Confederate army as a chaplain, though he sometimes served in the ranks. His martial songs, "The Sword of Robert Lee," "The Conquered Banner," and "March of the Deathless Dead" have been very popular in the South. He reverenced Lee as peerless leader.

"Forth from its scabbard ! How we prayed  
That sword might victor be ;  
And when our triumph was delayed,  
And many a heart grew sore afraid,  
We still hoped on while gleamed the blade  
Of noble Robert Lee."

**648. Prophetic Office.** — Father Ryan conceived of the poet's office as something seerlike or prophetic. With him, as with all great poets, the message counted for more than do rhythm and rhyme. He regarded genuine poets as the high priests of nature. In "Poets" he says : —

"They are all dreamers ; in the day and night  
Ever across their souls  
The wondrous mystery of the dark or bright  
In mystic rhythm rolls."

**649. Distinctive Poetic Quality.** — It can hardly be said that Father Ryan ever reaches far poetic heights. Neither in thought nor expression does he often rise above cultured commonplace. Fine artistic quality is supplanted by a sort of easy fluency. Yet the form and tone of his poetry, nearly always in one pensive key, make a distinct impression, unlike that of any other American singer. Religious feeling is dominant. Having once caught his distinctive note of weary melancholy, we can recognize it among a chorus of a thousand singers. It is to his honor that he has achieved a distinctive place in American poetry.

#### 4. THE MIDDLE AND FAR WEST

**650. Development of the West.** — The completion of the Pacific railroads and the great mineral wealth and agricultural resources of the West have attracted thither a cease-

less tide of immigration. During the period under consideration, great States, far surpassing the original thirteen in extent and population, have been added to our country. Cities have sprung up almost by magic. The rapid conquest

of this vast region, particularly in the mining districts, has resulted in new phases of life, which possess a deep human interest and stand as something unique in the field of literature. Men of high gifts have not been lacking to utilize these materials and to enrich the annals of American letters.

**651. Francis  
Bret Harte.—  
Francis Bret**



A black and white portrait of Francis Bret Harte. He is shown from the chest up, wearing a dark, high-collared coat over a light-colored shirt. He has a full, dark mustache and is looking slightly to his left with a thoughtful expression. His hands are clasped in front of him at waist level.

FRANCIS BRET HARTE

Harte, who was born in Albany, New York, in 1839, was taken to California in his early youth and grew up there amid the hardships and excitements of pioneer life. He was successively schoolteacher, miner, and type-setter,—occupations that served to enlarge his experience and to give him an intimate

knowledge of human life and character. While working on the *Golden Era* of San Francisco, he published a series of sketches descriptive of frontier and mining life which met with public favor, and as a result he was promoted from the printer's case to the editor's desk. In 1864 he became secretary of the United States Mint in San Francisco, but diligently devoted his leisure hours to literature. Among the productions of this period are "John Burns of Gettysburg," and the "Society upon the Stanislaus," which rank among his best poetical productions.

**652. Stories and Poems.** — In 1868 *The Overland Monthly* was established with Harte as editor. For the second number he wrote, as something distinctive in California life, "The Luck of Roaring Camp." Though the story was coldly received in California, it excited attention in the East and laid the foundation of the writer's reputation. It was speedily followed by other stories and poems in the same vein, among which may be mentioned "The Outcasts of Poker Flat," "Miggles," and "Tennessee's Partner." In 1870 his "Plain Language from Truthful James," descriptive of the "heathen Chinee," struck the popular fancy and was quoted all over the United States: —

"Ah Sin was his name;  
And I shall not deny  
In regard to the same  
What that name might imply;  
But his smile it was pensive and childlike,  
As I frequent remarked to Bill Nye."

**653. Literary and Other Labors.** — In 1871 he went East, and for several years led a Bohemian life in New York. He tried lecturing and failed. His contributions to the *Atlantic* and other periodicals afforded him a meagre sup-

port. In 1878 he was appointed consul to Crefeld, Germany, and two years later was transferred to Glasgow. After 1885 he lived in London, where he is said to have been a favorite in English society. But whatever may have been his other employments, his pen was not idle, and stories and novels followed one another at pretty regular intervals. Among these may be mentioned "Gabriel Conroy" (1876), "Drift from Two Shores" (1878), "The Twins of Table Mountain" (1879), "Flip and Found at Blazing Star" (1882), "On the Frontier" (1884), "Maruja" (1885), "A Millionaire of Rough and Ready" (1887), etc.

**654. Distinctive American Writer.** — Bret Harte is best in his short stories. His first novel, "Gabriel Conroy," while containing scenes of characteristic vigor, is not regarded as a notable success. In the main he has confined himself to the pioneer life of the West. Though this fact narrows his range, it makes him one of the most distinctly American of our writers. His stories are original, owing nothing but their literary art to other countries or other times. This freshness of subject and novelty of character made him one of our most popular authors abroad. It may be questioned whether his stories are entirely true to life. His adventurers, thieves, and courtesans have, at the basis of their character, an unselfishness and fidelity that must at best be very exceptional. It is not in these classes that we usually look for heroes and heroines.

**655. Cincinnatus Heine Miller.** — Cincinnatus Heine Miller, better known by the pen-name of Joaquin Miller, was born in Indiana in 1841. In youth he ran away to California, where as a miner and adventurer he experienced many hardships. Returning home, not wholly unlike the prodigal, he entered Columbia College, where he was grad-

uated in 1858 as the valedictorian of his class. After studying law he went to the mining region of Idaho; but finding little encouragement in his profession, he turned express messenger. Afterwards he moved to Oregon, where he became editor of the *Democratic Register*, which was suppressed for alleged treasonable utterances, and a little later he was appointed judge of Grant County, a position which he held for four years.

**656. "Songs of the Sierras."**— Through all the varied and dangerous experiences of these years the impulse to write was strong within him. In the midst of his unfavorable environment he used every means to improve his literary culture, and to this end he read extensively in ancient and modern authors. Like



JOAQUIN MILLER

Milton he cherished the conviction that he was to write something worthy of the attention of men, and in secret he practised the art which was afterwards to make him known. Finally he felt strong enough for a venture, and brought together the "Songs of the Sierras," a poetic collection full of the wild scenery and still wilder romance of the far West. Failing to find a publisher in this country, he went to England, where the publication of this first volume created a *furore*, and the poet suddenly found himself the lion of British society.

He was called "the American Byron," and was fêted and flattered as the most original of American poets.

**657. "Songs of the Sunlands."** — This fame, exaggerated and ephemeral, naturally found an echo in this country. It was given a more substantial basis by the publication of "Songs of the Sunlands" in 1873, which represents the author's genius at its best, and contains passages of exceptional beauty. The keynote of the volume is found in these prefatory stanzas:—

"Primeval forests ! virgin sod !  
That Saxon hath not ravished yet !  
Lo ! peak on peak in column set,  
In stepping stairs that reach to God !

"Here we are free as sea or wind,  
For here are set the snowy tents  
In everlasting battlements  
Against the march of Saxon mind."

The principal poem of this volume is the "Isles of the Amazons"—

"A curious old tale of a curious old time."

It is the most artistic of the poet's longer pieces. "Into it he has put," as Vedder says, "all his strength, and, as he seems temporarily to have forgotten his affectations and mannerisms, his lines glow with tropical passion and thrill the reader with the vividness and originality of their imagery and their spontaneous vigor of expression."

**658. "Olive Leaves."** — In "Olive Leaves," which treats of New Testament themes, and "Fallen Leaves," both of which form divisions of the volume under consideration, the poet now and then touches a moral note unusual in his writ-

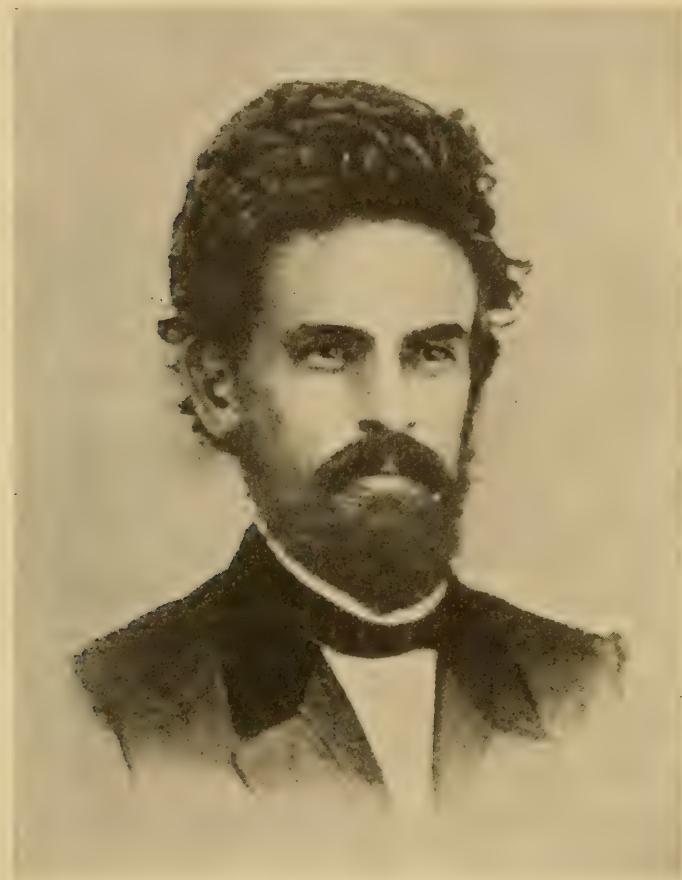
ings. "Down into the Dust," for example, is a passionate plea for human charity and helpfulness: —

"Is it worth while that we jostle a brother,  
Bearing his load on the rough road of life?  
Is it worth while that we jeer at each other  
In blackness of heart? — that we war to the knife?  
God pity us all in our pitiful strife!"

**659. Numerous Writings.** — After living for a time in Washington City, where he wrote for various periodicals, he returned to California, where he resided till his death. A series of works in prose and verse, appearing at brief intervals, bears testimony to his literary activity. Among these works may be mentioned "Songs of the Desert" (1875), "The Baroness of New York" (1877), a novel, "Songs of Italy" (1878), "The Danites in the Sierras" (1881), a novel, "'49, or the Gold Seekers of the Sierras" (1884), "Songs of the Mexican Seas" (1887), etc. Joaquin Miller is a writer of unmistakable originality and power, but he lacks the refinement, symmetry, and taste of a chastened culture. He hardly deserves the almost utter neglect into which he has fallen.

**660. Edward Eggleston.** — Edward Eggleston did for the pioneer days of the Middle West what Bret Harte and Joaquin Miller did for the broad regions looking upon the Pacific. He described the scenes and characters of Indiana and Illinois before those States had become centres of wealth and refinement. His three principal novels, "The Hoosier Schoolmaster" (1871), "Roxy" (1878), and "The Graysons" (1888), are true and graphic pictures of life as it existed there two or three generations ago. Written in a realistic spirit and based on the actual experience of the author, these works, apart from their unusual interest as fiction, possess

also the value of history. In the last-named book, Abraham Lincoln figures as a young, uncouth lawyer of impressive astuteness.



EDWARD EGGLESTON

#### 661. Mastering Difficulties.

— The career of Edward Eggleston illustrates the power of an energetic nature to overcome difficulties. Delicate health prevented him from acquiring a collegiate education; yet, by dint of private study and extensive reading, he made himself acquainted with several foreign

languages and with English and French literature. A temporary sojourn in Virginia, from which State his parents had moved to Indiana, made him acquainted with the "old Virginia gentleman," whose character he has touched upon in some of his works.

**662. Editorial Labors.** — He was born in Indiana in 1837. At the age of nineteen he became a Methodist circuit-rider

in his native State, and afterwards in Minnesota. His ministerial work was repeatedly interrupted by broken health, and he was at last obliged to turn to secular pursuits for a livelihood. His literary instincts found expression in frequent contributions to the press. In 1866 he removed to Evanston, Illinois, where he became associate editor of a popular paper for young people, *The Little Corporal*, which was afterwards merged into *St. Nicholas*. Shortly afterwards he assumed editorial control of the *National Sunday-School Teacher* of Chicago, and increased its circulation from 5000 to 35,000 copies. In 1870 he was called to New York to become literary editor of *The Independent*, and a few months later, upon the retirement of Theodore Tilton, he was made editor-in-chief. The following year he took charge of the *Hearth and Home*, and through his able management rendered it widely popular. It was in this periodical that "The Hoosier Schoolmaster" first appeared, and attracted much attention. It opened a new vein in American literature.

**663. Historical Works.** — He served as pastor of a church in Brooklyn from 1874 to 1879, when failing health forced him to resign. His methods of church work were original and innovating, but in a measure successful. He built a beautiful home on Lake George, where he gave his latter years to historical writing. His "Famous American Indians" extends through five volumes. He wrote an interesting school "History of the United States and its People" (1888). But his principal work in this line was his "History of Life in the United States," the first volume of which, "The Beginners of a Nation," appeared in 1896. His historical writing is characterized by breadth of view. He is more concerned about principles and causes than about details of fact; yet there is enough of graphic incident to illustrate his principles and to

impart interest to his work. His facts are based on a careful investigation of original sources; and though he is apt to deviate from traditional conclusions, he exhibits a rare penetration and maintains a judicial fairness in all his discussions.

### CONCLUSION

**664. Record of Progress.** — Our survey of American literature exhibits a development of which we may well be proud. From the meagre productions of the first colonial period to the varied and innumerable writings of the present is a long step. Whether taken in its limited or its larger sense, literature has kept pace with the unexampled material progress of our country. From two small colonies on the Atlantic, it has extended, in broad sweep, to the Pacific. Before long we may expect it to make new conquests in our insular possessions.

**665. Notable Names.** — Our study has been restricted, in the main, to what is known as polite or *belles lettres* literature. Had we taken literature in its more comprehensive sense, we should have found many names worthy of mention. William James and Josiah Royce, of Harvard, and George T. Ladd, of Yale, have won distinction in philosophy. Horace Mann and Henry Barnard were great educators, whose work has left an impress upon our schools. Francis A. Walker and Richard T. Ely are authors of marked ability in political and social science. John W. Draper and Simon Newcomb have gained an international reputation for their work in science. History, dominated at present by the scientific rather than by the literary spirit, has been widely cultivated by such men as Justin Winsor, Hubert Howe Bancroft, Henry Adams, and Alfred T. Mahan. In no department of human investigation is America entirely without names worthy of mention.

**666. Sectional Literature.** — Yet our literature, as a whole, bears the marks of immaturity. Much of it is written too hastily; much of it has sprung from a defective culture; and as a natural result, our literature lacks, in considerable measure, the finest artistic qualities. In one sense we can hardly be said to have a national literature. Our country is not yet thoroughly homogeneous; and consequently we have New England, Southern, and Western writers rather than American writers. But mighty agencies — railroads, newspapers, colleges, and public schools — are at work to bring about a greater homogeneity. In the course of time the distinctive features of the different parts of our country will be less marked, and then local or sectional literature will give place to national literature.

**667. A Hopeful Outlook.** — We may look hopefully to the future. The eager, struggling, commercial spirit of the present day — a spirit natural to the youth and circumstances of our country — will ultimately give way to the calmer and more reflective mood of maturity. There will finally come a period of greater leisure and comfort, in which the beauty of art and the graces of culture will count for more than in the restless and struggling present. Better work will then be exacted of our authors; and genius, responding to the demand of the age, will produce a literature in keeping with the larger material and intellectual greatness of our country.

#### FOR FURTHER READING AND STUDY

*It is left to the judgment of the teacher to select from the abundant treasures of this period such pieces as are accessible and deemed most important. The most notable works of the leading authors have been indicated in the text.*



*ILLUSTRATIVE SELECTIONS*

WITH NOTES

## I

## SELECTION FROM CAPTAIN JOHN SMITH

## CAPTURED BY THE INDIANS

FORTY miles I passed up ye river,<sup>1</sup> which for the most part is a quarter of a mile broad, and three fathom and a half deep, exceeding osey,<sup>2</sup> many great low marshes and many high lands, especially about ye midst at a place called Moysonicke,<sup>3</sup> a Peninsule of four miles circuit, betwixt two rivers joyned to the main, by a neck of forty or fifty yards, and forty or fifty yards from the high water marke. On both sides in the very necke of the maine, are high hills and dales, yet much inhabited, the Ile declining in a plaine fertile corne field, the lower end a low marsh; more plentie of swannes, cranes, geese, duckes, and mallards, and divers sorts of fowles none would desire: more plaine fertile planted ground, in such great proportions as there I had not seene, of a light blacke sandy mould, the cliffs commonly red, white and yellowe colored sand, and under red and white clay, fish great plenty, and people abundance, the most of their inhabitants in view of ye necke of Land, where a better seate for a town cannot be desired. At the end of forty miles this river environeth many low Ilands, at each high water drowned for a mile, where it uniteth it selfe, at a place called Apokant, the highest Towne inhabited. Ten miles higher I discovered with the barge; in the midway, a great tree hindered my passage, which I cut in two: heere the river became narrower, eight, nine, or ten foote at a high water, and six or seven at a lowe: the stremme exceeding swift and the bottom hard channell, the ground most part a low plaine, sandy soyle; this occasioned me to suppose it might issue from some lake or some broad ford, so it could not be far to the head, but rather then I would endanger the barge, yet to have been able to resolve this doubt, and to

discharge the imputation of malicious tungs, that halfe suspected I durst not for so long delaying, some of the company as desirous as my selfe, we resolved to hire a Canowe and return with the barge to Apokant, there to leave the barge secure, and put ourselves uppon the adventure: the country onely a vast and wilde wilderness and but onely that Towne. Within three or fourre mile we hired a Canowe and two Indians to row us ye next day a fowling: having made such provision for the barge as was needful, I left her there to ride, with expresse charge not any to goe ashore til my returne. Though some wise men may condemn this too bould attempt of too much indiscretion, yet if they well consider the friendship of the Indians, in conducting me, the desolate-ness of the country, the probabilitie of some lacke, and the malicious judges of my actions at home, as also to have some matters of worth to incourage our adventurers in England, might well have caused any honest minde to have done the like, as well for his owne discharge as for the publike good. Having two Indians for my guide and two of our own company, I set forward, leaving seven in the barge; having discovered twenty miles further in this desart, the river still kept his depth and bredth, but much more combred with trees: here we went ashore (being some twelve miles higher than ye barge had bene) to refresh our selves, during the boyling of our victuals. One of the Indians I took with me to see the nature of the soile, and to crosse the boughts<sup>4</sup> of the river, the other Indian I left with Mr. Robinson and Thomas Emry, with their matches light<sup>5</sup> and order to discharge a peece, for my retreat at the first sight of any Indian, but within a quarter of an houre I heard a loud cry and a hollowing of Indians, but no warning peece. Supposing them surprised, and that the Indians had betraid us, presently I seized him and bound his arme fast to my hand in a garter,<sup>6</sup> with my pistoll ready bent<sup>7</sup> to be revenged on him: he advised me to fly and seemed ignorant of what was done, but as we went discoursing, I was struck with an arrow on the right thigh but without harme. Upon this occasion I espied two Indians drawing their bowes, which I prevented in discharging a French pistoll: by that I had charged againe, three or four more did the like, for the first fell downe and fled: at my discharge they did the like, my hinde<sup>8</sup> I made my barricado, who offered not to strive. Twenty or thirty arrowes were shot at me but short, three or four times I had discharged my pistoll ere the King of Pamaunck called Opeckankenough, with

two hundred men, environed me, eache drawing their bowe, which done they laid them upon the ground, yet without shot, my hinde treated betwixt them and me of conditions of peace, he discovered me to be the Captaine, my request was to retire to ye boate, they de-maunded my armes, the rest they saide were slaine, only me they would reserve; the Indian importuned me not to shoot. In retiring, being in the midst of a low quagmire, and minding them more then my steps, I stept fast into the quagmire, and also the Indian in drawing me forth: thus surprised, I resolved to trie their mercies, my armes I caste from me, til which none durst approach me.

Being ceased on me, they drew me out and led me to the King; I presented him with a compasse diall, describing by my best meanes the use thereof, whereat he so amazedly admired, as he suffered me to proceed in a discourse of the roundness of the earth, the course of the sunne, moone, starres, and plannets.<sup>9</sup> With kinde speeches and bread he requited me, conducting me where the Canow lay and John Robbinson slaine, with twenty or thirty arrowes in him. Emry I saw not, I perceived by the abundance of fires all over the woods, at each place I expected when they would execute me, yet they used me with what kindnes they could: approaching their Towne, which was within six miles where I was taken, onely made as arbors and covered with mats, which they remove as occasion requires: all the women and children, being advertised of this accident, came foorth to meet them, the King well guarded with twenty bowmen, five flanck and rear, and each flanck before him a sword and a peece, after him the like, then a Bowman. then I, on each hande a Bowman, the reste in file in the reare. . . . On eache flanck a sargeant, the one running alwaies towards the front, the other towards the reare, each a true pace and in exceeding good order. This being a good time continued, they caste themselves in a ring with a daunce, and so eache man departed to his lodging, the Captain conducting me to his lodging. A quarter of Venison and some ten pound of bread I had for supper; what I left was reserved for me, and sent with me to my lodging: each morning three women presented me three greate platters of fine bread, more venison than ten men could devour I had; my gowne, points<sup>10</sup> and garters, my compas and a tablet they gave me againe. Though eight ordinarily guarded me, I wanted not what they could devise to content me: and still our longer acquaintance increased our better affection. Much they threatened to assalt

our forte, as they were solicited by the King of Paspahégh, who shewed at our forte great signes of sorrow for this mischance. . . .

I desired he<sup>11</sup> would send a messenger to Paspahégh,<sup>12</sup> with a letter I would write, by which they shold understand how kindly they used me, and that I was wel, least they should revenge my death: this he granted, and sent three men in such weather, as in reason were unpossible, by any naked to be indured. Their cruell mindes towards the fort I had deverted in describing the ordnances and the mines in the fields, as also the revenge Captain Newport would take of them, at his return; their intent, I incerted the fort, the people of Ocanahonum and the back sea:<sup>13</sup> this report they after found divers Indians that confirmed. The next day after my letter, came a salvage to my lodg-ing, with his sword to have slaine me, but being by my guard inter-cepted, with a bowe and arrow he offred to have effected his purpose: the cause I knew not til the King understanding thereof came and told me of a man dying, wounded with my pistoll: he told me also of another I had slayne, yet the most concealed they had any hurte: this was the father of him I had slayne, whose fury to prevent, the King presently conducted me to another Kingdome, upon the top of the next northerly river, called Youghtanan. . . .

Arriving at Weramocomoco,<sup>14</sup> their Emperour proudly lying uppon a Bedstead a foote high upon tenne or twelve Mattes, richly hung with many chaynes of great Pearls about his necke, and covered with a great covering of Rahaughcums:<sup>15</sup> at his heade sat a woman, at his feete another, on each side sitting uppon a Matte uppon the ground were raunged his chiefe men on each side the fire, tenne in a rank, and behinde them as many young women, each a great chaine of white beades over their shoulders: their heades painted in redde, and with such a grave majesticall countenance, as drove me into admiration to see such state in a naked salvage, hee kindly welcomed me with good wordes, and great platters of sundrie victuals, assuring me his friend-ship, and my libertie within foure dayes.

## NOTES TO CAPTAIN JOHN SMITH

A FEW suggestions are here made to guide the student in the study of the following selections in prose. Suggestions for the study of poetry will be found under "Notes to Bryant."

1. Ascertain the circumstances under which the work in hand was written, and the purpose it was intended to subserve. How was the material obtained? Is it fact or fiction? An acquaintance with the author's life will be helpful in answering these and other questions.

2. All discourse may be divided into four generic classes, namely: *description, narration, exposition, and argumentation*. Though frequently united in the same paragraph, they may generally be distinguished. In the following selections, point out what is descriptive, narrative, expository, and argumentative.

3. Sentences vary in *diction, length, and form*. Every author has his prevailing or characteristic type of sentence. Determine the percentage of Anglo-Saxon and Latin words, and also the average length of the sentences. Ascertain also the proportion of loose, balanced, and periodic sentences. The results will afford a basis of interesting comparison between the different authors.

4. The personality of the author is reflected in his work. Determine his mood or spirit in writing. Is he grave, pathetic, humorous? Is his style formal and dignified, or easy and colloquial? Does imagination, feeling, or reason predominate in his work? What idea of his character would you form from his writing?

5. The foregoing points of investigation are not an end in themselves, but merely preliminary to an intelligent perusal of an author. It is only when the facts indicated are clearly ascertained that we can enter into full sympathy with him, or form a correct judgment of his work.

This extract is taken from "A True Relation of such Occurrences and Accidents of Noate as hath Hapned in Virginia, since the First Planting of that Collony, which is now resident in the South Part thereof, till the last Returne from thence." It is the earliest history of the settlement at Jamestown, and the beginning of American literature. It covers the brief period between April 26, 1607, and June 2, 1608. It was printed in London in small quarto form. There are eight copies of the original edition in America. An inaccurate reprint appeared in the *Southern Literary Messenger*, February, 1845. An edition was edited by Mr. Deane in Boston in 1866.

The substance of the "True Relation" is reproduced in the "Generall Historie of Virginia, New England, and the Summer Isles" (the third book), which was written in 1624. The style of the "Generall Historie" is more elevated and flowing; and the lapse of sixteen years has served to give to the nar-

rative something of the enchantment that distance lends to the view. While it is not necessary, perhaps, to believe in the fabrication of new matter, it is certainly true that the "Generall Historie" contains interesting statements not found in the "True Relation." The romantic story of Pocahontas, for example, is found only in the former; and its absence from the "True Relation" has been regarded by some recent critics as pretty conclusive proof that the incident was a happy afterthought.

Except the punctuation and the use of capital letters, which it was thought better not to follow closely, the extract given for study is a reproduction of the original, and will therefore serve as a specimen of English prose at the beginning of the seventeenth century. As will be noticed, there is a considerable lack of uniformity in the spelling. This is attributable less to Smith's carelessness or ignorance than to the unfixed state of the English language. When he wrote the "True Relation," no dictionary of the language had yet appeared, the first being published in 1623.

1. *Ye river.* — The letter *y* in *ye* is used for the Anglo-Saxon character representing the sound *th*, and in the Middle Ages, as well as at the beginning of the seventeenth century, had the same sound. Smith uses both forms of the definite article, *ye* and *the*. The river in question is the Chickahominy, which, in the "True Relation," appears as *Checka Hamania*, and in the "Generall Historie" as the *Chickahamania*.

2. *Osey = oozy.* A. S. *wos*; the word has lost its initial *w*.

3. All the places named in the narrative are given in Smith's well-known map of Virginia. Considering the difficulties attending his explorations, the accuracy of his map is remarkable.

4. *Boughts = bends, turnings.* Also spelled *bout*. In Milton we find: —

"In notes, with many a winding *bout*  
Of linked sweetness long drawn out." — *L'Allegro*, 139.

But in Spenser, speaking of the Monster Error: —

"Her huge long taile her den all overspred,

Yet was in knots and many *boughtes* upwound." — *Faery Queene*, I. xv.

5. *Light* = lighted. "About the beginning of the reign of Henry VII the hand-gun was improved by the addition of a cock, which was brought down by a trigger to a pan at the side of the barrel; this cock held a match which ignited a priming in the pan, the priming communicating with the charge by a small hole." This was the matchlock, and continued in use till the middle of the seventeenth century, when it was replaced by the flintlock.

6. *In a garter* = "with his garters," as stated in the "Generall Historie."

7. *Bent* = cocked.

8. *Hinde* = servant. The *d* is excrescent; from A. S. *hina*, a domestic.

9. In the "Generall Historie" we have the following version, which is

given to show the difference of style between the two works: "Then finding the Captaine, as is said, that used the salvage that was his guide as his sheld, (three of them being slaine and divers other so gauld,) all the rest would not come neere him. Thinking thus to have returned to his boat, regarding them, as he marched, more then his way, slipped up to the middle in an oasie creeke, and his salvage with him, yet durst they not come to him till being neere dead with cold, he threw away his armes. Then according to their composition they drew him forth and led him to the fire, where his men were slaine. Diligently they chafed his benummed limbs. He demanding for their Captaine, they shewed him Opechankanough, King of Pamaunkee, to whom he gave a round ivory double compass dyall. Much they marvailed at the playing of the fly and needle, which they could see so plainly, and yet not touch it, because of the glasse that covered them. But when he demonstrated by that globe-like jewell the roundnesse of the earth, and skies, the speare of the sunne, moone, and starres, and how the sunne did chase the night round about the world continually; the greatnessse of the land and see, the diversitie of nations, varietie of complexions, and how we were to them *Antipodes*, and many other such like matters, they all stood as amazed with admiration. Notwithstanding, within an houre after they tyed him to a tree, and as many as could stand about him prepared to shoot him, but the King holding up the compass in his hand, they all laid downe their bowes and arrows, and in a triumphant manner led him to *Orapaks*, where he was after their manner kindly feasted and well used."

At the time of this occurrence, Smith had been in Virginia about eight months. Considering, then, his very slender attainments in the Indian language, we may well doubt whether he succeeded, in an hour, in making his astronomy, geography, and ethnography very intelligible to his savage auditors.

10. *Points* = "A tagged lace, used to tie together certain parts of the dress." — WEBSTER.

11. *He* = King Opechankanough.

12. "Yet according to his request they went to James Towne." — *Generall Historie*.

13. This refers to information given by Opechankanough. "The Kinge tooke greate delight in understanding the manner of our ships and sayling the seas, and of our God; what he knew of the dominions he spared not to acquaint me with, as of certaine men cloathed at a place called Ocanahonan, cloathed like me, the course of our river, and that within four or five daies journey of the falles was a great turning of salt water."

14. Situated on York river, about twelve miles from Jamestown.

15. In the "Generall Historie" spelled *Rarowcun* = raccoon. The etymology of *raccoon* in Webster and Skeat fails to give the Indian origin of the word; it is found, however, in "The Century Dictionary" and "The Standard Dictionary."

## II

## SELECTION FROM COTTON MATHER

## MAGNALIA CHRISTI: CHAPTER II

PRIMORDIA;<sup>1</sup> OR, THE VOYAGE TO NEW ENGLAND, WHICH PRODUCED THE FIRST SETTLEMENT OF NEW PLYMOUTH; WITH AN ACCOUNT OF MANY REMARKABLE AND MEMORABLE PROVIDENCES RELATING TO THAT VOYAGE

§ I. A NUMBER of devout and serious Christians in the English nation, finding the Reformation of the Church<sup>2</sup> in that nation, according to the WORD OF GOD,<sup>3</sup> and the design of many among the first Reformers, to labour under a sort of *hopeless retardation*;<sup>4</sup> they did, Anno 1602, in the north of England,<sup>5</sup> enter into a COVENANT, wherein expressing themselves desirous, not only to attend the *worship* of our Lord Jesus Christ, with a freedom from humane<sup>6</sup> *inventions* and *additions*,<sup>7</sup> but also to enjoy *all* the Evangelical Institutions of that worship, they did like those Macedonians, that are *therefore* by the Apostle Paul commended, "give themselves up, first unto God, and then to one another."<sup>8</sup> These pious people finding that their brethren and neighbors in the Church of England, as then *established by law*, took offense at these their endeavors after a *scriptural reformation*; and being loth to live in the continual *vexations* which they felt arising from their non-conformity<sup>9</sup> to things which their consciences accounted *superstitious* and *unwarrantable*, they peaceably and willingly embraced a *banishment* into the Netherlands; where they settled at the city of Leyden,<sup>10</sup> about seven or eight years after their first combination. And now in that city this people<sup>11</sup> sojourned, an holy CHURCH of the blessed JESUS, for several years under the pastoral care of Mr. John Robinson,<sup>12</sup> who had for his *help* in the government of the Church, a most wise, grave, good man, Mr. William Brewster,<sup>13</sup> the ruling elder. Indeed, Mr. John Robinson had been in his *younger time* (as very good fruit hath sometimes been, before age hath *ripened* it) *sowred* with

the principles of the most rigid *separation*, in the maintaining whereof he composed and published some little Treatises, and in the management of the controversie made no scruple to call the incomparable Dr. Ames<sup>14</sup> himself, Dr. *Amiss*, for opposing such a degree of separation. But this worthy man suffered himself at length to be so far convinced by his learned *antagonist* that with a most ingenious *retractation*, he afterwards writ a little book to prove the *lawfulness* of one thing, which his mistaken *zeal* had formerly impugned several years, even till 1625, and about the *fiftieth* year of his own age, continued he a blessing unto the whole Church of God, and at last, when he died, he left behind him in his immortal writings, a *name* very much embalmed among the people that are best able to judge of *merit*; and even among such, as about the matters of *Church-discipline*, were not of his *perswasion*. Of such an eminent character was he, while he *lived*, that when Arminianism<sup>15</sup> so much prevailed, as it then did in the low countries, those famous divines, Polyander and Festus Hommius, employed this our learned Robinson to dispute publickly in the University of Leyden against Episcopius,<sup>16</sup> and the other champions of that grand *choak-weed of true Christianity*: and when he *died*, not only the University, and Ministers of the city, accompanied him to his grave, with all their accustomed *solemnities*, but some of the chief among them with sorrowful resentments and expressions affirmed, “That all the Churches of our Lord Jesus Christ had sustained a great loss by the death of this worthy man.”

§ 2. The English Church had not been very long at Leyden, before they found themselves encountered with many inconveniences. They felt that they were neither for *health*, nor *purse*, nor *language* well accommodated; but the concern which they most of all had, was for their *posterity*. They saw, that whatever *banks* the *Dutch* had, against the inroads of the sea, they had not sufficient ones against a *flood* of manifold *profaneness*. They could not with *ten years' endeavor* bring their neighbors particularly to any suitable observation of the *LORD'S DAY*;<sup>17</sup> without which they knew that all *practical Religion* must wither miserably. They beheld some of their *children*, by the temptations of the place, which were especially given in the licentious ways of many *young people*, drawn into dangerous extravagancies. Moreover, they were very loth to lose their interest in the English nation; but were desirous rather to enlarge their King's dominions. They found themselves also under a very strong disposition of *zeal*, to attempt the establishment of

CONGREGATIONAL CHURCHES<sup>18</sup> in the remote parts of the world; where they hoped they should be reached by the royal influence of their Prince, in whose *allegiance* they chose to live and die; at the same time likewise hoping that the Ecclesiasticks, who had thus driven them out of the kingdom into a New World, for nothing in the world but their *non-conformity* to certain *rites*, by the imposers confessed *indifferent*,<sup>19</sup> would be *ashamed* ever to persecute them with any further molestations, at the distance of a thousand leagues. These *reasons* were deeply considered by the Church; and after many *deliberations*, accompanied with the most solemn *humiliations* and *supplications* before the God of Heaven, they took up a *resolution*, under the conduct of Heaven, to REMOVE into AMERICA; the opened regions whereof had now filled all Europe with reports. It was resolved, that *part* of the Church should go before their brethren, to *prepare* a place for the rest; and whereas the *minor part* of younger and stronger men were to go first, the Pastor was to stay with the *major*, till *they* should see cause to follow. Nor was there any occasion for this resolve, in any weariness which the States of Holland had of their company, as was basely *whispered* by their adversaries; therein like those who of old assigned the same cause for the departure of the Israelites out Egypt: for the magistrates of Leyden in their Court, reproving the Walloons,<sup>20</sup> gave this testimony for our English: "These have lived now ten years among us, and yet we never had any accusation against any one of them; whereas your quarrels are continual."

§ 3. These good people were now *satisfyed*, they had as plain a command of Heaven to attempt a removal, as ever their father Abraham had for his leaving the *Caldean* territories;<sup>21</sup> and it was nothing but such a *satisfaction* that could have carried them through such, otherwise insuperable difficulties, as they met withal. But in this removal the *terminus ad quem*<sup>22</sup> was not yet resolved upon. The country of Guiana flattered them with the promises of a *perpetual Spring*, and a thousand other comfortable entertainments. But the probable disagreement of so *torrid* a climate unto English bodies, and the more dangerous vicinity of the Spaniards to that climate, were considerations which made them fear that country would be *too hot* for them. They rather propounded some country bordering upon Virginia; and unto this purpose, they sent over agents into England, who so far treated not only with the Virginia company, but with several great persons about the Court; unto whom they made evident

their agreement with the French Reformed Churches in all things whatsoever, except in a few small accidental points; that at last, after many tedious delays, and after the loss of many friends and hopes in those delays, they obtained a Patent for a quiet settlement in those territories; and the Archbishop of Canterbury himself gave them some expectations that they should never be disturbed in that exercise of Religion, at which they aimed in their settlement; yea, when Sir Robert Nanton, then principal Secretary of State unto King James, moved his Majesty to give away "that such a people might enjoy their liberty of conscience under his gracious protection in America, where they would endeavor the advancement of his Majesty's dominions, and the enlargement of the interests of the Gospel;" the King said, "It was a good and honest motion." All this notwithstanding, they never made use of that Patent: but being informed of New England, thither they diverted their design, thereto induced by sundry reasons; but particularly by *this*, that the coast being extremely well circumstanced for *fishing*, they might therein have some immediate assistance against the hardships of their first encounters. Their agents then again sent over to England concluded *articles* between them and such adventurers as would be concerned with them in their present undertakings — articles that were indeed sufficiently *hard*<sup>23</sup> for those poor men that were now to transplant themselves into an horrid wilderness. The *diversion* of their enterprise from the first state and way of it, caused an unhappy division among those that should have encouraged it; and many of them hereupon fell off. But the Removers having already sold their estates, to put the money into a *common stock*,<sup>24</sup> for the welfare of the *whole*; and their *stock* as well as their *time* spending so fast as to threaten them with an *army* of straits, if they delayed any longer: they nimbly dispatched the best agreements they could, and came away furnished with a Resolution for a large Tract of Land in the southwest part of New England.

§ 4. All things being now in some readiness, and a couple of ships, one called *The Speedwell*, the other *The May-Flower*, being hired for their transportation, they solemnly set apart a day for fasting and prayer; wherein their Pastor preached unto them upon Ezra viii. 21: "I proclaimed a fast there, at the river Ahava, that we might afflict ourselves before our God, to seek of him a right way for us, and for our little ones, and for all our substance."

After the fervent supplications of this day, accompanied by their affectionate friends, they took their leave of the pleasant city, where they had been pilgrims and strangers now for eleven years. Delft-Haven<sup>25</sup> was the town where they went on board one of their ships, and there they had such a mournful parting from their brethren, as even *drowned* the Dutch spectators themselves, then standing on the *shore*, in tears. Their excellent Pastor, on his knees, by the *sea-side*, poured out their mutual petitions unto God; and having wept in one another's arms, as long as the *wind* and the *tide* would permit them they bad *adieu*. So sailing to Southampton in England, they there found the other of their ships come from London, with the rest of their friends that were to be the *companions of the voyage*. Let my reader place the chronology of this business on July 2, 1620. And know, that the faithful Pastor of this people immediately sent after them a *pastoral letter*; a letter filled with holy counsels unto them, to settle their *peace* with God in their own consciences, by an exact *repentance* of all sin whatsoever, that so they might more easily bear all the difficulties that were now before them; and then to maintain a good *peace* with one another, and beware of giving or taking *offences*; and avoid all discoveries of a *touchy humour*; but use much *brotherly forbearance* (where by the way he had this remarkable observation: "In my own experience few or none have been found that sooner give offence, than those that easily take it; neither have they ever proved sound and profitable members of societies who have nourished this touchy humour"); as also to take heed of a *private spirit*, and all *retiredness of mind in each man, for his own proper advantage*; and likewise to be careful, that the *house of God*, which *they* were, might not be shaken with unnecessary *novelties* or *oppositions*; which LETTER afterwards produced most happy fruits among them.

§ 5. On August 5, 1620, they set sail from Southampton; but if it *shall*, as I believe it *will*, afflict my reader to be told what heart-breaking disasters befell them, in the very beginning of their undertaking, let him glorifie God, who carried them so well through their greater affliction.

They were by bad weather twice beaten back, before they came to the Land's end. But it was judged, that the badness of the weather did not retard them so much as the *deceit* of a master, who, grown sick of the voyage, made such pretences about the leakiness of his

vessel, that they were forced at last wholly to dismiss that lesser ship from the service. Being now all<sup>26</sup> stowed into *one ship*, on the sixth of September they put to sea; but they met with such terrible storms, that the principal persons on board had serious deliberations upon returning home again; however, after long beating upon the Atlantick ocean, they fell in with the land at Cape Cod, about the ninth of November following, where going on shore they fell upon their knees with many and hearty praises unto God, who had been *their assurance*, when they were *afar off upon the sea*, and was to be further *so*, now that they were come to the *ends of the earth*.

But why at this Cape? *Here* was not the port which they intended: *this* was not the land for which they had provided. There was indeed a most wonderful *providence* of God, over a pious and a praying people, in this *disappointment!* The most *crooked way* that ever was gone, even that of Israel's peregrination through the wilderness, may be called *a right way*, such was the way of this little Israel, now going into a wilderness.

## NOTES TO COTTON MATHER

THE extract for special study is from the second chapter of the first book of the "Magnalia Christi." Both the original edition of 1702 (Thomas Parkhurst, London) and the reprint of 1853 (Silas Andrus & Son, Hartford) have been used. The editor of the latter edition says: "The author's language is peculiarly his own. In the rapidity of his manner, he could pay but little attention to style." The justice of this observation will be apparent from a consideration of the first few sentences. The orthography and Italics of the original have been retained.

1. *Primordia* = the earliest beginnings, or primitive history.
2. The Reformation in England was begun by Henry VIII, and *firmly* established by Elizabeth. The Act of Supremacy, declaring the king to be the "only supreme head on earth of the Church of England," was passed in 1535. This may be regarded as the beginning of the Reformation.
3. The rallying point of the Reformers of the sixteenth century was "the Word of God." In opposition to the authority of tradition and of the Pope, they laid down the principle that "the Scriptures are the only rule of faith and practice in religion." The Puritans maintained that the Anglican Church, instead of returning to the simplicity of the primitive church, retained too many ceremonies of the Roman Catholic Church. The Puritans were so called because they urged, as they claimed, a *purer* worship.
4. The Act of Uniformity, which required that all public worship be conducted according to the Book of Common Prayer, was passed in 1559. It was enforced by Elizabeth with great rigor, the penalty for a third violation being imprisonment for life. Under these circumstances the Reformation, from the Puritan standpoint, indeed suffered a "hopeless retardation."
5. The covenant in question was formed at the village of Scrooby in Nottinghamshire.
6. This is the old spelling of *human*, which comes to us through the French. *Humane*, which has the accent on the last syllable, comes directly from the Latin *humanus*.
7. By human "inventions and additions" are meant the clerical vestments and elaborate liturgy of the Anglican Church.
8. A free reference to 2 Cor. viii. 5: "And this they did, not as we hoped, but first gave their own selves to the Lord, and unto us by the will of God."
9. The Puritans refused, as a matter of conscience, to wear clerical vestments and to use the Book of Common Prayer in public worship. This was a violation of the Act of Uniformity, and hence they were called Nonconformists.

It is estimated that in 1604 there were more than fifteen hundred Nonconformist clergymen in England and Wales.

10. Leyden was at this time the chief manufacturing city of the Netherlands, with a population of fully 70,000.

11. It is estimated that there were nearly three hundred adult persons belonging to the congregation.

12. John Robinson (1575-1625) was educated at Cambridge, held a benefice in Norfolk, was suspended for nonconformity, and then formed a congregation of Independents. A man of strong faith, excellent scholarship, and great ability, he deserved the praise bestowed upon him by Mather.

13. William Brewster (1560-1644) was the most considerable lay member of the congregation immigrating to Holland. He supported himself there by teaching English. He is generally known in history as *Elder* Brewster, from the office he held in the church.

14. William Ames, D.D. (1576-1633), was an independent theologian of England, and fellow of Christ College, Cambridge. He left England in the reign of James I to escape persecution, and became minister of the English church at The Hague. He was at Rotterdam, expecting to sail to America, when his death occurred.

15. By Arminianism is meant the peculiar doctrines of Arminius, a learned theologian of Holland. He was born in 1560 and died in 1609. His teachings may be summarized as follows: "1, God elects men to salvation on the basis of foreseen faith; 2, Christ died for all men, but only believers partake of the universal redemption; 3, Man, in order truly to believe, must be regenerated by the Holy Spirit; 4, The grace, by which true faith is effected, is not irresistible; 5, Men may fall away from a state of grace." The doctrines of Arminius, which are now widespread in various parts of the Christian church, were condemned by the Synod of Dort.

16. Simon Episcopius (his Dutch name was Bisschop) was born at Amsterdam in 1583 and died in 1643. He became the leader of the Arminian party after the death of Arminius. After the Synod of Dort in 1618, he was banished from Holland, but returned in 1626 to Amsterdam, where he became a professor of theology in the Arminian College there.

17. The Puritans transferred to the Christian Lord's day the rigorous laws of the old Jewish Sabbath. This transference has never been extensively sanctioned on the Continent, where indeed, as many believe, the tendency has been to the opposite extreme.

18. Congregationalism is that form of church government which rests all ecclesiastical power in the assembled brotherhood of each local church. Hence, it is opposed to the episcopal system of church government.

19. "The principle upon which the bishops justified their severities against the Puritans was the subjects' obligation to obey the laws of their country in all

things indifferent, which are neither commanded nor forbidden by the laws of God." — Neal's *Puritans*, Vol. I, p. 79. To the Puritans, however, they were not things of indifference, but of conscience.

20. The Walloons are Romanized Gauls, lineal representatives of the ancient Belgæ. They exhibit the Celtic temperament. Their number at present in Belgium is nearly three millions.

21. See Gen. xii. 1.

22. *Terminus ad quem* = destination.

23. The substance of these articles is given in Palfrey's "History of New England," Vol. I, p. 154.

24. This act showed the deep earnestness of the Puritans. It was only a temporary communism growing out of their necessities. Bradford, a leader among the Plymouth Colonists, wrote: "The experience that was had in this common course and condition, tried sundry years, and that amongst godly and sober men, may well evince the vanity of that conceit of Plato's and other ancients, applauded by some of later times, that the taking away of property, and bringing in community into a commonwealth, would make them happy and flourishing; as if they were wiser than God."

25. Delftshaven is fourteen miles from Leyden and two miles from Rotterdam, on the river Maas. Its present population is about 10,000.

26. When it was decided that the Speedwell was unseaworthy, a part of the company returned to England. The original number was about one hundred and twenty, of whom one hundred and two continued their journey in the Mayflower.

## III

## SELECTION FROM FRANKLIN

PRELIMINARY ADDRESS TO THE PENNSYLVANIA ALMANAC,  
ENTITLED POOR RICHARD'S ALMANAC, FOR  
THE YEAR 1758

I HAVE heard that nothing gives an author so great pleasure as to find his works respectfully quoted by other learned authors. This pleasure I have seldom enjoyed; for though I have been, if I may say it without vanity, an eminent author (of almanacs) annually, now a full quarter of a century, my brother authors in the same way (for what reason I know not) have ever been very sparing in their applauses; and no author has taken the least notice of me: so that, did not my writings produce me some solid pudding, the great deficiency of praise would have quite discouraged me.

I concluded, at length, that the people were the best judges of my merit, for they buy my works; and besides, in my rambles, where I am not personally known, I have frequently heard one and another of my adages repeated, with "As Poor Richard says," at the end on't. This gave me some satisfaction, as it showed not only that my instructions were regarded, but discovered likewise some respect for my authority; and I own, that to encourage the practice of remembering and repeating those wise sentences, I have sometimes quoted myself with great gravity.<sup>1</sup>

Judge, then, how much I have been gratified by an incident which I am going to relate to you. I stopped my horse lately, where a great number of people were collected at an auction<sup>2</sup> of merchants' goods. The hour of sale not being come, they were conversing on the badness of the times; and one of the company called to a plain, clean old man, with white locks: "Pray, father Abraham, what think ye of the times?<sup>3</sup> Won't these heavy taxes quite ruin the country? How shall we ever be able to pay them? What would you advise us to do?" Father Abraham stood up and replied, "If you'd have my advice, I'll give it to you in short; 'for a word to the wise is enough; and many words

won't fill a bushel,' as poor Richard says." They joined in desiring him to speak his mind; and gathering round him, he proceeded as follows:—

"Friends (says he) and neighbors, the taxes are indeed very heavy; and if those laid on by the government were the only ones we had to pay, we might more easily discharge them; but we have many others, and much more grievous to some of us. We are taxed twice as much by our idleness, three times as much by our pride, and four times as much by our folly;<sup>4</sup> and from these taxes the commissioners cannot ease or deliver us, by allowing an abatement. However, let us hearken to good advice, and something may be done for us; 'God helps them that help themselves,' as poor Richard says in his almanac.

I.<sup>5</sup> "It would be thought a hard government that should tax its people one-tenth part of their time, to be employed in its service; but idleness taxes many of us much more, if we reckon all that is spent in absolute sloth, or doing of nothing, with that which is spent in idle employments, or amusements that amount to nothing. Sloth, by bringing on diseases, absolutely shortens life. 'Sloth, like rust, consumes faster than labor wears, while the key often used is always bright,' as poor Richard says. 'But doest thou love life? then do not squander time, for that's the stuff life is made of,' as poor Richard says. How much more than is necessary do we spend in sleep, forgetting, that 'the sleeping fox catches no poultry, and that there will be sleeping enough in the grave,' as poor Richard says. 'If time be of all things the most precious, wasting time must be (as poor Richard says) the greatest prodigality;' since, as he elsewhere tells us, 'Lost time is never found again: and what we call time enough, always proves little enough.' Let us then up and be doing, and doing to the purpose; so by diligence shall we do more with less perplexity. 'Sloth makes all things difficult, but industry all easy,' as poor Richard says; and 'He that riseth late must trot all day, and shall scarce overtake his business at night; while laziness travels so slowly, that poverty soon overtakes him,' as we read in poor Richard; who adds, 'Drive thy business, let not that drive thee;' and 'Early to bed, and early to rise, makes a man healthy, wealthy, and wise.'

"So what signifies wishing and hoping for better times? We make these times better if we bestir ourselves. 'Industry need not wish,' as poor Richard says; and, 'He that lives upon hope will die

fasting.' 'There are no gains without pains; then help, hands, for I have no lands; or if I have, they are smartly taxed;' and (as poor Richard likewise observes), 'He that hath a trade hath an estate, and he that hath a calling hath an office of profit and honor;' but then the trade must be worked at, and the calling well followed, or neither the estate nor the office will enable us to pay our taxes. If we are industrious, we shall never starve; for, as poor Richard says, 'At the workingman's house hunger looks in, but dare not enter.' Nor will the bailiff or the constable enter; for 'Industry pays debts, but despair increaseth them,' says poor Richard. What though you have found no treasure, nor has any rich relation left you a legacy? 'Diligence is the mother of good luck,' as poor Richard says; and, 'God gives all things to industry; then plough deep while sluggards sleep, and you will have corn to sell and to keep,' says poor Dick. Work while it is called to-day; for you know not how much you may be hindered to-morrow; which makes poor Richard say, 'One to-day is worth two to-morrows;' and farther, 'Have you somewhat to do to-morrow, do it to-day.' 'If you were a servant, would you not be ashamed that a good master should catch you idle? Are you then your own master, be ashamed to catch yourself idle,' as poor Dick says. When there is so much to be done for yourself, your family, and your gracious king, be up by peep of day; 'Let not the sun look down and say, Inglorious here he lies!' 'Handle your tools without mittens;' remember, that 'the cat in gloves catches no mice,' as poor Richard says. It is true, there is much to be done, and perhaps you are weak-handed; but stick to it steadily, and you will see great effects; for, 'continual dropping wears away stones,' and 'by diligence and patience the mouse ate in two the cable,' and 'light strokes fell great oaks,' as poor Richard says in his almanac, the year I cannot just now remember.

"Methinks I hear some of you say, 'Must a man afford himself no leisure?' I will tell thee, my friend, what poor Richard says: 'Employ thy time well, if thou meanest to gain leisure; and since thou art not sure of a minute, throw not away an hour.' Leisure is time for doing something useful; this leisure the diligent man will obtain; but the lazy man never; so that, as poor Richard says, 'A life of leisure and a life of laziness are two things.' Do you imagine that sloth will afford you more comfort than labor? No; for, as poor Richard

says, ‘Troubles spring from idleness, and grievous toils from needless ease: many, without labor, would live by their wits only; but they break for want of stock.’ Whereas industry gives comfort, and plenty, and respect. ‘Fly pleasures, and they’ll follow you; the diligent spinner has a large shift; and, now I have a sheep and cow, everybody bids me good-morrow;’ all which is well said by poor Richard.

II. “But with our industry we must likewise be steady and settled and careful, and oversee our own affairs with our own eyes, and not trust too much to others; for, as poor Richard says, —

‘I never saw an oft removed tree,  
Nor yet an oft removed family,  
That throng so well, as those that settled be.’

“And again, ‘Three removes are as bad as a fire;’ and again, ‘Keep thy shop, and thy shop will keep thee;’ and again, ‘If you would have your business done, go; if not, send.’<sup>6</sup> And again, —

‘He that by the plow would thrive,  
Himself must either hold or drive.’

“And again, ‘The eye of the master will do more work than both his hands;’ and again, ‘Want of care does us more damage than want of knowledge;’ and again, ‘Not to oversee workmen, is to leave them your purse open!’ Trusting too much to others’ care is the ruin of many; for, as the almanac says, ‘In the affairs of the world, men are saved not by faith, but by the want of it;’ but a man’s own care is profitable; for, saith poor Dick, ‘Learning is to the studious, and riches to the careful, as well as power to the bold, and heaven to the virtuous.’ And, farther, ‘If you would have a faithful servant, and one that you like, serve yourself.’ And again, he adviseth to circumspection and care, even in the smallest matters, because sometimes, ‘A little neglect may breed great mischief;’ adding, ‘For want of a nail the shoe was lost; for want of a shoe the horse was lost; and for want of a horse the rider was lost, being overtaken and slain by the enemy — all for want of a little care about a horse-shoe nail.’

III. “So much for industry, my friends, and attention to one’s own business; but to these we must add frugality,<sup>7</sup> if we would make our industry more certainly successful. A man may, if he knows not how to save as he gets, ‘keep his nose all his life to the grindstone, and

die not worth a groat at last.' 'A fat kitchen makes a lean will,' as Poor Richard says, and,—

'Many estates are spent in the getting,  
Since women for tea forsook spinning and knitting,  
And men for punch forsook hewing and splitting.'

"If you would be wealthy," says he in another almanac, 'Think of saving as well as getting: the Indies<sup>8</sup> have not made Spain rich, because her outgoes are greater than her incomes.'

"Away then with your expensive follies, and you will not have much cause to complain of hard times, heavy taxes, and chargeable families; for, as poor Dick says,—

'Women and wine, game and deceit,  
Make the wealth small, and the want great.'

"And, farther, 'What maintains one vice would bring up two children.' You may think, perhaps, that a little tea, or a little punch now and then, diet a little more costly, clothes a little finer, and a little entertainment now and then, can be no great matter; but remember what poor Richard says, 'Many a little makes a mickle;' and, farther, 'Beware of little expenses; a small leak will sink a great ship;' and again, 'Who dainties love shall beggars prove;' and moreover, 'Fools make feasts, and wise men eat them.'

"Here you are all got together at this sale of fineries and nick-nacks. You call them *goods*; but if you do not take care, they will prove *evils* to some of you. You expect they will be sold cheap, and perhaps they may for less than they cost; but if you have no occasion for them, they must be dear to you. Remember what poor Richard says, 'Buy what thou hast no need of, and ere long thou shalt sell thy necessaries.' And again, 'At a great pennyworth, pause awhile.' He means that perhaps the cheapness is apparent only, and not real; or, the bargain, by straitening thee in thy business, may do thee more harm than good. For in another place he says, 'Many have been ruined by buying good pennyworths.' Again, as poor Richard says, 'It is foolish to lay out money in a purchase of repentance,' and yet this folly is practised every day at auctions, for want of minding the almanac. 'Wise men,' as poor Dick says, 'learn by others' harms, fools scarcely by their own; but *Felix quem faciunt aliena pericula cautum.*'<sup>9</sup> Many a one, for the sake of finery on the back, has gone with a hungry belly, and half starved

their families: ‘Silks and satins, scarlet and velvets,’ as poor Richard says, ‘put out the kitchen fire.’ These are not the necessities of life; they can scarcely be called the conveniences; and yet only because they look pretty, how many want to have them? The artificial wants of mankind thus become more numerous than the natural; and, as poor Dick says, ‘For one poor person there are a hundred indigent.’<sup>10</sup> By these and other extravagances the genteel are reduced to poverty and forced to borrow of those whom they formerly despised, but who, through industry and frugality, have maintained their standing; in which case, it appears plainly, ‘A ploughman on his legs is higher than a gentleman on his knees,’ as poor Richard says. Perhaps they have had a small estate left them, which they knew not the getting of; they think, ‘It is day, and will never be night;’ that a little to be spent out of so much is not worth minding: ‘A child and a fool (as poor Richard says) imagine twenty shillings and twenty years can never be spent; but always be taking out of the meal-tub, and never putting in, soon comes to the bottom;’ then, as poor Dick says, ‘When the well is dry, they know the worth of water.’ But this they might have known before, if they had taken his advice. If you would know the value of money, go and try to borrow some; for ‘He that goes a borrowing goes a sorrowing;’ and, indeed, so does he that lends to such people, when he goes to get it again. Poor Dick farther advises, and says, —

‘Fond pride of dress is sure a very curse;  
Ere fancy you consult, consult your purse.’

“And again, ‘Pride is as loud a beggar as Want, and a great deal more saucy.’ When you have bought one fine thing, you must buy ten more, that your appearance may be all of a piece; but poor Dick says, ‘It is easier to suppress the first desire than to satisfy all that follow it.’ And it is as truly folly for the poor to ape the rich, as for the frog to swell, in order to equal the ox.

‘Vessels large may venture more,  
But little boats should keep near shore.’

““Tis, however, a folly soon punished; for, ‘Pride that dines on vanity, sups on contempt,’ as poor Richard says. And, in another place, ‘Pride breakfasted with Plenty, dined with Poverty, and supped with Infamy.’ And after all, of what use is this pride of appearance

for which so much is risked, so much is suffered? It cannot promote health nor ease pain; it makes no increase of merit in the person; it creates envy; it hastens misfortune.

‘What is a butterfly? at best,  
He’s but a caterpillar dress’d;  
The gaudy fop’s his picture just,’

as poor Richard says.

“But what madness must it be to run in debt for these superfluities: we are offered by the terms of this sale six months credit, and that perhaps has induced some of us to attend it, because we cannot spare the ready money, and hope now to be fine without it. But ah! think what you do when you run in debt. You give to another power over your liberty. If you cannot pay at the time, you will be ashamed to see your creditor: you will be in fear when you speak to him; you will make poor, pitiful, sneaking excuses, and by degrees come to lose your veracity, and sink into base, downright lying; for, as poor Richard says, ‘The second vice is lying; the first is running in debt.’ And again, to the same purpose, ‘Lying rides upon debt’s back;’ whereas a freeborn Englishman ought not to be ashamed nor afraid to speak to any man living. But poverty often deprives a man of all spirit and virtue: ‘It is hard for an empty bag to stand upright,’ as poor Richard truly says. What would you think of that prince or that government, who would issue an edict, forbidding you to dress like a gentleman or gentlewoman, on pain of imprisonment or servitude? would you not say that you were free, have a right to dress as you please, and that such an edict would be a breach of your privileges, and such a government tyrannical? And yet you are about to put yourself under that tyranny when you run in debt for such dress! Your creditor has authority, at his pleasure, to deprive you of your liberty, ‘by confining you in gaol for life,’<sup>11</sup> or by selling you for a servant, if you should not be able to pay him. When you have got your bargain, you may, perhaps, think little of payment; but, ‘Creditors (poor Richard tells us) have better memories than debtors;’ and in another place he says, ‘Creditors are a superstitious sect, great observers of set days and times.’ The day comes round before you are aware, and the demand is made before you are prepared to satisfy it. Or if you bear your debt in mind, the term, which at first seemed so

long, will, as it lessens, appear extremely short. Time will seem to have added wings to his heels as well as at his shoulders. ‘Those have a short Lent (saith poor Richard) who owe money to be paid at Easter.’ Then since, as he says, ‘The borrower is a slave to the lender, and the debtor to the creditor;’ disdain the chain, preserve your freedom, and maintain your independency: be industrious and free; be frugal and free. At present, perhaps, you may think yourselves in thriving circumstances, and that you can bear a little extravagance without injury; but, as poor Richard says,—

‘For age and want, save while you may,  
No morning sun lasts a whole day.’

“Gain may be temporary and uncertain; but ever, while you live, expense is constant and certain; and ‘It is easier to build two chimneys than to keep one in fuel,’ as poor Richard says. So ‘Rather go to bed supperless than rise in debt.’”

‘Get what you can, and what you get, hold;  
’Tis the stone that will turn all your lead into gold,’

as poor Richard says. And when you have got the philosopher’s stone, sure you will no longer complain of bad times or the difficulty of paying taxes.

IV. “This doctrine, my friends, is reason and wisdom: but, after all, do not depend too much upon your own industry, and frugality, and prudence, though excellent things; for they may all be blasted without the blessing of Heaven;<sup>12</sup> and, therefore, ask that blessing humbly, and be not uncharitable to those that at present seem to want it, but comfort and help them. Remember Job suffered, and was afterwards prosperous.

“And now, to conclude, ‘Experience keeps a dear school; but fools will learn in no other, and scarce in that; for it is true, we may give advice, but we cannot give conduct,’ as poor Richard says. However, remember this, ‘They that will not be counseled, cannot be helped,’ as Poor Richard says; and, farther, that ‘If you will not hear Reason, she will surely rap your knuckles.’”

Thus the old gentleman ended his harangue. The people heard it, and approved the doctrine, and immediately practised the contrary, just as if it had been a common sermon; for the auction opened, and

they began to buy extravagantly, notwithstanding all his cautions, and their own fear of taxes. I found the good man had thoroughly studied my almanacs, and digested all I had dropped on these topics, during the course of twenty-five years. The frequent mention he made of me must have tired every one else; but my vanity was wonderfully delighted with it, though I was conscious that not a tenth part of the wisdom was my own, which he ascribed to me, but rather the gleanings that I had made of the sense of all ages and nations. However, I resolved to be the better for the echo of it; and though I had at first determined to buy stuff for a new coat, I went away, resolved to wear my old one a little longer. Reader, if thou wilt do the same, thy profit will be as great as mine.

I am, as ever, thine to serve thee,

RICHARD SAUNDERS.

## NOTES TO FRANKLIN

SEE the sketch of Franklin for an account of the "Almanac," and the popularity of Father Abraham's speech.

1. The opening paragraphs well illustrate Franklin's style. It is clear and natural, and pervaded by a kindly humor. The flavor of Addison's *Spectator* is easily recognized. The Saxon element of our language predominates, and there is almost a total lack of figurative language.

2. Note the etymology: Latin *augere*, to increase. "A public sale, where the price was called out and the article sold adjudged to the last increaser of the price, or the highest bidder." — WEBSTER.

The place for Father Abraham's speech was wisely chosen. The auctions of those days were scenes of extravagance and folly. The people, summoned by bell and crier, gathered long before the sale began, and were supplied with rum by the salesman. Thus, when the auction began, they were in a condition to pay prices they would not have thought of in their sober senses.

3. The people might well inquire of the times. It was a day of darkness and gloom. "The French and Indian War had been raging four years; and success was still with the French. Washington had been driven from Fort Necessity. Braddock had perished in the woods. The venture against Niagara had failed. That against Ticonderoga had done little. The sea swarmed with French and Spanish privateers. Trade was dull. Taxes were heavy. Grumbling was everywhere. Men of all sorts bemoaned the hard times." — MASTER.

4. Here we are introduced to Franklin's philosophy of life. It has been called "the candle-end-saving philosophy." Moral considerations for their own sake hardly entered into it. The virtues of industry, frugality, and integrity were to be practised as the best policy. Idleness, wastefulness, and knavery were to be avoided because experience shows that they do not pay.

5. Note the four divisions of the speech or sermon. The first treats of industry; the second, of attention to one's business; the third, of frugality; the fourth (and very briefly), of the blessing of Heaven. It would be difficult to find elsewhere so much practical wisdom crowded into a small space. The maxims, for the most part, were not original, but taken from every available source. Many of them were improved by Franklin's happy phraseology. For example, the aphorism, "Bad hours and ill company have ruined many fine young people," was transformed in "Poor Richard" into, "The rotten apple spoils his companions."

6. This adage is noteworthy for its connection with an event in the life of the Revolutionary hero, Paul Jones. After his celebrated victory in the Ranger, he went to Brest to await the command of a new ship that had been promised him. He waited for months in vain. He wrote to Franklin, to the royal family, and to the king, but was put off with delays and excuses. Finally, he happened to pick up a copy of "Poor Richard," and read, "If you would have your business done, go; if not, send;" and profiting by the lesson, he hastened to Versailles, and there got an order for the purchase of a ship, which, in honor of his teacher, he renamed the Bon Homme Richard.

7. It is significant that Franklin uses the word *frugality* rather than *economy*. It is more in harmony with his practical philosophy. "*Economy* avoids all waste and extravagance, and applies money<sup>to</sup> to the best advantage; *frugality* cuts off all indulgences, and proceeds on a system of rigid and habitual saving." *Frugality* is in danger of running into the vice of parsimony.

8. These are the West Indies, to which Spain originally laid claim by the so-called right of discovery. Of all the islands not one now belongs to Spain. The extensive revenues at one time derived from the Indies were squandered in foreign wars and domestic strife.

9. "Fortunate is the man who learns by the experience of others."

10. According to Franklin's distinction, a *poor* person is one who cannot supply his natural wants; an *indigent* person is one who cannot supply his artificial wants. Hence we may give the sense of the maxim by saying, More persons suffer from artificial than from natural wants.

11. The law giving the creditor a right to imprison the debtor in default of payment continued till late into the nineteenth century. It was abolished in New York in 1831. The history of the relation of debtor and creditor shows the march of social progress. In ancient times the creditor had power not only over the person of the debtor, but over his wife and children also. A reference to this fact is found in Matt. xviii. 25.

12. Franklin firmly believed in an overruling Providence. In his last illness he expressed his gratitude to the Supreme Being, "who had raised him, from small and low beginnings, to such high rank and consideration among men." This belief is clearly seen in his speech before the convention assembled to frame the Constitution of the United States, when he moved that the sessions be opened each day with prayer. "I have lived, sir, a long time; and, the longer I live, the more convincing proofs I see of this truth, *that God governs in the affairs of men*: and, if a sparrow cannot fall to the ground without his notice, is it probable that an empire can rise without his aid? We have been assured, sir, in the Sacred Writings, that 'except the Lord build the house, they labor in vain that build it.' I firmly believe this."

## IV

SELECTION FROM JONATHAN EDWARDS  
RESOLUTIONS

BEING sensible that I am unable to do anything without God's help, I do humbly entreat him by his grace, to enable me to keep these resolutions, so far as they are agreeable to his will, for Christ's sake.

Remember to read over these resolutions once a week.

1. *Resolved*, That I will do whatsoever I think to be most to the glory of God<sup>1</sup> and my own good, profit, and pleasure, in the whole of my duration, without any consideration of the time, whether now, or never so many myriads of ages hence. *Resolved*, to do whatever I think to be my duty, and most for the good of mankind in general. *Resolved* so to do, whatever *difficulties* I meet with, how many soever, and how great soever.

2. *Resolved*, To be continually endeavoring to find out some new contrivance and invention to promote the forementioned things.

3. *Resolved*, If ever I shall fall and grow dull, so as to neglect to keep any part of these resolutions, to repent of all I can remember, when I come to myself again.

4. *Resolved*, Never to *do* any manner of thing, whether in soul or body, less or more, but what tends to the glory of God; nor *be*, nor *suffer* it, if I can possibly avoid it.

5. *Resolved*, Never to lose one moment of time, but to improve it in the most profitable way I possibly can.

6. *Resolved*, To live with all my might while I do live.

7. *Resolved*, Never to do any thing which I should be afraid to do, if it were the last hour of my life.

8. *Resolved*, To act, in all respects, both speaking and doing, as if nobody had been so vile as I, and as if I had committed the same sins, or had the same infirmities or failings as others; and that I will let the knowledge of their failings promote nothing but shame in myself, and prove only an occasion of my confessing my own sins and misery to God.

9. *Resolved*, To think much, on all occasions, of my own dying and of the common circumstances which attend death.<sup>2</sup>
10. *Resolved*, When I feel pain, to think of the pains of martyrdom and of hell.
11. *Resolved*, When I think of any theorem in divinity to be solved, immediately to do what I can towards solving it, if circumstances do not hinder.
12. *Resolved*, If I take delight in it as a gratification of pride or vanity, or on any such account, immediately to throw it by.
13. *Resolved*, To be endeavoring to find out fit objects of charity and liberality.
14. *Resolved*, Never to do any thing out of revenge.
15. *Resolved*, Never to suffer the least motions of anger towards irrational beings.
16. *Resolved*, Never to speak evil of any one so that it shall tend to his dishonor, more or less, upon no account, except for some real good.
17. *Resolved*, That I will live so, as I shall wish I had done when I come to die.
18. *Resolved*, To live so at all times, as I think it best, in my most devout frames, and when I have the clearest notion of the things of the gospel and another world.
19. *Resolved*, Never to do any thing which I should be afraid to do, if I expected it would not be above an hour before I should hear the last trump.
20. *Resolved*, To maintain the strictest temperance in eating and drinking.
21. *Resolved*, Never to do any thing, which, if I should see in another, I should account a just occasion to despise him for, or to think any way the more meanly of him.
22. *Resolved*, To endeavor to obtain for myself as much happiness in the other world, as I possibly can, with all the might, power, vigor, and vehemence, yea, violence, I am capable of, or can bring myself to exert, in any way that can be thought of.<sup>3</sup>
23. *Resolved*, Frequently to take some deliberate action, which seems most unlikely to be done for the glory of God, and trace it back to the original intention, designs, and ends of it; and, if I find it not to be for God's glory, to repute it as a breach of the fourth resolution.

24. *Resolved*, Whenever I do any conspicuously evil action, to trace it back till I come to the original cause; and then, both carefully to endeavor to do so no more, and to fight and pray with all my might against the original of it.

25. *Resolved*, To examine carefully and constantly what that one thing in me is, which causes me in the least to doubt of the love of God; and to direct all my forces against it.

26. *Resolved*, To cast away such things as I find do abate my assurance.<sup>4</sup>

27. *Resolved*, Never wilfully to omit any thing, except the omission be for the glory of God; and frequently to examine my omissions.

28. *Resolved*, To study the Scriptures so steadily, constantly, and frequently, as that I may find, and plainly perceive myself to grow in the knowledge of the same.

29. *Resolved*, Never to count that a prayer, nor to let that pass as a prayer, nor that as a petition of a prayer, which is so made, that I cannot hope that God will answer it; nor that as a confession, which I cannot hope God will accept.

30. *Resolved*, To strive every week to be brought higher in religion, and to a higher exercise of grace than I was the week before.

31. *Resolved*, Never to say any thing at all against anybody, but when it is perfectly agreeable to the highest degree of Christian honor, and of love to mankind; agreeable to the lowest humility and sense of my own faults and failings; and agreeable to the Golden Rule; often when I have said any thing against any one, to bring it to, and try it strictly by, the test of this resolution.

32. *Resolved*, To be strictly and firmly faithful to my trust, and that that in Proverbs xx. 6, "A faithful man, who can find?" may not be partly fulfilled in me.

33. *Resolved*, To do always toward making, maintaining, and preserving peace, when it can be done without an overbalancing detriment in other respects.

34. *Resolved*, In narrations, never to speak any thing but the pure and simple verity.

35. *Resolved*, Whenever I so much question whether I have done my duty, as that my quiet and calm is thereby disturbed, to set it down, and also how the question was resolved.

36. *Resolved*, Never to speak evil of any, except I have some particular good call to it.

37. *Resolved*, To inquire every night, as I am going to bed, wherein I have been negligent; what sin I have committed; and wherein I have denied myself. Also at the end of every week, month, and year.

38. *Resolved*, Never to utter any thing that is sportive, or matter of laughter, on a Lord's day.<sup>5</sup>

39. *Resolved*, Never to do any thing of which I so much question the lawfulness, as that I intend at the same time to consider and examine afterwards whether it be lawful or not, unless I as much question the lawfulness of the omission.

40. *Resolved*, To inquire every night before I go to bed, whether I have acted in the best way I possibly could with respect to eating and drinking.

41. *Resolved*, To ask myself, at the end of every day, week, month, and year, wherein I could possibly, in any respect, have done better.

42. *Resolved*, Frequently to renew the dedication of myself to God, which was made at my baptism; which I solemnly renewed when I was received into the communion of the Church; and which I have solemnly remade this 12th day of January, 1723.

43. *Resolved*, Never, henceforward, till I die, to act as if I were any way my own, but entirely and altogether God's; agreeably to what is to be found in Saturday, January 12th, 1723.

44. *Resolved*, That no other end but religion shall have any influence at all on any of my actions; and that no action shall be, in the least circumstance, any otherwise than the religious end will carry it.<sup>6</sup>

45. *Resolved*, Never to allow any pleasure or grief, joy or sorrow, nor any affection at all, nor any *degree* of affection, nor any circumstance relating to it, but what helps religion.

46. *Resolved*, Never to allow the least measure of fretting or uneasiness at my father or mother. *Resolved*, to suffer no effects of it, so much as in the least alteration of speech, or motion of my eye; and to be especially careful of it with respect to any of our family.

47. *Resolved*, To endeavor, to my utmost, to deny whatever is not most agreeable to a good and universally sweet and benevolent, quiet, peaceable, contented and easy, compassionate and generous, humble and meek, submissive and obliging, diligent and industrious, charitable and even, patient, moderate, forgiving, and sincere temper; and to do, at all times, what such a temper would lead me to, and to examine, strictly, at the end of every week, whether I have so done.

48. *Resolved*, Constantly, with the utmost niceness and diligence, and the strictest scrutiny, to be looking into the state of my soul, that I may know whether I have truly an interest in Christ or not ; that, when I come to die, I may not have any negligence respecting this, to repent of.

49. *Resolved*, That this shall never be, if I can help it.

50. *Resolved*, That I will act so, as I think I shall judge would have been best and most prudent, when I come into the future world.

51. *Resolved*, That I will act so, in every respect, as I think I shall wish I had done, if I should at last be damned.

52. I frequently hear persons in old age say how they would live, if they were to live their lives over again. *Resolved*, that I will live just so as I can think I shall wish I had done, supposing I live to old age.

53. *Resolved*, To improve every opportunity, when I am in the best and happiest frame of mind, to cast and venture my soul on the Lord Jesus Christ, to trust and confide in him, and consecrate myself wholly to him ; that from this I may have assurance of my safety, knowing that I confide in my Redeemer.

54. *Resolved*, Whenever I hear any thing spoken in commendation of any person, if I think it would be praiseworthy in me, that I will endeavor to imitate it.

55. *Resolved*, To endeavor, to my utmost, so to act as I can think I should do, if I had already seen the happiness of heaven, and hell torments.

56. *Resolved*, Never to give over, nor in the least to slacken my fight with my corruptions, however unsuccessful I may be.

57. *Resolved*, When I fear misfortunes and adversity, to examine whether I have done my duty, and resolve to do it, and let the event be just as Providence orders it. I will, as far as I can, be concerned about nothing but my duty and my sin.

58. *Resolved*, Not only to refrain from an air of dislike, fretfulness, and anger in conversation ; but to exhibit an air of love, cheerfulness, and benignity.

59. *Resolved*, When I am most conscious of provocations to ill-nature and anger, that I will strive most to feel and act good-naturedly ; yea, at such times to manifest good-nature, though I think that in other respects it would be disadvantageous, and so as would be imprudent at other times.

60. *Resolved*, Whenever my feelings begin to appear in the least out of order, when I am conscious of the least uneasiness within, or the least irregularity without, I will then subject myself to the strictest examination.

61. *Resolved*, That I will not give way to that listlessness which I find unbends and relaxes my mind from being fully and fixedly set on religion, whatever excuse I may have for it; that what my listlessness inclines me to do, is best to be done, etc.

62. *Resolved*, Never to do any thing but my duty, and then, according to Ephesians vi. 6-8, to do it willingly and cheerfully, as unto the Lord, and not to man; knowing, that whatever good any man doth, the same shall he receive of the Lord.

63. On the supposition that there never was to be but one individual in the world at any one time who was properly a complete Christian, in all respects of a right stamp, having Christianity always shining in its true lustre, and appearing excellent and lovely, from whatever part, and under whatever character viewed; — *Resolved*, to act just as I would do, if I strove with all my might to be that one, who should live in my time.<sup>7</sup>

64. *Resolved*, When I find those “groanings which cannot be uttered,” of which the Apostle speaks, and those “breakings of soul for the longing it hath,” of which the Psalmist speaks, Psalm cxix. 20, that I will promote them to the utmost of my power, and that I will not be weary of earnestly endeavoring to vent my desires, nor of the repetitions of such earnestness.

65. *Resolved*, Very much to exercise myself in this, all my life long, namely, with the greatest openness of which I am capable, to declare my ways to God, and lay open my soul to him, all my sins, temptations, difficulties, sorrows, fears, hopes, desires, and every thing, and every circumstance, according to Dr. Manton’s Sermon on the 119th Psalm.<sup>8</sup>

66. *Resolved*, That I will endeavor always to keep a benign aspect, and air of acting and speaking, in all places and in all companies, except it should so happen that duty requires otherwise.

67. *Resolved*, After afflictions to inquire, What am I the better for them? what good I have got by them, and what I might have got by them.

68. *Resolved*, To confess frankly to myself all that which I find in

myself, either infirmity or sin; and, if it be what concerns religion, also to confess the whole case to God, and implore needed help.

69. *Resolved*, Always to do that which I shall wish I had done, when I see others do it.

70. Let there be something of benevolence in all that I speak.

## NOTES TO JONATHAN EDWARDS

FOR a general introduction to the Resolutions, see the sketch of Edwards.

The lives of Franklin and Edwards present a striking and instructive contrast. Franklin lived for this life; Edwards for the life to come. Franklin aimed at worldly success; Edwards at moral and spiritual excellence. Franklin stored his mind with maxims of practical wisdom; Edwards with the moral precepts of the Scriptures. Franklin led a busy life among men, seeking to improve their material condition; Edwards lived in communion with God, seeking to grow in spiritual wisdom and culture. Both lives were, perhaps, a little one-sided. It would have been better for Franklin if he had paid more attention to moral and spiritual truth. His character would have gained in completeness and beauty; and his life would have escaped the moral obliquities with which it is stained. It would have been better for Edwards if his piety had been more genial. His character would have gained in attractiveness, and his life would have appealed more strongly to the sympathies of men.

Edwards was a profound student of the Scripture. Its truths had become a part of his ordinary store of thought and feeling. These Resolutions seem to have been original productions, growing directly out of his own religious life; yet most of them embody Scripture truth. The general tone of them, however, shows a Puritan rigor that is commonly regarded to-day as untrue alike to the gospel and to human life. But this rigor, it should not be forgotten, was characteristic of the best religious life in New England during the Colonial period.

1. "Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God." — 1 Cor. x. 31. In like manner nearly every resolution may be illustrated from the Scriptures. Under favorable circumstances, such an illustration might be assigned as an exercise.

2. This and the following resolution show the Puritanic type of faith. Such habitual meditation on death is not urged in the Scripture, nor is it helpful to the life and character.

3. This resolution savors of what has been called "other-worldliness." The best preparation for happiness in the other world is a faithful discharge of our duty in all the relations of this world.

4. By *assurance* is here meant full confidence in God's favor.

5. This resolution again reminds us of the exaggerated Puritanism that found expression in the so-called "Blue Laws," some of the requirements of which were as follows: "No one shall run on the Sabbath day, or shall walk in

his garden or elsewhere, except reverently to and from meeting. No one shall travel, cook victuals, make beds, sweep house, cut hair or shave on the Sabbath day. No woman shall kiss her child on the Sabbath or fasting day."

6. This seems to bring out clearly the one-sidedness of Edwards's life. Religion is only a part of life. It is not so much an end in itself as a means to enoble character and sanctify human relations. When religion is viewed otherwise than in relation to the common duties of life, it is apt to degenerate into asceticism.

7. From this and preceding resolutions, it will appear that Edwards's type of piety was too self-centred. He was continually thinking of himself, of his state of mind, and of his spiritual attainments and deficiencies. It may be questioned whether this attitude of mind is best. We should think more of God and of duty, and then our inward states will largely take care of themselves.

8. The Rev. Thomas Manton, D.D., was a distinguished Puritan preacher in England. He was born in 1620 and died in 1677. One of his most admired works is "CXC Sermons on the CXIX Psalm."

## V

## SELECTION FROM JEFFERSON

A DECLARATION BY THE REPRESENTATIVES OF THE  
UNITED STATES OF AMERICA IN GENERAL CONGRESS  
ASSEMBLED

WHEN, in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth the separate and equal station to which the laws of nature and of nature's God entitle them, a decent<sup>1</sup> respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.

We hold these truths to be self-evident: that all men are created equal;<sup>2</sup> that they are endowed by their Creator with [inherent and]<sup>3</sup> inalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness; that to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed; that whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new government, laying its foundation on such principles, and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their safety and happiness. Prudence, indeed, will dictate that governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes; and accordingly all experience hath shown that mankind are more disposed to suffer while evils are sufferable than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, [begun at a distinguished period and]<sup>4</sup> pursuing invariably the same object, evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism, it is their right, it is their duty to throw off such government, and to provide new guards for their future security. Such has been the patient sufferance of these colonies; and such is now the necessity which constrains them to [expunge]<sup>5</sup> their former systems of government. The history of the present king of Great Britain<sup>6</sup> is a history of [unremit-

ting]<sup>7</sup> injuries and usurpations, [among which appears no solitary fact to contradict the uniform tenor of the rest, but all have]<sup>8</sup> in direct object the establishment of an absolute tyranny over these states. To prove this, let facts be submitted to a candid world, [for the truth of which we pledge a faith yet unsullied by falsehood].<sup>9</sup>

He has refused his assent to laws the most wholesome and necessary for the public good.

He has forbidden his governors to pass laws of immediate and pressing importance, unless suspended in their operation, till his assent should be obtained; and, when so suspended, he has utterly neglected to attend to them.

He has refused to pass other laws for the accommodation of large districts of people, unless those people would relinquish the right of representation in the legislature, a right inestimable to them, and formidable to tyrants only.

He has called together legislative bodies at places unusual, uncomfortable, and distant from the repository of their public records, for the sole purpose of fatiguing them into compliance with his measures.

He has dissolved representative houses repeatedly [and continually]<sup>10</sup> for opposing with manly firmness his invasions on the rights of the people.

He has refused for a long time after such dissolutions to cause others to be elected, whereby the legislative powers, incapable of annihilation, have returned to the people at large for their exercise, the state remaining, in the meantime, exposed to all the dangers of invasion from without and convulsions within.

He has endeavored to prevent the population of these states; for that purpose obstructing the laws for naturalization of foreigners, refusing to pass others to encourage their migrations hither, and raising the conditions of new appropriations of lands.

He has [suffered]<sup>11</sup> the administration of justice [totally to cease in some of these states], refusing his assent to laws for establishing judiciary powers.

He has made [our]<sup>12</sup> judges dependent on his will alone for the tenure of their offices, and the amount and payment of their salaries.

He has erected a multitude of new offices [by a self-assumed power],<sup>13</sup> and sent hither swarms of new officers to harass our people and eat out their substance.

He has kept among us in times of peace standing armies [and ships of war]<sup>14</sup> without the consent of our legislatures.

He has affected to render the military independent of, and superior to, the civil power.

He has combined with others to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our constitutions and unacknowledged by our laws, giving his assent to their acts of pretended legislation for quartering large bodies of armed troops among us; for protecting them by a mock trial from punishment for any murders which they should commit on the inhabitants of these states; for cutting off our trade with all parts of the world; for imposing taxes on us without our consent; for depriving us<sup>15</sup> of the benefits of trial by jury; for transporting us beyond seas to be tried for pretended offences; for abolishing the free system of English laws in a neighboring province, establishing therein an arbitrary government, and enlarging its boundaries, so as to render it at once an example and fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule into these [states];<sup>16</sup> for taking away our charters, abolishing our most valuable laws,<sup>17</sup> and altering fundamentally the forms of our governments; for suspending our own legislatures, and declaring themselves invested with power to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.

He has abdicated government here, [withdrawing his governors, and declaring us out of his allegiance and protection].<sup>18</sup>

He has plundered our seas, ravaged our coasts, burnt our towns, and destroyed the lives.of our people.

He is at this time transporting large armies of foreign mercenaries to complete the works of death, desolation, and tyranny already begun with circumstances of cruelty and perfidy<sup>19</sup> unworthy the head of a civilized nation.

He has constrained our fellow citizens taken captive on the high seas, to bear arms against their country, to become the executioners of their friends and brethren, or to fall themselves by their hands.

He has<sup>20</sup> endeavored to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers the merciless Indian savages, whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes, and conditions [of existence].<sup>21</sup>

[He has incited treasonable insurrections of our fellow citizens, with the allurements of forfeiture and confiscation of our property.

He has waged cruel war against human nature itself, violating its most sacred rights of life and liberty in the persons of a distant people

who never offended him, captivating and carrying them into slavery in another hemisphere, or to incur miserable death in their transportation thither. This piratical warfare, the opprobrium of INFIDEL powers, is the warfare of the CHRISTIAN king of Great Britain. Determined to keep open a market where MEN should be bought and sold, he has prostituted his negative for suppressing every legislative attempt to prohibit or to restrain this execrable commerce. And that this assemblage of horrors might want no fact of distinguished die, he is now exciting these very people to rise in arms among us, and to purchase that liberty of which he has deprived them, by murdering the people on whom he also obtruded them: thus paying off former crimes committed against the LIBERTIES of one people, with crimes which he urges them to commit against the LIVES of another.]<sup>22</sup>

In every stage of these oppressions we have petitioned for redress in the most humble terms: our repeated petitions have been answered only<sup>23</sup> by repeated injuries.

A prince whose character is thus marked by every act which may define a tyrant is unfit to be the ruler of a people [who mean to be free. Future ages will scarcely believe that the hardiness of one man adventured, within the short compass of twelve years only, to lay a foundation so broad and so undisguised for tyranny over a people fostered and fixed in principles of freedom.]<sup>24</sup>

Nor have we been wanting in attentions to our British brethren. We have warned them from time to time of attempts by their legislature to extend [a]<sup>25</sup> jurisdiction over [these our states].<sup>25</sup> We have reminded them of the circumstances of our emigration and settlement here, [no one of which could warrant so strange a pretension: that these were effected at the expense of our own blood and treasure, unassisted by the wealth or strength of Great Britain: that in constituting indeed our several forms of government, we had adopted one common king, thereby laying a foundation for perpetual league and amity with them: but that submission to their parliament was no part of our constitution, nor ever an idea, if history may be credited: and]<sup>26</sup> we<sup>27</sup> appealed to their native justice and magnanimity [as well as to]<sup>28</sup> the ties of one common kindred to disavow these usurpations which [were likely to]<sup>29</sup> interrupt our connection and correspondence. They too have been deaf to the voice of justice and of consanguinity, [and when occasions have been given them, by the regular course of their

laws, of removing from their councils the disturbers of our harmony, they have, by their free election, re-established them in power. At this very time, too, they are permitting their chief magistrate to send over not only soldiers of our own common blood, but Scotch and foreign mercenaries to invade and destroy us. These facts have given the last stab to agonizing affection, and manly spirit bids us to renounce forever these unfeeling brethren. We must endeavor to forget our former love for them, and hold them as we hold the rest of mankind, enemies in war, in peace friends. We might have been a free and a great people together; but a communication of grandeur and of freedom, it seems, is below their dignity. Be it so, since they will have it. The road to happiness and to glory is open to us too. We will tread it apart from them, and] <sup>30</sup> acquiesce in the necessity which denounces our [eternal] <sup>31</sup> separation.

We therefore the representatives of the United States of America in General Congress assembled, appealing to the supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do in the name, and by the authority of the good people of these [states reject and renounce all allegiance and subjection to the kings of Great Britain and all others who may hereafter claim by, through or under them; we utterly dissolve all political connection which may heretofore have subsisted between us and the people or parliament of Great Britain: and finally we do assert and declare these colonies to be free and independent states], <sup>32</sup> and that as free and independent states, they have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and to do all other acts and things which independent states may of right do.

And for the support of this declaration,<sup>33</sup> we mutually pledge to each other, our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honor.

## NOTES TO JEFFERSON

THE leading facts connected with the preparation and adoption of the Declaration have already been given. In every respect it is a remarkable document. It is methodical in its structure, consisting of (1) a formal introduction, (2) a statement of fundamental principles, (3) a striking array of facts, and (4) a practical conclusion. Its language is correct, clear, and strong. It is a powerful argument suffused with emotion. This latter element gives it the rhetorical form, which has been criticised as excessive. It was admirably suited to its purpose, and was at once accepted by the American people as a fitting and triumphant statement of their cause.

The Declaration had a happy effect upon the colonies. It gave them a definite object, and inspired a corresponding resolution and courage. Whether read to the army or to assemblies of the people, it aroused extraordinary enthusiasm. It was everywhere celebrated with festive gayeties and devout thanksgivings.

The originality of the document has unjustly been called into question. As we have seen in our study of Jefferson and of the Revolutionary period, the principles and facts it contains were a common possession of the colonial patriots. Its originality consists in its incomparable arrangement and statement of these facts and principles. Under the circumstances, no other originality was desirable or possible.

For two days prior to its adoption, the Declaration passed through a fiery ordeal of criticism. Not only every paragraph, but every sentence and every word, was subjected to searching and captious examination. Numerous expressions were changed; and the omissions amount to nearly one-third of the entire paper. Upon the whole, the result of this minute criticism was an almost faultless perfection of form. The Declaration, as given in the text, is the original draft prepared by Jefferson; and the notes are chiefly concerned with the changes introduced.

When the Declaration was under discussion, Jefferson remained silent. As we have seen, he was not strong as a speaker. But who can doubt the intense interest with which he followed the discussion? According to his judgment, John Adams "was the colossus in that debate." He fought "fearlessly for every word of it — and with a power to which a mind masculine and impassioned in its conceptions — a will of torrent-like force — a heroism which only glared forth more luridly at the approach of danger — and a patriotism whose burning throb was rather akin to the feeling of a parent fighting over his offspring, than to the colder sentiment of tamer animals, lent resistless sway."

Jefferson was keenly sensitive to the attacks that were made upon the Declaration. During one of the debates, he was sitting by Franklin, who noticed that he was writhing a little under some acrimonious criticisms, and who comforted him with a characteristic anecdote. "I have made it a rule," said Franklin, "whenever in my power, to avoid becoming draughtsman of papers to be reviewed by a public body. I took my lesson from an incident which I will relate to you. When I was a journeyman printer, one of my companions, an apprentice hatter, having served out his time, was about to open shop for himself. His first concern was to have a handsome sign-board, with a proper inscription. He composed it in these words: 'John Thompson, Hatter, makes and sells hats for ready money,' with a figure of a hat subjoined; but he thought he would submit it to his friends for their amendments. The first he showed it to thought the word 'Hatter' tautologous, because followed by the words, 'makes hats,' which show he was a hatter. It was struck out. The next observed that the word 'makes' might as well be omitted, because his customers would not care who made the hats. If good and to their mind, they would buy, by whomsoever made. He struck it out. A third thought the words 'for ready money' were useless, as it was not the custom of the place to sell on credit. Everyone who purchased expected to pay. They were parted with, and the inscription now stood, 'John Thompson sells hats.' 'Sells hats!' says his next friend; 'why, nobody will expect you to give them away; what then is the use of that word?' It was stricken out, and 'hats' followed it, the rather as there was one painted on the board. So the inscription was reduced ultimately to 'John Thompson,' with the figure of a hat subjoined."

1. *Decent* = proper, becoming. From Latin *decere*, to be fitting or becoming, through the French.

2. *Equal*, not in intellect or body, nor in the circumstances of birth, but in civil freedom. The distinctions of master and slave, nobles and commons, kings and subjects, are not made by nature. They are artificial distinctions; and though answering a good purpose for a time, they are not permanent. This statement of the Declaration has often been misunderstood.

3. "*Certain*" was substituted for the words in brackets.

4. The words in brackets were struck out, with a perceptible gain in force. The phraseology is substantially the same as in "The Summary View of the Rights of British America." See sketch of Jefferson.

5. "*Alter*" was substituted, with a gain in clearness and precision.

6. Jefferson had written "his present majesty"; it was John Adams who suggested the wording of the text, which is an improvement.

7. "*Repeated*" was substituted, with a decided gain in precision.

8. The sentence in brackets was struck out, the phrase "*all having*" being inserted to retain the grammatical connection. There is a perceptible gain in brevity and force.

9. This last sentence was wisely omitted.
10. Omitted, with evident gain in precision.
11. "*Obstructed*" was inserted here, and "*by*" took the place of the following bracketed clause. There is a gain in precision, brevity, and force.
12. Omitted, at the suggestion of Franklin.
13. Omitted, with a gain in force.
14. Omitted.
15. "*In many cases*" was inserted after "*us*," in order to conform the statement exactly to the facts.
16. "*Colonies*" was substituted.
17. This phrase, "abolishing our most valuable laws," was inserted by Franklin.
18. In place of the bracketed expression, the following was inserted: "*by declaring us out of his protection and waging war against us.*" The improvement is obvious.
19. After "*perfidy*" was inserted: "*scarcely paralleled in the most barbarous ages, and totally.*" In this case, the addition is a doubtful improvement.
20. Here was inserted: "*excited domestic insurrection among us, and has.*" This addition takes the place of the following paragraph.
21. Omitted as redundant.
22. In his Autobiography Jefferson says: "The clause reprobating the enslaving the inhabitants of Africa was struck out in complaisance to South Carolina and Georgia, who had never attempted to restrain the importation of slaves, and who, on the contrary, still wished to continue it. Our Northern brethren also, I believe, felt a little tender under these censures: for though their people had very few slaves themselves, yet they had been pretty considerable carriers of them to others."
23. "*Only*" was inserted by Franklin.
24. Omitted, and the adjective "*free*" inserted before "*people*." Greater brevity and force are thus secured.
25. In place of "*a*" was substituted "*an unwarrantable*"; and in place of "*these our states*," the pronoun "*us*."
26. Omitted.
27. After "*we*" insert "*have*."
28. In place of this phrase was inserted: "*and we have conjured them by.*"
29. "*Would inevitably*" was substituted, with decided gain in force.
30. What is bracketed was omitted; before "*acquiesce*" was inserted, "*We must therefore.*" In reference to this omission Jefferson says: "The pusillanimous idea that we had friends in England worth keeping terms with, still haunted the minds of many. For this reason, those passages which conveyed censures on the people of England were struck out, lest they should give them offence."

31. Omitted, and after "*separation*" was added: "*and hold them as we hold the rest of mankind, enemies in war, in peace friends.*"

32. Here was inserted, as a decided improvement, the following: "*colonies, solemnly publish and declare, that these united colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent states; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown, and that all political connection between them and the state of Great Britain is, and ought to be, totally dissolved.*"

33. Here was inserted, "*with a firm reliance on the protection of divine Providence.*"

## VI

## SELECTION FROM HAMILTON

## THE FEDERALIST

## NUMBER I.—INTRODUCTION

AFTER full experience of the insufficiency of the existing federal government,<sup>1</sup> you<sup>2</sup> are invited to deliberate upon a new Constitution for the United States of America. The subject speaks its own importance; comprehending in its consequences nothing less than the existence of the UNION, the safety and welfare of the parts of which it is composed, the fate of an empire, in many respects, the most interesting in the world.<sup>3</sup> It has been frequently remarked, that it seems to have been reserved to the people of this country to decide, by their conduct and example, the important question, whether societies of men are really capable or not, of establishing good government from reflection and choice, or whether they are forever destined to depend for their political constitutions, on accident and force. If there be<sup>4</sup> any truth in the remark, the crisis at which we are arrived may, with propriety, be regarded as the period when that decision is to be made; and a wrong election<sup>5</sup> of the part we shall act may, in this view, deserve to be considered as the general misfortune of mankind.

This idea, by adding the inducements of philanthropy to those of patriotism, will heighten the solicitude which all considerate and good men must feel for the event.<sup>6</sup> Happy will it be if our choice should be directed by a judicious estimate of our true interests, uninfluenced by considerations foreign to the public good. But this is more ardently to be wished for, than seriously to be expected. The plan offered to our deliberation affects too many particular interests, innovates upon<sup>7</sup> too many local institutions, not to involve in its discussion a variety of objects extraneous to its merits, and of views, passions and prejudices little favorable to the discovery of truth.<sup>8</sup>

Among the most formidable<sup>9</sup> of the obstacles<sup>9</sup> which the new Constitution will have to encounter, may readily be distinguished the

obvious interest of a certain class of men in every State to resist all changes which may hazard a diminution of the power, emolument, and consequence<sup>10</sup> of the offices they hold under the State establishments — and the perverted ambition of another class of men, who will either hope to aggrandize themselves by the confusions of their country, or will flatter themselves with fairer prospects of elevation from the subdivision of the empire into several partial confederacies, than from its union under one government.

It is not, however, my design to dwell upon observations of this nature. I am aware it would be disingenuous<sup>11</sup> to resolve indiscriminately the opposition of any set of men into interested or ambitious views, merely because their situations might subject them to suspicion. Candor will oblige us to admit, that even such men may be actuated by upright intentions; and it cannot be doubted, that much of the opposition, which has already shown itself, or that may hereafter make its appearance, will spring from sources blameless at least, if not respectable — the honest errors of minds led astray by preconceived jealousies and fears.<sup>12</sup> So numerous indeed and so powerful are the causes which serve to give a false bias to the judgment, that we, upon many occasions, see wise and good men on the wrong as well as on the right side of questions of the first magnitude to society. This circumstance, if duly attended to, would always furnish a lesson of moderation to those, who are engaged in any controversy, however well persuaded of being in the right. And a further reason for caution in this respect,<sup>13</sup> might be drawn from the reflection, that we are not always sure, that those who advocate the truth are actuated by purer principles than their antagonists.<sup>14</sup> Ambition, avarice, personal animosity, party opposition, and many other motives, not more laudable than these, are apt to operate as well upon those who support, as upon those who oppose, the right side of a question. Were there not even these inducements to moderation, nothing could be more ill-judged<sup>15</sup> than that intolerant spirit, which has, at all times, characterized political parties. For, in politics as in religion, it is equally absurd<sup>16</sup> to aim at making proselytes by fire and sword. Heresies in either can rarely be cured by persecution.

And yet, just as these sentiments must appear to candid<sup>17</sup> men, we have already sufficient indications that it will happen in this, as in all former cases of great national discussion. A torrent of angry and

malignant<sup>18</sup> passions will be let loose. To judge from the conduct of the opposite parties,<sup>19</sup> we shall be led to conclude, that they will mutually hope to evince the justness of their opinions, and to increase the number of their converts, by the loudness of their declamations, and by the bitterness of their invectives.<sup>20</sup> An enlightened zeal for the energy and efficiency<sup>21</sup> of government will be stigmatized as the offspring of a temper fond of power, and hostile to the principles of liberty. An over-scrupulous jealousy<sup>22</sup> of danger to the rights of the people, which is more commonly the fault of the head than of the heart, will be represented as mere pretence and artifice<sup>23</sup> — the stale bait for popularity at the expense of public good. It will be forgotten, on the one hand, that jealousy is the usual concomitant of violent love, and that the noble enthusiasm of liberty is too apt to be infected with a spirit of narrow and illiberal<sup>24</sup> distrust. On the other hand, it will be equally forgotten, that the rigor of government is essential to the security of liberty; that in the contemplation of a sound and well-informed judgment, their<sup>25</sup> interests can never be separated; and that a dangerous ambition more often lurks behind the specious mask of zeal for the rights of the people, than under the forbidding appearances of zeal for the firmness and efficiency of government. History will teach us, that the former has been found a much more certain road to the introduction of despotism than the latter, and that of those men who have overturned the liberties of republics, the greatest number have begun their career by paying an obsequious court to the people; commencing demagogues, and ending tyrants.

In the course of the preceding observations it has been my aim, fellow citizens, to put you upon your guard against all attempts, from whatever quarter, to influence your decision in a matter of the utmost moment to your welfare, by any impressions, other than those which may result from the evidence of truth. You will, no doubt, at the same time, have collected from the general scope of them that they proceed from a source not unfriendly to the new Constitution. Yes, my countrymen, I own to you, that, after having given it an attentive consideration, I am clearly of opinion, it is your interest to adopt it. I am convinced, that this is the safest course for your liberty, your dignity, and your happiness. I affect not reserves which I do not feel.<sup>26</sup> I will not amuse you with an appearance of deliberation, when I have decided. I frankly acknowledge to you my convictions, and I

will freely lay before you the reasons on which they are founded. The consciousness of good intentions disdains ambiguity. I shall not, however, multiply professions on this head. My motives must remain in the depository of my own breast; my arguments will be open to all and may be judged by all. They shall at least be offered in a spirit which will not disgrace the cause of truth.

I propose, in a series of papers, to discuss the following interesting particulars: *The utility of the Union to your political prosperity;*<sup>27</sup> *the insufficiency of the present confederation to preserve that Union;*<sup>28</sup> *the necessity of a government at least equally energetic with the one proposed, to the attainment of this object;*<sup>29</sup> *the conformity of the proposed Constitution to the true principles of republican government;*<sup>30</sup> *its analogy to your own State Constitution;* and lastly, *the additional security, which its adoption will afford to the preservation of that species of government, to liberty, and to property.*<sup>31</sup>

In the progress of this discussion, I shall endeavor to give a satisfactory answer to all the objections which shall have made their appearance, that may seem to have any claim to attention.

It may, perhaps, be thought superfluous to offer arguments to prove the utility of the *Union*, a point, no doubt, deeply engraved on the hearts of the great body of the people in every State, and one which, it may be imagined, has no adversaries. But the fact is, that we already hear it whispered in the private circles of those who oppose the new Constitution, that the thirteen States are of too great extent for any general system, and that we must, of necessity, resort to separate confederacies of distinct portions of the whole. This doctrine will, in all probability, be gradually propagated, till it has votaries enough to countenance its open avowal. For nothing can be more evident, to those who are able to take an enlarged view of the subject, than the alternative of an adoption of the Constitution or a dismemberment of the Union. It may, therefore, be essential to examine particularly the advantages of that Union, the certain evils, and the probable dangers, to which every State will be exposed from its dissolution. This shall accordingly be done.

PUBLIUS.

## NOTES TO HAMILTON

FOR a statement of the circumstances under which the "Federalist" was written, and an estimate of its literary character, consult the sketch of Hamilton.

The papers composing the "Federalist" were published in *The Independent Journal* and other New York papers in 1787 and 1788. As a rule, a new number appeared every three days. The first number was written by Hamilton in the cabin of a little vessel, as he was gliding down the Hudson. The essays were at first signed "A Citizen"; but the writers soon afterwards, following the fashion of the time, adopted the classical name of "Publius."

Sickness prevented Jay from doing his full share of the work. He wrote only five numbers. The burden fell upon Hamilton and Madison, the former writing fifty-one and the latter twenty-nine. The authorship of a few of the papers has been disputed. As a general thing, each writer sent his article to the printer without submitting it to his colleagues.

The comparative literary excellence of the contributions of Hamilton and Madison has been made the subject of discussion. The literary merits of the two writers are so nearly equal that it is difficult to decide between them. Hamilton has, perhaps, greater force, and Madison greater elegance. To criticize Madison's style as "stiff, harsh, and obscure" is grossly unjust.

The "Federalist" has met with the highest commendations abroad as well as at home. Guizot said, "that in the application of the elementary principles of government to practical administration, it was the greatest work known to him." It is described in an early number of the *Edinburgh Review* as "a work little known in Europe, but which exhibits a profundity of research and an acuteness of understanding which would have done honor to the most illustrious statesmen of modern times." In his "Commentaries on American Law," Chancellor Kent says: "I know not of any work on the principles of free government that is to be compared in instruction and in intrinsic value to this small and unpretending volume of the 'Federalist'; not even if we resort to Aristotle, Cicero, Macchiavelli, Montesquieu, Milton, Locke, or Burke." Jefferson pronounced it "the best commentary on the principles of government which was ever written."

## NUMBER I

1. This refers to the government under the Articles of Confederation of 1777. Consult the general survey of the Revolutionary period.

2. At first the essays of the "Federalist" were addressed to the people of New York, but afterwards to the people of the United States.
3. Corresponding to the importance of the subject, the style rises to a high degree of dignity.
4. Note the significance of the subjunctive. What would be the difference in meaning if the indicative were used?
5. Give a synonym for "election." Pass over no word the exact meaning of which is not understood.
6. What is the meaning of "event"? Discriminate between *event*, *occurrence*, and *incident*, and note the precision of Hamilton's diction.
7. Explain "*innovates upon*."
8. Note the precision secured in this sentence, and throughout the "Federalist," by the use of the Latin element of our language.
9. Consult the etymology of these words, and point out their force. Why is "obstacles" better here than *impediments*, *difficulties*, or *hindrances*?
10. What is the difference between "emolument" and "consequence"? Note Hamilton's comprehensive and discriminating thought.
11. The exact meaning of "*disingenuous*"?
12. May "the honest errors of minds led astray by preconceived jealousies and fears" be "*blameless*" without being "*respectable*"? What is the meaning of "respectable" in this case?
13. In what "*respect*"?
14. Why is "*antagonists*" here better than *opponents*? Discriminate between *adversary*, *enemy*, *opponent*, and *antagonist*.
15. Synonym for "*ill-judged*?"
16. Why is "*absurd*" better than *irrational* or *foolish* in this case? What is the force of *preposterous*?
17. Why is "*candid*" exactly the right word?
18. What is the difference between "*angry*" and "*malignant*" passions?
19. Federalists and Anti-Federalists.
20. Note the manner in which the parallelism of structure has been preserved in this sentence. It is evident that Hamilton had been a careful student of rhetoric.
21. What is the difference between "*energy*" and "*efficiency*"?
22. Synonym of "*jealousy*" in this case?
23. Discriminate between "*pretence*" and "*artifice*." Note Hamilton's clear thought and careful diction.
24. What is the meaning of "*illiberal*" here?
25. To what does "*their*" refer?
26. Paraphrase this sentence so as to bring out the meaning more clearly.
27. Discussed in numbers 2-14.

28. Numbers 15-22.

29. Numbers 23-35.

30. Numbers 36-84.

31. The last two subjects were treated of in the last number in a very brief way, because they had been considered fully, though incidentally, in the progress of the work.

## VII

## SELECTIONS FROM IRVING

## RIP VAN WINKLE

## A POSTHUMOUS WRITING OF DIEDRICH KNICKERBOCKER

By Woden, God of Saxons,  
From whence comes Wensday, that is Wodensday,  
Truth is a thing that ever I will keep  
Unto thylke day in which I creep into  
My sepulchre.

CARTWRIGHT.<sup>1</sup>

WHOEVER has made a voyage up the Hudson, must remember the Kaatskill<sup>2</sup> mountains. They are a dismembered branch of the great Appalachian family, and are seen away to the west of the river, swelling up to a noble height, and lording it over the surrounding country. Every change of season, every change of weather, indeed every hour of the day, produces some change in the magical hues and shapes of these mountains; and they are regarded by all the good wives, far and near, as perfect barometers. When the weather is fair and settled, they are clothed in blue and purple, and print their bold outlines on the clear evening sky; but sometimes, when the rest of the landscape is cloudless, they will gather a hood of gray vapors about their summits, which, in the last rays of the setting sun, will glow and light up like a crown of glory.

At the foot of these fairy mountains, the voyager may have descried the light smoke curling up from a village, whose shingle roofs gleam among the trees, just where the blue tints of the upland melt away into the fresh green of the nearer landscape. It is a little village of great antiquity, having been founded by some of the Dutch colonists, in the early times of the province, just about the beginning of the government of the good Peter Stuyvesant<sup>3</sup> (may he rest in peace!); and there were

some of the houses of the original settlers standing within a few years, built of small yellow bricks brought from Holland, having latticed windows and gable fronts, surmounted with weathercocks.

In that same village, and in one of these very houses (which, to tell the precise truth, was sadly time-worn and weather-beaten), there lived many years since, while the country was yet a province of Great Britain, a simple, good-natured fellow, of the name of Rip Van Winkle. He was a descendant of the Van Winkles<sup>4</sup> who figured so gallantly in the chivalrous days of Peter Stuyvesant, and accompanied him to the siege of Fort Christina. He inherited, however, but little of the martial character of his ancestors. I have observed that he was a simple, good-natured man; he was moreover a kind neighbor, and an obedient, hen-pecked husband. Indeed, to the latter circumstance might be owing that meekness of spirit which gained him such universal popularity; for those men are most apt to be obsequious and conciliating abroad, who are under the discipline of shrews at home. Their tempers, doubtless, are rendered pliant and malleable in the fiery furnace of domestic tribulation, and a curtain lecture is worth all the sermons in the world for teaching the virtues of patience and long-suffering. A termagant wife may, therefore, in some respects, be considered a tolerable blessing; and if so, Rip Van Winkle was thrice blessed.

Certain it is, that he was a great favorite among all the good wives of the village, who, as usual with the amiable sex, took his part in all family squabbles, and never failed, whenever they talked those matters over in their evening gossipings, to lay all the blame on Dame Van Winkle. The children of the village, too, would shout with joy whenever he approached. He assisted at their sports, made their playthings, taught them to fly kites and shoot marbles, and told them long stories of ghosts, witches, and Indians. Whenever he went dodging about the village, he was surrounded by a troop of them hanging on his skirts, clambering on his back, and playing a thousand tricks on him with impunity; and not a dog would bark at him throughout the neighborhood.

The great error in Rip's composition was an insuperable aversion to all kinds of profitable labor. It could not be from the want of assiduity or perseverance; for he would sit on a wet rock, with a rod as long and heavy as a Tartar's lance, and fish all day without a murmur, even though he should not be encouraged by a single nibble. He would

carry a fowling-piece on his shoulder for hours together, trudging through woods and swamps, and up hill and down dale, to shoot a few squirrels or wild pigeons. He would never refuse to assist a neighbor, even in the roughest toil, and was a foremost man at all country frolics for husking Indian corn or building stone fences. The women of the village, too, used to employ him to run their errands, and to do such little odd jobs as their less obliging husbands would not do for them; — in a word, Rip was ready to attend to anybody's business but his own; but as to doing family duty, and keeping his farm in order, he found it impossible.

In fact, he declared it was of no use to work on his farm; it was the most pestilent little piece of ground in the whole country; everything about it went wrong, and would go wrong in spite of him. His fences were continually falling to pieces; his cow would either go astray, or get among the cabbages; weeds were sure to grow quicker in his fields than anywhere else; the rain always made a point of setting in just as he had some out-door work to do; so that, though his patriarchal estate had dwindled away under his management, acre by acre, until there was little more left than a mere patch of Indian corn and potatoes, yet it was the worst-conditioned farm in the neighborhood.

His children, too, were as ragged and wild as if they belonged to nobody. His son Rip, an urchin begotten in his own likeness, promised to inherit the habits, with the old clothes of his father. He was generally seen trooping like a colt at his mother's heels, equipped in a pair of his father's cast-off galligaskins, which he had much ado to hold up with one hand, as a fine lady does her train in bad weather.

Rip Van Winkle, however, was one of those happy mortals, of foolish, well-oiled dispositions, who take the world easy, eat white bread or brown, whichever can be got with least thought or trouble, and would rather starve on a penny than work for a pound. If left to himself, he would have whistled life away in perfect contentment; but his wife kept continually dinning in his ears about his idleness, his carelessness, and the ruin he was bringing on his family.

Morning, noon, and night, her tongue was incessantly going, and everything he said or did was sure to produce a torrent of household eloquence. Rip had but one way of replying to all lectures of the kind, and that, by frequent use, had grown into a habit. He shrugged his shoulders, shook his head, cast up his eyes, but said nothing. This,

however, always provoked a fresh volley from his wife, so that he was fain to draw off his forces, and take to the outside of the house — the only side which, in truth, belongs to a henpecked husband.

Rip's sole domestic adherent was his dog Wolf, who was as much henpecked as his master; for Dame Van Winkle regarded them as companions in idleness, and even looked upon Wolf with an evil eye as the cause of his master's going so often astray. True it is, in all points of spirit befitting an honorable dog, he was as courageous an animal as ever scoured the woods — but what courage can withstand the ever-during and all-besetting terrors of a woman's tongue? The moment Wolf entered the house, his crest fell, his tail drooped to the ground, or curled between his legs, he sneaked about with a gallows air, casting many a sidelong glance at Dame Van Winkle, and at the least flourish of a broomstick or ladle, he would fly to the door with yelping precipitation.

Times grew worse and worse with Rip Van Winkle, as years of matrimony rolled on: a tart temper never mellows with age, and a sharp tongue is the only edge tool that grows keener with constant use. For a long while he used to console himself, when driven from home, by frequenting a kind of perpetual club of the sages, philosophers, and other idle personages of the village, which held its sessions on a bench before a small inn, designated by a rubicon portrait of his majesty George the Third. Here they used to sit in the shade, of a long lazy summer's day, talking listlessly over village gossip, or telling endless sleepy stories about nothing. But it would have been worthy any statesman's money to have heard the profound discussions which sometimes took place, when by chance an old newspaper fell into their hands, from some passing traveller. How solemnly they would listen to the contents, as drawled out by Derrick Van Bummel, the schoolmaster, a dapper, learned little man, who was not to be daunted by the most gigantic word in the dictionary; and how sagely they would deliberate upon public events some months after they had taken place.

The opinions of this junto were completely controlled by Nicholas Vedder, a patriarch of the village, and landlord of the inn, at the door of which he took his seat from morning till night, just moving sufficiently to avoid the sun, and keep in the shade of a large tree; so that the neighbors could tell the hour by his movements as accurately as by a sun-dial. It is true, he was rarely heard to speak, but smoked

his pipe incessantly. His adherents, however (for every great man has his adherents), perfectly understood him, and knew how to gather his opinions. When anything that was read or related displeased him, he was observed to smoke his pipe vehemently, and to send forth short, frequent, and angry puffs; but when pleased, he would inhale the smoke slowly and tranquilly, and emit it in light and placid clouds, and sometimes taking the pipe from his mouth, and letting the fragrant vapor curl about his nose, would gravely nod his head in token of perfect approbation.

From even this stronghold the unlucky Rip was at length routed by his termagant wife, who would suddenly break in upon the tranquillity of the assemblage, and call the members all to naught; nor was that august personage, Nicholas Vedder himself, sacred from the daring tongue of this terrible virago, who charged him outright with encouraging her husband in habits of idleness.

Poor Rip was at last reduced almost to despair, and his only alternative to escape from the labor of the farm and the clamor of his wife, was to take gun in hand, and stroll away into the woods. Here he would sometimes seat himself at the foot of a tree, and share the contents of his wallet with Wolf, with whom he sympathized as a fellow-sufferer in persecution. "Poor Wolf," he would say, "thy mistress leads thee a dog's life of it; but never mind, my lad, whilst I live thou shalt never want a friend to stand by thee!" Wolf would wag his tail, look wistfully in his master's face, and if dogs can feel pity, I verily believe he reciprocated the sentiment with all his heart.

In a long ramble of the kind, on a fine autumnal day, Rip had unconsciously scrambled to one of the highest parts of the Kaatskill mountains. He was after his favorite sport of squirrel-shooting, and the still solitudes had echoed and re-echoed with the reports of his gun. Panting and fatigued, he threw himself, late in the afternoon, on a green knoll covered with mountain herbage, that crowned the brow of a precipice. From an opening between the trees, he could overlook all the lower country for many a mile of rich woodland. He saw at a distance the lordly Hudson, far, far below him, moving on its silent but majestic course, with the reflection of a purple cloud, or the sail of a lagging bark, here and there sleeping on its glassy bosom, and at last losing itself in the blue highlands.

On the other side he looked down into a deep mountain glen, wild,

lonely, and shagged, the bottom filled with fragments from the impending cliffs, and scarcely lighted by the reflected rays of the setting sun. For some time Rip lay musing on this scene; evening was gradually advancing; the mountains began to throw their long blue shadows over the valleys; he saw that it would be dark long before he could reach the village; and he heaved a heavy sigh when he thought of encountering the terrors of Dame Van Winkle.

As he was about to descend he heard a voice from a distance hallooing, "Rip Van Winkle! Rip Van Winkle!" He looked around, but could see nothing but a crow winging its solitary flight across the mountain. He thought his fancy must have deceived him, and turned again to descend, when he heard the same cry ring through the still evening air, "Rip Van Winkle! Rip Van Winkle!" — at the same time Wolf bristled up his back, and giving a low growl, skulked to his master's side, looking fearfully down into the glen. Rip now felt a vague apprehension stealing over him: he looked anxiously in the same direction, and perceived a strange figure slowly toiling up the rocks, and bending under the weight of something he carried on his back. He was surprised to see any human being in this lonely and unfrequented place, but supposing it to be some one of the neighborhood in need of his assistance, he hastened down to yield it.

On nearer approach, he was still more surprised at the singularity of the stranger's appearance. He was a short square-built old fellow, with thick bushy hair, and a grizzled beard. His dress was of the antique Dutch fashion — a cloth jerkin strapped round the waist — several pair of breeches, the outer one of ample volume, decorated with rows of buttons down the sides, and bunches at the knees. He bore on his shoulders a stout keg, that seemed full of liquor, and made signs for Rip to approach and assist him with the load. Though rather shy and distrustful of this new acquaintance, Rip complied with his usual alacrity, and mutually relieving each other, they clambered up a narrow gully, apparently the dry bed of a mountain torrent. As they ascended, Rip every now and then heard long rolling peals, like distant thunder, that seemed to issue out of a deep ravine or rather cleft between lofty rocks, toward which their rugged path conducted. He paused for an instant, but supposing it to be the muttering of one of those transient thunder-showers which often take place in mountain heights, he proceeded. Passing through the ravine, they came to a

hollow, like a small amphitheatre, surrounded by perpendicular precipices, over the brinks of which impending trees shot their branches, so that you only caught glimpses of the azure sky, and the bright evening cloud. During the whole time, Rip and his companion had labored on in silence; for though the former marvelled greatly what could be the object of carrying a keg of liquor up this wild mountain, yet there was something strange and incomprehensible about the unknown, that inspired awe, and checked familiarity.

On entering the amphitheatre, new objects of wonder presented themselves. On a level spot in the centre was a company of odd-looking personages playing at nine-pins. They were dressed in a quaint outlandish fashion: some wore short doublets, others jerkins, with long knives in their belts, and most of them had enormous breeches, of similar style with that of the guide's. Their visages, too, were peculiar; one had a large head, broad face, and small piggish eyes; the face of another seemed to consist entirely of nose, and was surmounted by a white sugar-loaf hat, set off with a little red cock's tail. They all had beards, of various shapes and colors. There was one who seemed to be the commander. He was a stout old gentleman, with a weather-beaten countenance; he wore a laced doublet, broad belt and hanger, high-crowned hat and feather, red stockings, and high-heeled shoes, with roses in them. The whole group reminded Rip of the figures in an old Flemish painting, in the parlor of Dominie Van Schaick, the village parson, and which had been brought over from Holland at the time of the settlement.

What seemed particularly odd to Rip, was, that though these folks were evidently amusing themselves, yet they maintained the gravest faces, the most mysterious silence, and were, withal, the most melancholy party of pleasure he had ever witnessed. Nothing interrupted the stillness of the scene but the noise of the balls, which, whenever they were rolled, echoed along the mountains like rumbling peals of thunder.

As Rip and his companion approached them, they suddenly desisted from their play, and stared at him with such a fixed statue-like gaze, and such strange, uncouth, lack-lustre countenances, that his heart turned within him, and his knees smote together. His companion now emptied the contents of the keg into large flagons, and made signs to wait upon the company. He obeyed with fear and trem-

bling; they quaffed the liquor in profound silence, and then returned to their game.

By degrees, Rip's awe and apprehension subsided. He even ventured, when no eye was fixed upon him, to taste the beverage, which he found had much of the flavor of excellent Hollands. He was naturally a thirsty soul, and was soon tempted to repeat the draught. One taste provoked another, and he reiterated his visits to the flagon so often that at length his senses were overpowered, his eyes swam in his head, his head gradually declined, and he fell into a deep sleep.

On waking, he found himself on the green knoll from whence he had first seen the old man of the glen. He rubbed his eyes — it was a bright sunny morning. The birds were hopping and twittering among the bushes, and the eagle was wheeling aloft, and breasting the pure mountain breeze. "Surely," thought Rip, "I have not slept here all night." He recalled the occurrences before he fell asleep. The strange man with the keg of liquor — the mountain ravine — the wild retreat among the rocks — the wo-begone party at nine-pins — the flagon — "Oh! that wicked flagon!" thought Rip — "what excuse shall I make to Dame Van Winkle?"

He looked around for his gun; but in place of the clean well-oiled fowling-piece, he found an old firelock lying by him, the barrel encrusted with rust, the lock falling off, and the stock worm-eaten. He now suspected that the grave roisterers of the mountain had put a trick upon him, and having dosed him with liquor, had robbed him of his gun. Wolf, too, had disappeared, but he might have strayed away after a squirrel or partridge. He whistled after him, and shouted his name, but all in vain; the echoes repeated his whistle and shout, but no dog was to be seen.

He determined to revisit the scene of the last evening's gambol, and if he met with any of the party, to demand his dog and gun. As he rose to walk, he found himself stiff in the joints, and wanting in his usual activity. "These mountain beds do not agree with me," thought Rip, "and if this frolic should lay me up with a fit of the rheumatism, I shall have a blessed time with Dame Van Winkle." With some difficulty he got down into the glen; he found the gully up which he and his companion had ascended the preceding evening; but to his astonishment a mountain stream was now foaming down it, leaping from rock to rock, and filling the glen with babbling murmurs. He, how-

ever, made shift to scramble up its sides, working his toilsome way through thickets of birch, sassafras, and witch-hazel, and sometimes tripped up or entangled by the wild grape vines that twisted their coils and tendrils from tree to tree, and spread a kind of network in his path.

At length he reached to where the ravine had opened through the cliffs to the amphitheatre ; but no traces of such opening remained. The rocks presented a high impenetrable wall, over which the torrent came tumbling in a sheet of feathery foam, and fell into a broad deep basin, black from the shadows of the surrounding forest. Here, then, poor Rip was brought to a stand. He again called and whistled after his dog ; he was only answered by the cawing of a flock of idle crows, sporting high in air about a dry tree that overhung a sunny precipice ; and who, secure in their elevation, seemed to look down and scoff at the poor man's perplexities. What was to be done ? The morning was passing away, and Rip felt famished for want of his breakfast. He grieved to give up his dog and gun ; he dreaded to meet his wife ; but it would not do to starve among the mountains. He shook his head, shouldered the rusty firelock, and with a heart full of trouble and anxiety, turned his steps homeward.

As he approached the village, he met a number of people, but none whom he knew, which somewhat surprised him, for he had thought himself acquainted with every one in the country round. Their dress, too, was of a different fashion from that to which he was accustomed. They all stared at him with equal marks of surprise, and whenever they cast eyes upon him, invariably stroked their chins. The constant recurrence of this gesture induced Rip, involuntarily, to do the same, when, to his astonishment, he found his beard had grown a foot long !

He had now entered the skirts of the village. A troop of strange children ran at his heels, hooting after him, and pointing at his gray beard. The dogs, too, not one of which he recognized for an old acquaintance, barked at him as he passed. The very village was altered ; it was larger and more populous. There were rows of houses which he had never seen before, and those which had been his familiar haunts had disappeared. Strange names were over the doors — strange faces at the windows — everything was strange. His mind now misgave him ; he began to doubt whether both he and the world around him were not bewitched. Surely this was his native village, which he had left but a day before. There stood the Kaatskill mountains

— there ran the silver Hudson at a distance — there was every hill and dale precisely as it had always been — Rip was sorely perplexed. — “That flagon last night,” thought he, “has addled my poor head sadly!”

It was with some difficulty that he found the way to his own house, which he approached with silent awe, expecting every moment to hear the shrill voice of Dame Van Winkle. He found the house gone to decay — the roof fallen in, the windows shattered, and the doors off the hinges. A half-starved dog, that looked like Wolf, was skulking about it. Rip called him by name, but the cur snarled, showed his teeth, and passed on. This was an unkind cut indeed. — “My very dog,” sighed poor Rip, “has forgotten me!”

He entered the house, which, to tell the truth, Dame Van Winkle had always kept in neat order. It was empty, forlorn, and apparently abandoned. This desolation overcame all his connubial fears — he called loudly for his wife and children — the lonely chambers rang for a moment with his voice, and then all again was silence.

He now hurried forth, and hastened to his old resort, the village inn — but it too was gone. A large rickety wooden building stood in its place, with great gaping windows, some of them broken, and mended with old hats and petticoats, and over the door was painted, “The Union Hotel, by Jonathan Doolittle.” Instead of the great tree that used to shelter the quiet little Dutch inn of yore, there now was reared a tall naked pole, with something on the top that looked like a red nightcap, and from it was fluttering a flag, on which was a singular assemblage of stars and stripes — all this was strange and incomprehensible. He recognized on the sign, however, the ruby face of King George, under which he had smoked so many a peaceful pipe, but even this was singularly metamorphosed. The red coat was changed for one of blue and buff, a sword was held in the hand instead of a sceptre, the head was decorated with a cocked hat, and underneath was painted in large characters, GENERAL WASHINGTON.

There was, as usual, a crowd of folk about the door, but none that Rip recollects. The very character of the people seemed changed. There was a busy, bustling, disputatious tone about it, instead of the accustomed phlegm and drowsy tranquillity. He looked in vain for the sage Nicholas Vedder, with his broad face, double chin, and fair long pipe, uttering clouds of tobacco smoke, instead of idle speeches ; or Van Bum-

mel, the schoolmaster, doling forth the contents of an ancient newspaper. In place of these, a lean bilious-looking fellow, with his pockets full of handbills, was haranguing vehemently about rights of citizens — election — members of Congress — liberty — Bunker's hill — heroes of seventy-six — and other words that were a perfect Babylonish jargon to the bewildered Van Winkle.

The appearance of Rip, with his long grizzled beard, his rusty fowling-piece, his uncouth dress, and the army of women and children that had gathered at his heels, soon attracted the attention of the tavern politicians. They crowded round him, eying him from head to foot, with great curiosity. The orator hustled up to him, and drawing him partly aside, inquired, "on which side he voted?" Rip stared in vacant stupidity. Another short but busy little fellow pulled him by the arm, and rising on tiptoe, inquired in his ear, "whether he was Federal or Democrat." Rip was equally at a loss to comprehend the question; when a knowing, self-important old gentleman, in a sharp cocked hat, made his way through the crowd, putting them to the right and left with his elbows as he passed, and planting himself before Van Winkle, with one arm a-kimbo, the other resting on his cane, his keen eyes and sharp hat penetrating, as it were, into his very soul, demanded in an austere tone, "what brought him to the election with a gun on his shoulder, and a mob at his heels, and whether he meant to breed a riot in the village?"

"Alas! gentlemen," cried Rip, somewhat dismayed, "I am a poor, quiet man, a native of the place, and a loyal subject of the King, God bless him!"

Here a general shout burst from the bystanders — "A tory! a tory! a spy! a refugee! hustle him! away with him!"

It was with great difficulty that the self-important man in the cocked hat restored order; and having assumed a tenfold austerity of brow, demanded again of the unknown culprit, what he came there for, and whom he was seeking. The poor man humbly assured him that he meant no harm, but merely came there in search of some of his neighbors, who used to keep about the tavern.

"Well — who are they? — name them."

Rip bethought himself a moment, and inquired, "Where's Nicholas Vedder?"

There was a silence for a little while, when an old man replied, in a thin, piping voice, "Nicholas Vedder? why, he is dead and gone

these eighteen years! There was a wooden tombstone in the church-yard that used to tell all about him, but that's rotten and gone too."

"Where's Brom Dutcher?"

"Oh, he went off to the army in the beginning of the war; some say he was killed at the storming of Stony Point<sup>5</sup> — others say he was drowned in a squall, at the foot of Antony's Nose.<sup>6</sup> I don't know — he never came back again."

"Where's Van Bummel, the schoolmaster?"

"He went off to the wars, too; was a great militia general, and is now in Congress."

Rip's heart died away, at hearing of these sad changes in his home and friends, and finding himself thus alone in the world. Every answer puzzled him, too, by treating of such enormous lapses of time, and of matters which he could not understand: war — Congress — Stony Point! — he had no courage to ask after any more friends, but cried out in despair, "Does nobody here know Rip Van Winkle?"

"Oh, Rip Van Winkle!" exclaimed two or three. "Oh, to be sure! that's Rip Van Winkle yonder, leaning against the tree."

Rip looked, and beheld a precise counterpart of himself as he went up the mountain; apparently as lazy and certainly as ragged. The poor fellow was now completely confounded. He doubted his own identity, and whether he was himself or another man. In the midst of his bewilderment, the man in the cocked hat demanded who he was, and what was his name?

"God knows," exclaimed he, at his wit's end; "I'm not myself — I'm somebody else — that's me yonder — no — that's somebody else, got into my shoes — I was myself last night, but I fell asleep on the mountain, and they've changed my gun, and every thing's changed, and I'm changed, and I can't tell what's my name, or who I am!"

The bystanders began now to look at each other, nod, wink significantly, and tap their fingers against their foreheads. There was a whisper, also, about securing the gun, and keeping the old fellow from doing mischief; at the very suggestion of which, the self-important man with the cocked hat retired with some precipitation. At this critical moment a fresh comely woman passed through the throng to get a peep at the gray-bearded man. She had a chubby child in her arms, which, frightened at his looks, began to cry. "Hush, Rip," cried she, "hush, you little fool; the old man won't hurt you." The name of

the child, the air of the mother, the tone of her voice, all awakened a train of recollections in his mind.

"What is your name, my good woman?" asked he.

"Judith Gardenier."

"And your father's name?"

"Ah, poor man, his name was Rip Van Winkle; it's twenty years since he went away from home with his gun, and never has been heard of since — his dog came home without him; but whether he shot himself, or was carried away by the Indians, nobody can tell. I was then but a little girl."

Rip had but one question more to ask; but he put it with a faltering voice: —

"Where's your mother?"

Oh, she too had died but a short time since: she broke a blood-vessel in a fit of passion at a New England peddler.

There was a drop of comfort, at least, in this intelligence. The honest man could contain himself no longer. He caught his daughter and her child in his arms. "I am your father!" cried he — "Young Rip Van Winkle once — old Rip Van Winkle now! — Does nobody know poor Rip Van Winkle!"

All stood amazed, until an old woman, tottering out from among the crowd, put her hand to her brow, and peering under it in his face for a moment, exclaimed, "Sure enough! it is Rip Van Winkle — it is himself. Welcome home again, old neighbor — Why, where have you been these twenty long years?"

Rip's story was soon told, for the whole twenty years had been to him but as one night. The neighbors stared when they heard it; some were seen to wink at each other, and put their tongues in their cheeks; and the self-important man in the cocked hat, who, when the alarm was over, had returned to the field, screwed down the corners of his mouth, and shook his head — upon which there was a general shaking of the head throughout the assemblage.

It was determined, however, to take the opinion of old Peter Vanderdonk, who was seen slowly advancing up the road. He was a descendant of the historian of that name,<sup>7</sup> who wrote one of the earliest accounts of the province. Peter was the most ancient inhabitant of the village, and well versed in all the wonderful events and traditions of the neighborhood. He recollected Rip at once, and corroborated

his story in the most satisfactory manner. He assured the company that it was a fact, handed down from his ancestor the historian, that the Kaatskill mountains had always been haunted by strange beings. That it was affirmed that the Great Hendrick Hudson, the first discoverer of the river and country, kept a kind of vigil there every twenty years, with his crew of the Half-moon, being permitted in this way to revisit the scenes of his enterprise, and keep a guardian eye upon the river and the great city called by his name. That his father had once seen them in their old Dutch dresses playing at nine-pins in a hollow of the mountain; and that he himself had heard, one summer afternoon, the sound of their balls, like distant peals of thunder.

To make a long story short, the company broke up, and returned to the more important concerns of the election. Rip's daughter took him home to live with her; she had a snug, well-furnished house, and a stout cheery farmer for a husband, whom Rip recollects for one of the urchins that used to climb upon his back. As to Rip's son and heir, who was the ditto of himself, seen leaning against the tree, he was employed to work on the farm; but evinced a hereditary disposition to attend to anything else but his business.

Rip now resumed his old walks and habits; he soon found many of his former cronies, though all rather the worse for the wear and tear of time; and preferred making friends among the rising generation, with whom he soon grew into great favor.

Having nothing to do at home, and being arrived at that happy age when a man can do nothing with impunity, he took his place once more on the bench, at the inn door, and was reverenced as one of the patriarchs of the village, and a chronicle of the old times "before the war." It was some time before he could get into the regular track of gossip, or could be made to comprehend the strange events that had taken place during his torpor. How that there had been a revolutionary war — that the country had thrown off the yoke of old England — and that, instead of being a subject of his majesty George the Third, he was now a free citizen of the United States. Rip, in fact, was no politician; the changes of states and empires made but little impression on him; but there was one species of despotism under which he had long groaned, and that was — petticoat government. Happily, that was at an end; he had got his neck out of the yoke of matrimony, and could go in and out whenever he pleased, without dreading the tyranny

of Dame Van Winkle. Whenever her name was mentioned, however, he shook his head, shrugged his shoulders, and cast up his eyes; which might pass either for an expression of resignation to his fate, or joy at his deliverance.

He used to tell his story to every stranger that arrived at Mr. Doolittle's hotel. He was observed, at first, to vary on some points every time he told it, which was doubtless owing to his having so recently awaked. It at last settled down precisely to the tale I have related, and not a man, woman, or child in the neighborhood but knew it by heart. Some always pretended to doubt the reality of it, and insisted that Rip had been out of his head, and that this was one point on which he always remained flighty. The old Dutch inhabitants, however, almost universally gave it full credit. Even to this day, they never hear a thunder-storm of a summer afternoon about the Kaatskill, but they say Hendrick Hudson and his crew are at their game of nine-pins; and it is a common wish of all henpecked husbands in the neighborhood, when life hangs heavy on their hands, that they might have a quiet draught out of Rip Van Winkle's flagon.<sup>8</sup>

## THE BROKEN HEART

I never heard  
Of any true affection, but 'twas nipt  
With care, that, like the caterpillar, eats  
The leaves of the spring's sweetest book, the rose.

MIDDLETON.<sup>1</sup>

IT is a common practice with those who have outlived the susceptibility of early feeling, or have been brought up in the gay heartlessness of dissipated life, to laugh at all love stories, and to treat the tales of romantic passion as mere fictions of novelists and poets. My observations on human nature have induced me to think otherwise.<sup>2</sup> They have convinced me that however the surface of the character may be chilled and frozen by the cares of the world, or cultivated into mere smiles by the arts of society, still there are dormant fires lurking in the depths of the coldest bosom, which, when once enkindled, become impetuous, and are sometimes desolating in their effects. Indeed, I am a true believer in the blind deity,<sup>3</sup> and go to the full extent of his doctrines. Shall I confess it? — I believe in broken hearts, and the possibility of dying of disappointed love! I do not, however, consider it a malady often fatal to my own sex; but I firmly believe that it withers down many a lovely woman into an early grave.

Man is the creature of interest and ambition. His nature leads him forth into the struggle and bustle of the world. Love is but the embellishment of his early life, or a song piped in the intervals of the acts. He seeks for fame, for fortune, for space in the world's thought, and dominion over his fellow-men. But a woman's whole life is a history of the affections. The heart is her world; it is there her ambition strives for empire — it is there her avarice seeks for hidden treasures. She sends forth her sympathies on adventure; she embarks her whole soul in the traffic of affection; and if shipwrecked, her case is hopeless — for it is a bankruptcy of the heart.

To a man, the disappointment of love may occasion some bitter pangs: it wounds some feelings of tenderness — it blasts some pros-

psects of felicity ; but he is an active being ; he may dissipate his thoughts in the whirl of varied occupation, or may plunge into the tide of pleasure ; or, if the scene of disappointment be too full of painful associations, he can shift his abode at will, and taking, as it were, the wings of the morning, can “fly to the uttermost parts of the earth, and be at rest.”<sup>4</sup>

But woman’s is comparatively a fixed, a secluded, and a meditative life. She is more the companion of her own thoughts and feelings ; and if they are turned to ministers of sorrow, where shall she look for consolation ? Her lot is to be wooed and won ; and if unhappy in her love, her heart is like some fortress that had been captured, and sacked, and abandoned, and left desolate.<sup>5</sup>

How many bright eyes grow dim — how many soft cheeks grow pale — how many lovely forms fade away into the tomb, and none can tell the cause that blighted their loveliness ! As the dove will clasp its wings to its side, and cover and conceal the arrow that is preying on its vitals — so is it the nature of woman, to hide from the world the pangs of wounded affection. The love of a delicate female is always shy and silent. Even when fortunate, she scarcely breathes it to herself ; but when otherwise, she buries it in the recesses of her bosom, and there lets it cower and brood among the ruins of her peace. With her, the desire of her heart has failed — the great charm of existence is at an end. She neglects all the cheerful exercises which gladden the spirit, quicken the pulse, and send the tide of life in healthful currents through the veins. Her rest is broken — the sweet refreshment of sleep is poisoned by melancholy dreams — “dry sorrow drinks her blood,” until her enfeebled frame sinks under the slightest external injury. Look for her, after a little while, and you find friendship weeping over her untimely grave, and wondering that one, who but lately glowed with all the radiance of health and beauty, should so speedily be brought down to “darkness and the worm.” You will be told of some wintry chill, some casual indisposition, that laid her low — but no one knows the mental malady that previously sapped her strength, and made her so easy a prey to the spoiler.

She is like some tender tree, the pride and beauty of the grove ; graceful in its form, bright in its foliage, but with the worm preying at its heart. We find it suddenly withering, when it should be most fresh and luxuriant. We see it drooping its branches to the earth,

and shedding leaf by leaf ; until, wasted and perished away, it falls even in the stillness of the forest ; and as we muse over the beautiful ruin, we strive in vain to recollect the blast or thunderbolt that could have smitten it with decay.

I have seen many instances of women running to waste and self-neglect, and disappearing gradually from the earth, almost as if they had been exhaled to heaven ; and have repeatedly fancied that I could trace their deaths through the various declensions of consumption, cold, debility, languor, melancholy, until I reached the first symptom of disappointed love. But an instance of the kind was lately told to me ; the circumstances are well known in the country where they happened, and I shall but give them in the manner in which they were related.

Every one must recollect the tragical story of young E——, the Irish patriot ;<sup>6</sup> it was too touching to be soon forgotten. During the troubles in Ireland he was tried, condemned, and executed, on a charge of treason. His fate made a deep impression on public sympathy. He was so young — so intelligent — so generous — so brave — so everything that we are apt to like in a young man. His conduct under trial, too, was so lofty and intrepid. The noble indignation with which he repelled the charge of treason against his country — the eloquent vindication of his name — and his pathetic appeal to posterity, in the hopeless hour of condemnation — all these entered deeply into every generous bosom, and even his enemies lamented the stern policy that dictated his execution.

But there was one heart, whose anguish it would be impossible to describe. In happier days and fairer fortunes he had won the affections of a beautiful and interesting girl, the daughter of a late celebrated Irish barrister. She loved him with the disinterested fervor of a woman's first and early love. When every worldly maxim arrayed itself against him ; when blasted in fortune, and disgrace and danger darkened around his name, she loved him the more ardently for his very sufferings. If, then, his fate could awaken the sympathy even of his foes, what must have been the agony of her, whose whole soul was occupied by his image ? Let those tell who have had the portals of the tomb suddenly closed between them and the being they most loved on earth — who have sat at its threshold, as one shut out in a cold and lonely world, from whence all that was most lovely and loving had departed.

But then the horrors of such a grave!—so frightful, so dishonored! There was nothing for memory to dwell on that could soothe the pang of separation — none of those tender, though melancholy circumstances, that endear the parting scene — nothing to melt sorrow into those blessed tears, sent, like the dews of heaven, to revive the heart in the parting hour of anguish.

To render her widowed situation more desolate, she had incurred her father's displeasure by her unfortunate attachment, and was an exile from the paternal roof. But could the sympathy and kind offices of friends have reached a spirit so shocked and driven in by horror, she would have experienced no want of consolation, for the Irish are a people of quick and generous sensibilities. The most delicate and cherishing attentions were paid her, by families of wealth and distinction. She was led into society, and they tried by all kinds of occupation and amusement to dissipate her grief, and wean her from the tragical story of her love. But it was all in vain. There are some strokes of calamity that scathe and scorch the soul — that penetrate to the vital seat of happiness — and blast it, never again to put forth bud or blossom. She never objected to frequent the haunts of pleasure, but she was as much alone there, as in the depths of solitude. She walked about in a sad reverie, apparently unconscious of the world around her. She carried with her an inward woe that mocked at all the blandishments of friendship, and “heeded not the song of the charmer, charm he never so wisely.”

The person who told me her story had seen her at a masquerade. There can be no exhibition of far-gone wretchedness more striking and painful than to meet it in such a scene. To find it wandering like a spectre, lonely and joyless, where all around is gay — to see it dressed out in the trappings of mirth, and looking so wan and woebegone, as if it had tried in vain to cheat the poor heart into a momentary forgetfulness of sorrow. After strolling through the splendid rooms and giddy crowd with an air of utter abstraction, she sat herself down on the steps of an orchestra, and looking about for some time with a vacant air, that showed her insensibility to the garish scene, she began, with the capriciousness of a sickly heart, to warble a little plaintive air. She had an exquisite voice; but on this occasion it was so simple, so touching — it breathed forth such a soul of wretchedness — that she drew a crowd, mute and silent, around her, and melted every one into tears.

The story of one so true and tender could not but excite great interest in a country remarkable for enthusiasm. It completely won the heart of a brave officer, who paid his addresses to her, and thought that one so true to the dead, could not but prove affectionate to the living. She declined his attentions, for her thoughts were irrecoverably engrossed by the memory of her former lover. He, however, persisted in his suit. He solicited not her tenderness, but her esteem. He was assisted by her conviction of his worth, and her sense of her own destitute and dependent situation, for she was existing on the kindness of friends. In a word, he at length succeeded in gaining her hand, though with the solemn assurance that her heart was unalterably another's.

He took her with him to Sicily, hoping that a change of scene might wear out the remembrance of early woes. She was an amiable and exemplary wife, and made an effort to be a happy one; but nothing could cure the silent and devouring melancholy that had entered into her very soul. She wasted away in a slow, but hopeless decline, and at length sunk into the grave, the victim of a broken heart.

It was on her that Moore, the distinguished Irish poet, composed the following lines:—

“She is far from the land where her young hero sleeps,  
And lovers around her are sighing;  
But coldly she turns from their gaze, and weeps,  
For her heart in his grave is lying.

She sings the wild song of her dear native plains,  
Every note which he loved awaking —  
Ah! little they think, who delight in her strains,  
How the heart of the minstrel is breaking!

He had lived for his love — for his country he died,  
They were all that to life had entwined him —  
Nor soon shall the tears of his country be dried,  
Nor long will his love stay behind him!

Oh! make her a grave where the sunbeams rest,  
When they promise a glorious morrow;  
They'll shine o'er her sleep, like a smile from the west,  
From her own loved island of sorrow!”

## NOTES TO IRVING

"RIP VAN WINKLE" and "The Broken Heart" are taken from the "Sketch Book." The former illustrates Irving's lighter vein, the latter his serious vein. For the circumstances under which the "Sketch Book" was written, consult the sketch of Irving.

Irving prefaced the story of "Rip Van Winkle" with the following explanation: "The following tale was found among the papers of the late Diedrich Knickerbocker, an old gentleman of New York, who was very curious in the Dutch history of the province, and the manners of the descendants from its primitive settlers. His historical researches, however, did not lie so much among books as among men; for the former are lamentably scanty on his favorite topics; whereas he found the old burghers, and still more, their wives, rich in that legendary lore so invaluable to true history. Whenever, therefore, he happened upon a genuine Dutch family, snugly shut up in its low-roofed farmhouse, under a spreading sycamore, he looked upon it as a little clasped volume of black-letter, and studied it with the zeal of a bookworm."

"The result of all these researches was a history of the province, during the reign of the Dutch governors, which he published some years since. There have been various opinions as to the literary character of his work, and to tell the truth, it is not a whit better than it should be. Its chief merit is its scrupulous accuracy, which, indeed, was a little questioned on its first appearance, but has since been completely established; and it is now admitted into all historical collections, as a book of unquestionable authority."

"The old gentleman died shortly after the publication of his work, and now, that he is dead and gone, it cannot do much harm to his memory to say that his time might have been much better employed in weightier labors. He, however, was apt to ride his hobby in his own way; and though it did now and then kick up the dust a little in the eyes of his neighbors, and grieve the spirit of some friends for whom he felt the truest deference and affection, yet his errors and follies are remembered 'more in sorrow than in anger,' and it begins to be suspected that he never intended to injure or offend.<sup>1</sup> But

<sup>1</sup> Knickerbocker's History of New York had given offence to some for its irreverent use of honored names and its caricature of Dutch character. In an address before the New York Historical Society, Gulian C. Verplanck, a friend of Irving's, said: "It is painful to see a mind, as admirable for its exquisite perception of the beautiful as it is for its quick sense of the ridiculous, wasting the richness of its fancy on an ungrateful theme,

however his memory may be appreciated by critics, it is still held dear among many folk, whose good opinion is well worth having; particularly by certain biscuit-bakers, who have gone so far as to imprint his likeness on their New-Year cakes, and have thus given him a chance for immortality almost equal to the being stamped on a Waterloo medal or a Queen Anne farthing.”<sup>1</sup>

The two pieces selected for special study well illustrate Irving’s characteristics as a writer. We find in them an easy grace and elegance, a flowing and musical rhythm, a light play of fancy and humor, a delicate and tender sentiment, a smooth and unaffected narrative; picturesque description, and graphic delineation of character. Of Irving it may be said, as of few other writers, that the style is the man. His writings are suffused with his genial personality. Thackeray has described him in the family as “gentle, generous, good-humored, affectionate, self-denying; in society, a delightful example of complete gentlemanliness.” These traits are reflected in his work.

“His facility in writing and the charm of his style,” says William Cullen Bryant, “were owing to very early practice, the reading of good authors, and the native elegance of his mind, and not, in my opinion, to any special study of the graces of manner or any anxious care in the use of terms and phrases. Words and combinations of words are sometimes found in his writings to which a fastidious taste might object; but these do not prevent his style from being one of the most agreeable in the whole range of our literature. It is transparent as the light, sweetly modulated, unaffected, the native expression of a fertile fancy, a benignant temper, and a mind which, delighting in the noble and the beautiful, turned involuntarily away from their opposites. His peculiar humor was, in a great measure, the offspring of this constitution of his mind. This ‘fanciful playing with common things,’ as Mr. Dana calls it, is never coarse, never tainted with grossness, and always in harmony with our better sympathies. It not only tinged his writings, but overflowed in his delightful conversation.”

#### RIP VAN WINKLE

1. William Cartwright (1611-1643) “was distinguished by a graceful person and attractive manner, and by extraordinary industry; and, indeed, his fame rests on his personal popularity and the praise which he received from his fellow-poets, and especially from Ben Jonson, rather than on the merit of his verses, which are, in fact, very ordinary productions.”

2. “The Catskill, Katskill, or Cat River Mountains,” says Irving, “de-  
and its exuberant humor in a coarse caricature.” Irving read this criticism just as he was finishing *Rip Van Winkle*, and accordingly made this pleasant reference and playful apology.

<sup>1</sup> According to a popular but baseless story, only three farthings were coined in Queen Anne’s reign, of which two were in public keeping, and the other was lost.

rived their name, in the time of the Dutch domination, from the catamounts by which they were infested; and which, with the bear, the wolf, and the deer, are still to be found in some of their most difficult recesses. . . . To me they have ever been the fairy region of the Hudson. I speak, however, from early impressions, made in the happy days of boyhood, when all the world had a tinge of fairyland. I shall never forget my first view of these mountains. It was in the course of a voyage up the Hudson, in the good old times before steamboats and railroads had driven all poetry and romance out of travel. . . . I was a lively boy, somewhat imaginative, of easy faith, and prone to relish everything that partook of the marvellous. Among the passengers on board of the sloop was a veteran Indian trader, on his way to the Lakes to traffic with the natives. He had discovered my propensity, and amused himself throughout the voyage by telling me Indian legends and grotesque stories about every noted place on the river. . . . The Catskill Mountains especially called forth a host of fanciful traditions. We were all day slowly tiding along in sight of them, so that he had full time to weave his whimsical narratives."

3. Peter Stuyvesant (1602-1682) was governor of the New Netherlands from 1647 to 1664, when the province passed into the hands of the English. Three of the seven books of Knickerbocker's "History of New York" are devoted to his reign. He is characterized as "a tough, sturdy, valiant, weather-beaten, mettlesome, obstinate, leathern-sided, lion-hearted, generous-spirited old governor."

4. In the illustrious catalogue of "the sturdy chivalry of the Hudson," who accompanied Stuyvesant in his expedition against Fort Christina, we find the Van Winkles. At the moment of setting out, these heroes were "all fortified with a mighty dinner, and to use the words of a great Dutch poet,—

‘Brimful of wrath and cabbage.’"

5. A small rocky promontory on the right bank of the Hudson, forty-two miles from New York. It was stormed by Gen. Anthony Wayne, July 16, 1779. This is regarded by some as not only the most brilliant assault of the Revolutionary War, but the most brilliant in all history.

6. Antony's Nose is a promontory a few miles above Stony Point. If we may believe Diedrich Knickerbocker, it was named after Antony Van Corlear-Stuyvesant's trumpeter. "It must be known that the nose of Antony the trumpeter was of a very lusty size, strutting boldly from his countenance like a mountain of Golconda. . . . Now thus it happened, that bright and early in the morning, the good Antony, having washed his burly visage, was leaning over the quarter railing of the galley, contemplating it in the glassy wave below. Just at this moment the illustrious sun breaking in all his splendor from behind a high bluff of the highlands, did dart one of his most potent beams full upon the resplendent nose of the sounder of brass — the reflection of

which shot straightway down, hissing hot, into the water, and killed a mighty sturgeon that was sporting beside the vessel! . . . When this astonishing miracle came to be made known to Peter Stuyvesant he . . . marvelled exceedingly; and as a monument thereof, he gave the name of *Antony's Nose* to a stout promontory in the neighborhood — and it has continued to be called *Antony's Nose* ever since that time."

7. Adrian Vanderdonk, who wrote a "famous account of the New Netherlands."

8. To this story Irving appended the following note: "The foregoing tale, one would suspect, had been suggested to Mr. Knickerbocker by a little German superstition about the Emperor Frederick *der Rothbart*, and the Kypphäuser mountain; the subjoined note, however, which he had appended to the tale, shows that it is an absolute fact, narrated with his usual fidelity.

"The story of Rip Van Winkle may seem incredible to many, but nevertheless I give it my full belief, for I know the vicinity of our old Dutch settlements to have been very subject to marvellous events and appearance. Indeed, I have heard many stranger stories than this, in the villages along the Hudson; all of which were too well authenticated to admit of a doubt. I have even talked with Rip Van Winkle myself, who, when last I saw him, was a very old venerable man, and so perfectly rational and consistent on every other point, that I think no conscientious person could refuse to take this into the bargain; nay, I have seen a certificate on the subject taken before a country justice and signed with a cross, in the justice's own handwriting. The story, therefore, is beyond the possibility of doubt. — D. K."

### THE BROKEN HEART

1. Thomas Middleton, a dramatic writer, who lived in the reign of Elizabeth, James I, and Charles I. His earliest known piece belongs to 1602 and his latest to 1626.

2. Irving's own life illustrated a "romantic passion."

3. Cupid, who was often represented with a bandage over his eyes. Why should he be thus represented, or called "blind"?

4. Apparently a reference to Ps. Iv. 6, though not an exact quotation.

5. This and the two preceding paragraphs recall Byron's lines: —

"Man's love is of man's life a thing apart,  
     'Tis woman's whole existence; man may range  
     The court, camp, church, the vessel, and the mart;  
     Sword, gown, gain, glory, offer in exchange  
     Pride, fame, ambition, to fill up his heart,  
     And few there are whom these cannot estrange."

6. Robert Emmet (1778-1803) was a schoolfellow of the poet Moore. In 1803 he attempted to excite a revolution in Ireland, but ingloriously failed. He fled to the mountains; and perceiving that success was impossible, he resolved to escape to the Continent. But he delayed to have a last interview with the lady to whom he was deeply attached, a daughter of Curran, the celebrated barrister. He was apprehended, condemned to death, and executed Sept. 20, 1803. His fate is commemorated by Moore in one of the "Irish Melodies":—

"Oh! breathe not his name, let it sleep in the shade,  
Where cold and unhonored his relics are laid;  
Sad, silent, and dark, be the tears that we shed,  
As the night-dew that falls on the grass o'er his head.

But night-dew that falls, though in silence it weeps,  
Shall brighten with verdure the grave where he sleeps;  
And the tear that we shed, though in secret it rolls,  
Shall long keep his memory green in our souls."

## VIII

## SELECTION FROM COOPER

ESCAPE FROM A PANTHER<sup>1</sup>

By this time they<sup>2</sup> had gained the summit of the mountain, where they left the highway, and pursued their course under the shade of the stately trees that crowned the eminence.

The day was becoming warm, and the girls plunged more deeply into the forest, as they found its invigorating coolness agreeably contrasted to the excessive heat they had experienced in the ascent. The conversation,<sup>3</sup> as if by mutual consent, was entirely changed to the little incidents and scenes of their walk, and every tall pine, and every shrub or flower, called forth some simple expression of admiration.

In this manner they proceeded along the margin of the precipice, catching occasional glimpses of the placid Otsego,<sup>4</sup> or pausing to listen to the rattling of wheels and the sounds of hammers, that rose from the valley, to mingle the signs of men with the scenes of nature, when Elizabeth suddenly started, and exclaimed, —

“Listen! there are the cries of a child<sup>5</sup> on this mountain! is there a clearing near us? or can some little one have strayed from its parents?”

“Such things frequently happen,” returned Louisa. “Let us follow the sound: it may be a wanderer starving on the hill.”

Urged by this consideration, the females<sup>6</sup> pursued the low, mournful sounds, that proceeded from the forest, with quick and impatient steps. More than once the ardent Elizabeth was on the point of announcing that she saw the sufferer, when Louisa caught her by the arm, and pointing behind them, cried,<sup>7</sup> —

“Look at the dog!”

Brave had been their companion, from the time the voice of his young mistress lured him from his kennel, to the present moment. His advanced age had long before deprived him of his activity; and

when his companions stopped to view the scenery, or to add to their bouquets, the mastiff would lay his huge frame on the ground, and await their movements, with his eyes closed, and a listlessness in his air, that ill accorded with the character of a protector. But when, aroused by this cry from Louisa, Miss Temple turned, she saw the dog with his eyes keenly set on some distant object, his head bent near the ground, and his hair actually rising on his body, through fright or anger. It was most probably the latter, for he was growling in a low key, and occasionally showing his teeth, in a manner that would have terrified his mistress, had she not so well known his good qualities.

"Brave!" she said, "be quiet, Brave! what do you see, fellow?"

At the sounds of her voice, the rage of the mastiff, instead of being at all diminished, was very sensibly increased. He stalked in front of the ladies, and seated himself at the feet of his mistress, growling louder than before, and occasionally giving vent to his ire, by a short, surly barking.

"What does he see?" said Elizabeth: "there must be some animal in sight."

Hearing no answer from her companion, Miss Temple turned her head, and beheld Louisa, standing with her face whitened to the color of death, and her finger pointing upwards, with a sort of flickering, convulsed motion. The quick eye of Elizabeth glanced in the direction indicated by her friend, where she saw the fierce front and glaring eyes of a female panther, fixed on them in horrid malignity, and threatening to leap.<sup>8</sup>

"Let us fly!" exclaimed Elizabeth, grasping the arm of Louisa, whose form yielded like melting snow.

There was not a single feeling in the temperament of Elizabeth Temple that could prompt her to desert a companion in such an extremity. She fell on her knees, by the side of the inanimate Louisa, tearing from the person of her friend, with instinctive readiness, such parts of her dress as might obstruct her respiration, and encouraging their only safeguard, the dog, at the same time, by the sounds of her voice.

"Courage, Brave!" she cried, her own tones beginning to tremble, "courage, courage, good Brave!"

A quarter-grown cub, that had hitherto been unseen, now appeared, dropping from the branches of a sapling that grew under the shade

of the beech which held its dam. This ignorant, but vicious creature approached the dog, imitating the actions and sounds of its parent, but exhibiting a strange mixture of the playfulness of a kitten with the ferocity of its race. Standing on its hind legs, it would rend the bark of a tree with its fore paws, and play the antics of a cat ; and then, by lashing itself with its tail, growling, and scratching the earth, it would attempt the manifestations of anger that rendered its parent so terrific.

All this time Brave stood firm and undaunted, his short tail erect, his body drawn backward on its haunches, and his eyes following the movements of both dam and cub. At every gambol played by the latter, it approached nigher to the dog, the growling of the three becoming more horrid at each moment, until the younger beast, over-leaping its intended bound, fell directly before the mastiff. There was a moment of fearful cries and struggles, but they ended almost as soon as commenced, by the cub appearing in the air, hurled from the jaws of Brave, with a violence that sent it against a tree so forcibly as to render it completely senseless.<sup>9</sup>

Elizabeth witnessed the short struggle, and her blood was warming with the triumph of the dog, when she saw the form of the old panther in the air, springing twenty feet from the branch of the beech to the back of the mastiff. No words of ours can describe the fury of the conflict that followed. It was a confused struggle on the dry leaves, accompanied by loud and terrific cries. Miss Temple continued on her knees, bending over the form of Louisa, her eyes fixed on the animals, with an interest so horrid, and yet so intense, that she almost forgot her own stake in the result. So rapid and vigorous were the bounds of the inhabitant of the forest, that its active frame seemed constantly in the air, while the dog nobly faced his foe at each successive leap. When the panther lighted on the shoulders of the mastiff, which<sup>10</sup> was its constant aim, old Brave, though torn with her talons,<sup>11</sup> and stained with his own blood, that already flowed from a dozen wounds, would shake off his furious foe like a feather, and rearing on his hind legs, rush to the fray again, with jaws distended, and a dauntless eye. But age, and his pampered life, greatly disqualifed the noble mastiff for such a struggle. In everything but courage, he was only the vestige of what he had once been. A higher bound than ever raised the wary and furious beast far beyond the reach of the dog, who was

making a desperate but fruitless dash at her, from which she alighted in a favorable position, on the back of her aged foe. For a single moment only could the panther remain there, the great strength of the dog returning with a convulsive effort. But Elizabeth saw, as Brave fastened his teeth in the side of his enemy, that the collar of brass around his neck, which had been glittering throughout the fray, was of the color of blood, and directly, that his frame was sinking to the earth, where it soon lay prostrate and helpless.

Several mighty efforts of the wild-cat<sup>12</sup> to extricate herself from the jaws of the dog followed, but they were fruitless, until the mastiff turned on his back, his lips collapsed, and his teeth loosened, when the short convulsions and stillness that succeeded announced the death of poor Brave.

Elizabeth now lay wholly at the mercy of the beast. There is said to be something in the front of the image of the Maker that daunts the hearts of the inferior beings of his creation; and it would seem that some such power, in the present instance, suspended the threatened blow. The eyes of the monster and the kneeling maiden met for an instant, when the former stooped to examine her fallen foe; next to scent her luckless cub. From the latter examination, it turned however, with its eyes apparently emitting flashes of fire, its tail lashing its sides furiously, and its claws projecting inches<sup>13</sup> from her broad feet.

Miss Temple did not or could not move. Her hands were clasped in the attitude of prayer, but her eyes were still drawn to her terrible enemy; her cheeks were blanched to the whiteness of marble, and her lips were slightly separated with horror.

The moment seemed now to have arrived for the fatal termination, and the beautiful figure of Elizabeth was bowing meekly to the stroke, when a rustling of leaves behind seemed rather to mock her organs than to meet her ears.

"Hist! hist!" said a low voice, "stoop lower, gal; your bonnet hides the creatur's head."

It was rather the yielding of nature than a compliance with this unexpected order, that caused the head of our heroine to sink on her bosom; when she heard the report of the rifle, the whizzing of the bullet, and the enraged cries of the beast, who was rolling over on the earth, biting its own flesh, and tearing the twigs and branches within

its reach. At the next instant the form of the Leatherstocking rushed by her, and he called aloud,—

“Come in, Hector, come in, old fool; ‘tis a hard-lived animal, and may jump ag’in.”

Natty fearlessly maintained his position in front of the females, notwithstanding the violent bounds and threatening aspect of the wounded panther, which gave several indications of returning strength and ferocity, until his rifle was again loaded, when he stepped up to the enraged animal, and placing the muzzle close to its head, every spark of life was extinguished by the discharge.

The death of her terrible enemy appeared to Elizabeth like a resurrection from her own grave. There was an elasticity in the mind of our heroine that rose to meet the pressure of instant danger, and the more direct it had been, the more her nature had struggled to overcome it. But still she was a woman. Had she been left to herself in her late extremity, she would probably have used her faculties to the utmost, and with discretion, in protecting her person; but encumbered with her inanimate friend, retreat was a thing not to be attempted. Notwithstanding the fearful aspect of her foe, the eye of Elizabeth had never shrunk from its gaze, and long after the event her thoughts would recur to her passing sensations, and the sweetness of her midnight sleep would be disturbed, as her active fancy conjured,<sup>14</sup> in dreams, the most trifling movements of savage fury that the beast had exhibited in its moment of power.

We shall leave the reader to imagine the restoration of Louisa’s senses, and the expressions of gratitude which fell from the young women. The former was effected by a little water, that was brought from one of the thousand springs of those mountains, in the cap of the Leatherstocking; and the latter were uttered with the warmth that might be expected from the character of Elizabeth. Natty received her vehement protestations of gratitude with a simple expression of good-will, and with indulgence for her present excitement, but with a carelessness that showed how little he thought of the service he had rendered.

“Well, well,” he said, “be it so, gal; let it be so, if you wish it—we’ll talk the thing over another time. Come, come; let us get into the road, for you’ve had terror enough to make you wish yourself in your father’s house ag’in.”

This was uttered as they were proceeding, at a pace that was adapted to the weakness of Louisa, towards the highway: on reaching which, the ladies separated from their guide, declaring themselves equal to the remainder of the walk without his assistance, and feeling encouraged by the sight of the village, which lay beneath their feet like a picture, with its limpid lake in front, the winding stream<sup>15</sup> along its margin, and its hundred chimneys of whitened bricks.

The reader need not be told the nature of the emotions which two youthful, ingenuous, and well-educated girls would experience at their escape from a death so horrid as the one which had impended over them, while they pursued their way in silence along the track on the side of the mountain; nor how deep were their mental thanks to that Power which had given them their existence, and which had not deserted them in their extremity; neither how often they pressed each other's arms, as the assurance of their present safety came like a healing balm athwart their troubled spirits, when their thoughts were recurring to the recent moments of horror.

Leatherstocking remained on the hill, gazing after their retiring figures, until they were hidden by a bend in the road, when he whistled in his dogs, and shouldering his rifle, he returned into the forest.

"Well, it was a skeary thing to the young creatures," said Natty, while he retrod the path towards the plain. "It might frighten an older woman, to see a she-painter<sup>16</sup> so near her, with a dead cub by its side. I wonder if I had aimed at the varmint's eye, if I shouldn't have touched the life sooner than in the forehead; but they are hard-lived animals, and it was a good shot, consid'ring that I could see nothing but the head and the peak of its tail."

## NOTES TO COOPER

1. The "Escape from a Panther" is an episode taken from Chapter xxviii. of "The Pioneers." For a notice of this work, see the sketch of Cooper. This selection well illustrates our author's power of vivid description and narrative. As already pointed out, it is in work of this kind that he appears at his best.

2. Miss Elizabeth Temple, the heroine of "The Pioneers," and her friend, Miss Louise Grant, daughter of the local rector. They are out on a pleasure walk, a short distance from Leatherstocking's hut, and not far from the village of Templeton, the name for Cooperstown adopted in the story.

3. They had been talking about a young man, the hero of the tale, in whom both were more interested than they would have cared to acknowledge, and about whose life there was a mystery — explained, of course, near the end of the story.

4. Otsego Lake, about seven and a half miles long and one and a half miles wide. It is surrounded by high hills, and the scenery is picturesque.

5. The cry of the panther, so old hunters have said, often bears a striking resemblance to the human voice, for which, as in the present case, it has sometimes been mistaken.

6. It was customary in Cooper's time to call a woman by the very indefinite title of "female" — a usage that has fortunately given way to better taste.

7. Do you discover any incongruity in this sentence? Remodel and improve it.

8. To this sentence Cooper appended the following note: "Not long since there appeared in the papers an account of a hunter, upon whose head a panther had leaped, as he was sitting in the woods. A severe struggle ensued. The man was seriously wounded, but saved himself by plunging into a piece of water close at hand, and diving beneath the surface. There can be no doubt that these animals have occasionally inflicted fatal wounds. Governor DeWitt Clinton mentioned a panther, killed early in this century near Oneida Lake, by a Frenchman. The animal was shot in the attitude of leaping on the man. Its length was nine feet, eleven inches. The head was taken to Schenectady, where it may possibly still be found."

9. This sentence may be taken as illustrating Cooper's rapid and careless style.

10. What is the antecedent of "which"? Note also the careless use of "its" and "her" in the same sentence.

11. Is this a correct use of the word "talons"?
12. Is it correct to call a panther a "wild cat"?
13. Could this be strictly true? Note the unsteadiness in the use of the pronouns in this and the preceding sentence.
14. What is the difference between *conjure* and *conjure up*? Which is the correct word here?
15. The Susquehanna, one branch of which takes its rise in Otsego Lake.
16. A term for panther frequently used by uneducated persons.

## IX

## SELECTIONS FROM BRYANT

## THANATOPSIS

To him who in the love of Nature holds  
Communion<sup>1</sup> with her visible forms, she speaks  
A various language: for his gayer hours  
She has a voice of gladness, and a smile  
And eloquence of beauty;<sup>2</sup> and she glides  
Into his darker musings,<sup>3</sup> with a mild  
And healing<sup>4</sup> sympathy, that steals<sup>5</sup> away  
Their sharpness, ere he is aware. When thoughts  
Of the last bitter<sup>6</sup> hour come like a blight  
Over thy spirit, and sad images  
Of the stern<sup>7</sup> agony, and shroud, and pall,  
And breathless darkness,<sup>8</sup> and the narrow house,  
Make thee to shudder, and grow sick at heart;  
Go forth, under the open sky, and list  
To Nature's teachings, while from all around —  
Earth and her waters, and the depths of air —  
Comes a still voice: Yet a few days, and thee  
The all-beholding sun shall see no more  
In all his course; nor yet in the cold ground,  
Where thy pale form was laid, with many tears,  
Nor in the embrace<sup>9</sup> of ocean, shall exist  
Thy image. Earth, that nourished thee, shall claim  
Thy growth,<sup>10</sup> to be resolved to earth again;  
And, lost each human trace,<sup>11</sup> surrendering up  
Thine individual being, shalt thou go  
To mix for ever with the elements;  
To be a brother to the insensible<sup>12</sup> rock,  
And to the sluggish clod, which the rude swain<sup>13</sup>

Turns with his share, and treads upon. The oak  
Shall send his roots abroad and pierce thy mould.

Yet not to thine eternal resting-place  
Shalt thou retire alone, nor couldst thou wish  
Couch more magnificent. Thou shalt lie down  
With patriarchs<sup>14</sup> of the infant world, — with kings,  
The powerful of the earth, — the wise, the good,  
Fair forms, and hoary seers of ages past,  
All in one mighty sepulchre. The hills  
Rock-ribbed and ancient as the sun ;<sup>15</sup> the vales  
Stretching in pensive quietness<sup>16</sup> between ;  
The venerable<sup>17</sup> woods ; rivers that move  
In majesty, and the complaining brooks  
That make the meadows green ; and poured round all,  
Old Ocean's gray and melancholy<sup>18</sup> waste, —  
Are but the solemn decorations all  
Of the great tomb of man. The golden sun,  
The planets, all the infinite host of heaven,<sup>19</sup>  
Are shining on the sad abodes of death,  
Through the still lapse of ages. All that tread  
The globe are but a handful to the tribes<sup>20</sup>  
That slumber in its bosom. Take the wings  
Of morning,<sup>21</sup> pierce the Barcan wilderness,<sup>22</sup>  
Or lose thyself in the continuous woods  
Where rolls the Oregon,<sup>23</sup> and hears no sound  
Save his own dashings, — yet the dead are there !  
And millions in those solitudes,<sup>24</sup> since first  
The flight of years began, have laid them down  
In their last sleep, — the dead reign there alone.  
So shalt thou rest ; and what if thou withdraw  
In silence<sup>25</sup> from the living, and no friend  
Take note of thy departure ? All that breathe  
Will share thy destiny. The gay will laugh  
When thou art gone, the solemn brood<sup>26</sup> of care  
Plod on, and each one, as before, will chase  
His favorite phantom ;<sup>27</sup> yet all these shall leave  
Their mirth and their employments, and shall come  
And make their bed with thee. As the long train

Of ages glide <sup>28</sup> away, the sons of men —  
 The youth in life's green spring, and he who goes  
 In the full strength of years, matron and maid,  
 The speechless babe, and the gray-headed man <sup>29</sup> —  
 Shall one by one be gathered to thy side,  
 By those who in their turn shall follow them.

So live, that when thy summons comes to join  
 The innumerable caravan that moves  
 To that mysterious realm,<sup>30</sup> where each shall take  
 His chamber in the silent halls of death,  
 Thou go not, like the quarry slave at night,  
 Scourged to his dungeon, but, sustained and soothed  
 By an unfaltering trust, approach thy grave  
 Like one who wraps the drapery of his couch  
 About him, and lies down to pleasant dreams.

---

### TO A WATERFOWL

WHITHER midst falling dew,<sup>1</sup>  
 While glow <sup>2</sup> the heavens with the last steps of day,  
 Far, through their rosy depths, dost thou pursue  
 Thy solitary <sup>3</sup> way?

Vainly the fowler's eye  
 Might mark thy distant flight to do thee wrong,  
 As, darkly seen against the crimson sky,  
 Thy figure floats <sup>5</sup> along.

Seek'st thou the plashy <sup>6</sup> brink  
 Of weedy lake, or marge <sup>7</sup> of river wide,  
 Or where the rocking billows rise and sink  
 On the chafed <sup>8</sup> ocean-side?

There is a Power whose care  
 Teaches thy way along that pathless coast <sup>9</sup> —  
 The desert and illimitable air —  
 Lone wandering, but not lost.

All day thy wings have fanned,  
 At that far height,<sup>10</sup> the cold, thin atmosphere,  
 Yet stoop not, weary, to the welcome land,  
 Though the dark night is near.

And soon that toil shall end ;  
 Soon shalt thou find a summer home, and rest,  
 And scream among thy fellows ; reeds shall bend,  
 Soon, o'er thy sheltered nest.

Thou'rt gone, the abyss <sup>11</sup> of heaven  
 Hath swallowed up thy form ; yet, on my heart  
 Deeply has sunk the lesson <sup>12</sup> thou hast given,  
 And shall not soon depart :

He who, from zone to zone,  
 Guides through the boundless sky thy certain flight,  
 In the long way that I must tread alone,  
 Will lead my steps aright.

#### A FOREST HYMN

THE groves were God's first temples. Ere man learned  
 To hew the shaft, and lay the architrave,<sup>1</sup>  
 And spread the roof above them, — ere he framed  
 The lofty vault,<sup>2</sup> to gather and roll back  
 The sound of anthems ; <sup>3</sup> in the darkling <sup>4</sup> wood,  
 Amid <sup>5</sup> the cool and silence, he knelt down,  
 And offered to the Mightiest solemn <sup>6</sup> thanks  
 And supplication. For his simple heart  
 Might not <sup>7</sup> resist the sacred influences  
 Which, from the stilly twilight of the place,  
 And from the gray old trunks that high in heaven  
 Mingled their mossy boughs, and from the sound  
 Of the invisible breath that swayed at once  
 All their green tops, stole <sup>8</sup> over him, and bowed  
 His spirit with the thought of boundless power

And inaccessible majesty. Ah, why  
Should we, in the world's riper years,<sup>9</sup> neglect  
God's ancient sanctuaries,<sup>10</sup> and adore  
Only among the crowd, and under roofs  
That our frail hands have raised? Let me, at least,  
Here, in the shadow of this aged wood,  
Offer one hymn — thrice happy, if it find  
Acceptance in His ear.

Father, thy hand

Hath reared these venerable columns, thou  
Didst weave this verdant roof. Thou didst look down  
Upon the naked earth,<sup>11</sup> and, forthwith, rose  
All these fair ranks of trees. They, in thy sun,  
Budded and shook their green leaves in thy breeze,  
And shot toward heaven. The century-living crow  
Whose birth was in their tops, grew old and died  
Among their branches, till, at last, they stood,  
As now they stand, massy, and tall, and dark,  
Fit shrine <sup>12</sup> for humble worshipper to hold  
Communion with his Maker. These dim vaults,  
These winding aisles, of human pomp or pride  
Report <sup>13</sup> not. No fantastic <sup>14</sup> carvings show  
The boast of our vain race to change the form  
Of thy fair works. But thou art here — thou fill'st  
The solitude. Thou art in the soft winds  
That run along the summit of these trees  
In music; thou art in the cooler breath  
That from the inmost darkness of the place  
Comes, scarcely felt; the barky trunks, the ground,  
The fresh moist ground, are all instinct <sup>15</sup> with thee.  
Here is continual worship; — Nature, here,  
In the tranquillity that thou dost love,  
Enjoys thy presence. Noiselessly, around,  
From perch to perch, the solitary bird  
Passes; and yon clear spring, that, midst its herbs,  
Wells softly forth and wandering steeps the roots  
Of half the mighty forest, tells no tale  
Of all the good it does. Thou hast not left

Thyself without a witness, in the shades,  
Of thy perfections. Grandeur, strength, and grace  
Are here to speak of thee. This mighty oak —  
By whose immovable stem I stand and seem  
Almost annihilated — not a prince,  
In all that proud old world beyond the deep,  
E'er wore his crown as loftily as he  
Wears the green coronal of leaves with which  
Thy hand has graced him. Nestled at his root  
Is beauty, such as blooms not in the glare  
Of the broad sun. That delicate forest flower,  
With scented breath and look so like a smile,  
Seems, as it issues from the shapeless mould,  
An emanation <sup>16</sup> of the indwelling Life,  
A visible token of the upholding Love,  
That are the soul of this great universe.

My heart is awed within me when I think  
Of the great miracle that still goes on,  
In silence, round me — the perpetual work  
Of thy creation, finished, yet renewed  
Forever. Written on thy works I read  
The lesson of thy own eternity.  
Lo! all grow old and die — but see again,  
How on the faltering footsteps of decay  
Youth presses — ever gay and beautiful youth  
In all its beautiful forms. These lofty trees  
Wave not less proudly than their ancestors  
Moulder beneath them. Oh, there is not lost  
One of earth's charms: upon her bosom yet,  
After the flight of untold centuries,  
The freshness of her far beginning lies  
And yet shall lie. Life mocks the idle hate  
Of his arch-enemy Death — yea, seats himself  
Upon the tyrant's throne — the sepulchre,  
And of the triumphs of his ghastly foe  
Makes his own nourishment. For he <sup>17</sup> came forth  
From thine own bosom, and shall have no end.

There have been holy men <sup>18</sup> who hid themselves  
Deep in the woody wilderness, and gave  
Their lives to thought and prayer, till they outlived  
The generation born with them, nor seemed  
Less aged than the hoary trees and rocks  
Around them; — and there have been holy men  
Who deemed it were not well to pass life thus.  
But let me often to these solitudes  
Retire, and in thy presence reassure  
My feeble virtue. Here its enemies,  
The passions, at thy plainer footsteps shrink  
And tremble and are still. O God! when thou  
Dost scare the world with tempests, set on fire  
The heavens with falling thunderbolts, or fill,  
With all the waters of the firmament,  
The swift dark whirlwind <sup>19</sup> that uproots the woods  
And drowns the villages; when, at thy call,  
Uprises the great deep and throws himself  
Upon the continent, and overwhelms  
Its cities — who forgets not, at the sight  
Of these tremendous tokens of thy power,  
His pride, and lays his strifes and follies by?  
Oh, from these sterner aspects of thy face  
Spare me and mine, nor let us need the wrath  
Of the mad, unchained elements to teach  
Who rules them. Be it ours to meditate,  
In these calm shades, thy milder majesty,  
And to the beautiful order of thy works  
Learn to conform the order of our lives.

---

### TO THE FRINGED GENTIAN<sup>1</sup>

THOU blossom, bright with autumn dew,  
And colored with the heaven's own blue,  
That openest when the quiet light  
Succeeds the keen and frosty night;

Thou comest not when violets lean  
O'er wandering brooks and springs unseen,  
Or columbines,<sup>2</sup> in purple dressed,  
Nod o'er the ground-bird's hidden nest.

Thou waitest late, and com'st alone,  
When woods are bare and birds are flown,  
And frosts and shortening days portend  
The aged Year is near his end.

Then doth thy sweet and quiet eye  
Look through its fringes to the sky,  
Blue — blue — as if that sky let fall  
A flower from its cerulean wall.

I would that thus, when I shall see  
The hour of death draw near to me,  
Hope, blossoming within my heart,  
May look to heaven as I depart.

---

### THE DEATH OF THE FLOWERS

THE melancholy days are come, the saddest of the year,  
Of wailing winds, and naked woods, and meadows brown and sere.  
Heaped in the hollows of the grove, the autumn leaves lie dead ;  
They rustle to the eddying gust, and to the rabbit's tread.  
The robin and the wren are flown, and from the shrubs the jay,  
And from the wood-top calls the crow through all the gloomy day.

Where are the flowers, the fair young flowers that lately sprang and  
stood  
In brighter light, and softer airs, a beauteous sisterhood ?  
Alas ! they all are in their graves ; the gentle race of flowers  
Are lying in their lowly beds, with the fair and good of ours.  
The rain is falling where they lie ; but the cold November rain  
Calls not from out the gloomy earth the lovely ones again.

The wind-flower and the violet, they perished long ago,  
And the brier-rose and the orchis died amid the summer glow ;

But on the hill the golden-rod, and the aster in the wood,  
And the yellow sun-flower by the brook, in autumn beauty stood —  
Till fell the frost from the clear cold heaven, as falls the plague on men,  
And the brightness of their smile was gone, from upland, glade and  
glen.

And now, when comes the calm mild day, as still such days will come,  
To call the squirrel and the bee from out their winter home ;  
When the sound of dropping nuts is heard, though all the trees are  
still,

And twinkle in the smoky light the waters of the rill,  
The South Wind searches for the flowers whose fragrance late he bore,  
And sighs to find them in the wood and by the stream no more.

And then I think of one who in her youthful beauty died,  
The fair meek blossom that grew up and faded by my side.  
In the cold moist earth we laid her, when the forests cast the leaf,  
And we wept that one so lovely should have a life so brief ;  
Yet not unmeet it was that one like that young friend of ours,  
So gentle and so beautiful, should perish with the flowers.

---

### THE EVENING WIND

SPIRIT that breathest through my lattice, thou  
That cool'st the twilight of the sultry day !  
Gratefully flows thy freshness round my brow ;  
Thou hast been out upon the deep at play,  
Riding all day the wild blue waves till now,  
Roughening their crests, and scattering high their spray,  
And swelling the white sail. I welcome thee  
To the scorched land, thou wanderer of the sea !

Nor I alone, — a thousand bosoms round  
Inhale thee in the fulness of delight ;  
And languid forms rise up, and pulses bound  
Livelier, at coming of the wind of night ;  
And languishing to hear thy welcome sound,  
Lies the vast inland, stretched beyond the sight.

Go forth into the gathering shade ; go forth, —  
God's blessing breathed upon the fainting earth.

Go, rock the little wood-bird in his nest ;  
Curl the still waters, bright with stars ; and rouse  
The wide old wood from his majestic rest,  
Summoning, from the innumerable boughs,  
The strange deep harmonies that haunt his breast.  
Pleasant shall be thy way where meekly bows  
The shutting flower, and darkling waters pass,  
And where the o'ershadowing branches sweep the grass.

Stoop o'er the place of graves, and softly sway  
The sighing herbage by the gleaming stone,  
That they who near the churchyard willows stray,  
And listen in the deepening gloom, alone,  
May think of gentle souls that passed away,  
Like thy pure breath, into the vast unknown,  
Sent forth from heaven among the sons of men,  
And gone into the boundless heaven again.

The faint old man shall lean his silver head  
To feel thee ; thou shalt kiss the child asleep,  
And dry the moistened curls that overspread  
His temples, while his breathing grows more deep ;  
And they who stand about the sick man's bed  
Shall joy to listen to thy distant sweep,  
And softly part his curtains to allow  
Thy visit, grateful to his burning brow.

Go, — but the circle of eternal change,  
Which is the life of nature, shall restore,  
With sounds and scents from all thy mighty range,  
Thee to thy birthplace of the deep once more.  
Sweet odors in the sea air, sweet and strange,  
Shall tell the homesick mariner of the shore ;  
And, listening to thy murmur, he shall deem  
He hears the rustling leaf and running stream.

## NOTES TO BRYANT

A FEW suggestions are made in reference to the study of poetry in general.

1. It is desirable to know as much as possible about the poet. Character and beliefs are reflected in poetry. All great poets have fundamental religious or philosophic beliefs that give tone to their productions. It is impossible fully to understand what is most characteristic in Wordsworth, Emerson, or Browning without a knowledge of their views of nature and of human life.

2. It will prove helpful in many cases to know the circumstances under which any given poem was written. The poet is apt to turn his experience, whether happy or unhappy, into verse. Sorrow especially forces from his soul the sweet perfume of poetry. If we know the occasion of its composition, it will generally be easier for us to catch the full meaning of the poem. When we know the circumstances under which it was written, Bryant's poem "To a Waterfowl" becomes much more interesting.

3. A genuine poem should be carefully studied. The words should be weighed, the allusions cleared up, the scenes pictured by the imagination. The structure of the verse should be clearly comprehended. The harmony and force of each line and sentence should be tested. The development of the poem and the symmetry of its parts should be traced. As our great poets are consummate artists, and use language with exquisite care, this painstaking process will constantly reveal new beauties.

4. As far as possible, we should enter into sympathy with the poet. We should surrender to his spell, and glow with his emotions. We should fondly linger in the enchanted region to which he introduces us; for it is only thus that we pass at length into the fulness of his vision and rapture. *The painstaking labor spent upon any poem is but preliminary to this full enjoyment.*

## THANATOPSIS

For facts concerning the composition and publication of this poem, see the sketch of Bryant.

The title (from Greek *thanatos*, death, and *opsis*, view), means a view of, or meditation on, death.

The poem illustrates two of Bryant's leading characteristics: (1) his sympathy with nature, and (2) his reflective, ethical tone.

As first published in the *North American Review*, the poem began with the lines, —

“Yet a few days, and thee  
The all-beholding sun shall see no more  
In all his course,”

and closed with the words, —

“And make their bed with thee.”

The present beautiful beginning and close were added in 1822, when eight of Bryant's poems were published in a pamphlet of forty-eight pages.

Bryant is distinguished for the quality of his blank verse. No other American poet has used it so effectively. It has an elevation, rhythm, and sonorous music that furnish a fitting dress for his lofty thought and deep emotion.

The several parts of this poem and the movement of thought may be briefly indicated as follows: 1. Nature speaks a various language to those who love and commune with her (lines 1-8). 2. When sorrowful thoughts of death come to the soul, listen to Nature's teachings (8-17). 3. Her voice tells us that our forms will soon vanish from the earth (17-30). 4. Yet our resting-place is hallowed by the presence of the mighty, the wise, and the good, and decorated by the hills, woods, rivers and “Old ocean's gray and melancholy waste” (30-45). 5. The innumerable dead that reign in all parts of the earth (45-57). 6. The present and coming generations will all come to make their bed with us in the dust (57-72). 7. We should so live as to approach the grave with an unfaltering trust (72-81).

1. Explain “communion.” What “visible forms” are meant?
2. *Eloquence of beauty* = a beauty capable of exciting deep emotion.
3. Explain “darker musings.” Note the force of the word “glides.”
4. In some editions we find “gentle” in place of “healing.” Which is preferable?
5. What is the force of “steals” here, and why is it better than *takes*?
6. Give a synonym of “bitter,” and explain “blight” in the same line.
7. Explain “stern.”
8. That is, of the coffin in the “narrow house” or grave.
9. *Embrace* = clasp. French *en*, in, and *bras*, arm.
10. *Growth* = developed form.
11. Parse “trace.”
12. What is the meaning of “insensible”? Is there any difference between “insensible” and “sluggish” in the next line?
13. Explain “rude swain.”
14. What is the etymology of “patriarchs,” and who are meant here?
15. This statement is not strictly true; but when Bryant wrote, the nebular hypothesis was not so generally adopted, and geological science was yet in

its infancy. As a matter of fact, the hills are a comparatively recent phenomenon in the history of our globe, and certainly much less ancient than the sun.

16. Explain "*pensive quietness*."
17. Give the exact idea of "*venerable*."
18. Note the fine effect of these adjectives. Give a synonym of "*melandcholy*."
19. What is meant by this phrase?
20. What is meant by "*tribes*"?
21. An adaptation of Ps. cxxxix. 9: "If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea."
22. Other readings are: "Traverse Barca's desert sands," and "the Barcan desert pierce." Which is preferable? Barca is a country in northern Africa.
23. Another name for the Columbia River.
24. This statement is true of Barca, which at present has a population of a million, and contains ruins indicative of a flourishing era in the past; but its truth is not so obvious in the case of the Oregon.
25. Other readings are: "If thou withdraw Unheeded," and "If thou shalt fall Unnoticed."
26. *Brood* = progeny, offspring. Paraphrase this sentence.
27. What is a "*phantom*"? What are some of the "*phantoms*" men pursue?
28. Bryant also wrote "*glides*." Which is better?
29. For this line, the following is substituted in some editions: —

"The bowed with age, the infant in the smiles  
And beauty of its innocent age cut off,"

which is certainly more poetical.

30. Another reading is: "The pale realms of shade." Which do you prefer?

#### TO A WATERFOWL

For the circumstances of its composition, see the sketch of Bryant.

The following incident is related by Mr. Parke Godwin: —

"Once when the late Matthew Arnold, with his family, was visiting the ever-hospitable country home of Mr. Charles Butler, I happened to spend an evening there. In the course of it Mr. Arnold took up a volume of Mr. Bryant's poems from a table, and, turning to me, said, 'This is *the American poet, facile princeps*'; and after a pause he continued: 'When I first heard of him, Hartley Coleridge (I was but a lad at the time) came into my father's house one afternoon considerably excited, and exclaimed, "Matt, do you want to hear the best short poem in the English language?" "Faith, Hartley, I do," was my reply. He then read a poem "To a Waterfowl," in his best manner. And he was a good reader. As soon as he had done, he asked, "What do you think of that?"'

"I am not sure but you are right, Hartley; is that your father's?" was my reply.  
 "No," he rejoined; "father has written nothing like that." Some days after  
 he might be heard muttering to himself, —

"The desert and illimitable air,  
 Lone wandering, but not lost."<sup>1</sup>

Note the use of the generic term "*waterfowl*." Can you give a reason for this? What aquatic fowl is probably meant?

Make an analysis of the poem so as to give the order of thought in the successive stanzas. Do not fail mentally to picture the scenes described.

1. Explain the phenomenon of "dew." Does all dew *fall*? At what time is the "waterfowl" seen by the poet?
2. Explain "glow." What figure of speech is used with "day"?
3. Does the "waterfowl" in question usually migrate alone? What form do the flocks generally assume in their migrations?
4. Why should the poet think of a "*fowler*" as he watches the waterfowl?
5. Why use the word "*floats*" here?
6. Explain "*plashy*."
7. What word would the poet have used in prose?
8. Explain "*chafed*." All the waters mentioned in this stanza are visited by the wild goose, with the habits of which the poet was evidently acquainted.
9. *Coast* = region — an unusual meaning.
10. These birds usually fly at a great height. It is only when confused or lost that they fly near the earth.
11. *Abyss* = immeasurable space. From Greek *a* privative, and *bussos*, depth, bottom. Etymologically, a bottomless depth.
12. Here we have another illustration of Bryant's ethical habit of mind. The following stanza contains the lesson learned.

#### A FOREST HYMN

In this poem Bryant's deep religious nature is clearly apparent.

Make an analysis of the poem by noting the successive topics.

1. Explain "shaft" and "architrave." See illustrations in a good dictionary.
2. *Vault* = arched roof or ceiling. In the great cathedrals of Europe the arched ceiling is often very lofty.
3. As poured forth from the great cathedral organs and large choirs.
4. *Darkling* = dusky, gloomy. "The pres. part. of a supposed verb *darkle*, diminutive from *dark*." — WEBSTER.
5. In some editions we find "amidst." "*Amid*" is used mostly in poetry.
6. Give a synonym for "solemn."

<sup>1</sup> Bigelow, William Cullen Bryant, p. 43.

7. *Might not* = was not able. A. S. *magan*, to be able.
8. What is the subject of “*stole*”? From what three separate objects came the “*sacred influences*”?
9. Explain “*riper years*. ”
10. What is the etymological force of *sanctuary*?
11. Bryant had in mind Gen. i. 10, 11.
12. Explain “*shrine*. ” Why does Bryant say “*humble worshipper*”?
13. *Report* = tell.
14. *Fantastic* = existing only in imagination; hence, unlike anything in nature. Such ornamentation can hardly be justified on any correct principles of architecture. According to Ruskin, ornamentation should in some degree express or adopt the beauty of natural objects. “All noble ornament is the expression of man’s delight in God’s work.”
15. *Instinct* = moved, animated. Lat. *instinguere*, to instigate, incite.
16. *Emanation* = that which issues from any source. Lat. *e*, out, and *manare*, to flow.
17. To what does “*he*” refer?
18. These were the anchorites or hermits of the early centuries of the Christian era. “They lived in caves, avoided all intercourse with their fellow-men, abstained as much as possible from food, spoke no word, but prayed in silence.” — *Schaff-Herzog Encyclopædia*.
19. Express “the swift dark whirlwind” in a single word.

#### TO THE FRINGED GENTIAN

This poem is justly admired for its delicate feeling. The poet’s love of nature, exhibited in the various fine descriptions of “*Thanatopsis*,” and “*A Forest Hymn*,” is here centred in a little flower. His acquaintance with the appearance and habits of the several flowers mentioned indicates his attentive observation.

1. *Gentiana crinita*, or Blue Fringed Gentian, found in cool, low grounds from Canada to Carolina. The stem is about a foot high, and the flowers are sky-blue. It blooms in autumn.

2. *Aquilegia Vulgaris*, or common Columbine. It blooms in June, with large purple flowers. Another common species, *Aquilegia Canadensis*, has scarlet flowers.

#### THE DEATH OF THE FLOWERS

This poem was written in memory of the poet’s sister, the beloved companion of his earlier years. See the sketch of Bryant. “No one is to be envied,” says a biographer, “who can read the closing stanzas to-day without emotion.”

What characteristics of the poet are exemplified in this piece? This poem, as well as the following one, “*The Evening Wind*,” will repay careful study.

## X

## SELECTIONS FROM POE

## THE RAVEN

ONCE upon a midnight dreary, while I pondered, weak and weary,  
Over many a quaint and curious volume of forgotten lore —  
While I nodded, nearly napping, suddenly there came a tapping,  
As of some one gently rapping, rapping at my chamber door.

“Tis some visitor,” I muttered, “tapping at my chamber door —  
Only this and nothing more.”<sup>1</sup>

Ah, distinctly I remember it was in the bleak December,<sup>2</sup>  
And each separate dying ember wrought its ghost upon the floor.  
Eagerly I wished the morrow; — vainly I had sought to borrow  
From my books surcease of sorrow — sorrow for the lost Lenore —  
For the rare and radiant maiden whom the angels named Lenore —  
Nameless here for evermore.

And the silken sad uncertain rustling of each purple curtain <sup>3</sup>  
Thrilled me — filled me with fantastic terrors never felt before;  
So that now, to still the beating of my heart, I stood repeating  
“Tis some visitor entreating entrance at my chamber door —  
Some late visitor entreating entrance at my chamber door; <sup>4</sup>  
This it is and nothing more.”

Presently my soul grew stronger; hesitating then no longer,  
“Sir,” said I, “or Madam, truly your forgiveness I implore;  
But the fact is I was napping, and so gently you came rapping,  
And so faintly you came tapping, tapping at my chamber door,  
That I scarce was sure I heard you” — here I opened wide the door; —  
Darkness there and nothing more.

Deep into that darkness peering, long I stood there wondering, fearing,  
Doubting, dreaming dreams no mortal ever dared to dream before;  
But the silence was unbroken, and the stillness gave no token,

And the only word there spoken was the whispered word, "Lenore?"  
 This I whispered, and an echo murmured back the word "Lenore!" —  
 Merely this and nothing more.

Back into the chamber turning, all my soul within me burning,  
 Soon again I heard a tapping something louder than before.  
 "Surely," said I, "surely that is something at my window lattice;  
 Let me see, then, what thereat is and this mystery explore —  
 Let my heart be still a moment and this mystery explore; —  
 'Tis the wind and nothing more."

Open here I flung the shutter, when, with many a flirt and flutter,<sup>5</sup>  
 In there stepped a stately Raven of the saintly days of yore.  
 Not the least obeisance made he; not a minute stopped or stayed he,  
 But, with mien of lord or lady, perched above my chamber door —  
 Perched upon a bust of Pallas<sup>6</sup> just above my chamber door —  
 Perched, and sat, and nothing more.

Then this ebony bird beguiling my sad fancy into smiling,  
 By the grave and stern decorum of the countenance it wore,  
 "Though thy crest be shorn and shaven, thou," I said, "art sure no  
 craven,  
 Ghastly grim and ancient Raven wandering from the Nightly shore —  
 Tell me what thy lordly name is on the Night's Plutonian shore!"  
 Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."<sup>7</sup>

Much I marvelled this ungainly fowl to hear discourse so plainly,  
 Though its answer little meaning — little relevancy bore;  
 For we cannot help agreeing that no living human being  
 Every yet was blessed with seeing bird above his chamber door —  
 Bird or beast upon the sculptured bust above his chamber door,  
 With such name as "Nevermore."

But the Raven, sitting lonely on that placid bust, spoke only  
 That one word, as if his soul in that one word he did outpour.  
 Nothing farther then he uttered; not a feather then he fluttered —  
 Till I scarcely more than muttered, "Other friends have flown before —  
 On the morrow *he* will leave me, as my Hopes have flown before."  
 Then the bird said "Nevermore."

Startled at the stillness broken by reply so aptly spoken,  
 "Doubtless," said I, "what it utters is its only stock and store,  
 Caught from some unhappy master whom unmerciful Disaster  
 Followed fast and followed faster till his songs one burden bore —  
 Till the dirges of his Hope that melancholy burden bore  
 Of 'Never — nevermore.'"

But the Raven still beguiling all my sad soul into smiling,  
 Straight I wheeled a cushioned seat in front of bird and bust and door ;  
 Then, upon the velvet sinking, I betook myself to linking  
 Fancy unto fancy, thinking what this ominous bird of yore —  
 What this grim, ungainly, ghastly, gaunt, and ominous bird of yore —  
 Meant in croaking "Nevermore."

This I sat engaged in guessing, but no syllable expressing  
 To the fowl whose fiery eyes now burned into my bosom's core ;  
 This and more I sat divining, with my head at ease reclining  
 On the cushion's velvet lining that the lamp-light gloated o'er,  
 But whose velvet violet lining with the lamp-light gloating o'er  
 She shall press, ah, nevermore !

Then, methought, the air grew denser, perfumed from an unseen censer  
 Swung by Seraphim whose foot-falls tinkled on the tufted floor.  
 "Wretch," I cried, "thy God hath lent thee — by these angels he hath  
 sent thee  
 Respite — respite and nepenthe from thy memories of Lenore !  
 Quaff, oh quaff this kind nepenthe and forget this lost Lenore !"  
 Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

"Prophet !" said I, "thing of evil ! — prophet still, if bird or devil !  
 Whether Tempter sent, or whether tempest tossed thee here ashore,  
 Desolate yet all undaunted, on this desert land enchanted —  
 On this Home by horror haunted — tell me truly, I implore —  
 Is there — is there balm in Gilead ? — tell me — tell me, I implore !"  
 Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

"Prophet !" said I, "thing of evil — prophet still, if bird or devil !  
 By that heaven that bends above us — by that God we both adore —  
 Tell this soul with sorrow laden if, within the distant Aidenn,

It shall clasp a sainted maiden whom the angels named Lenore —  
Clasp a rare and radiant maiden whom the angels name Lenore."

Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore." <sup>8</sup>

"Be that word our sign of parting, bird or fiend!" I shrieked, upstarting —  
"Get thee back into the tempest and the Night's Plutonian shore!  
Leave no black plume as a token of that lie thy soul hath spoken!  
Leave my loneliness unbroken! — quit the bust above my door!  
Take thy beak from out my heart,<sup>9</sup> and take thy form from off my  
door!"

Quoth the Raven, "Nevermore."

And the Raven, never flitting, still is sitting, still is sitting  
On the pallid bust of Pallas just above my chamber door;  
And his eyes have all the seeming of a demon's that is dreaming,  
And the lamp-light o'er him streaming throws his shadow on the floor;<sup>10</sup>  
And my soul from out that shadow that lies floating on the floor  
Shall be lifted — nevermore.

### THE MASQUE<sup>1</sup> OF THE RED DEATH

THE "Red Death"<sup>2</sup> had long devastated the country. No pestilence had ever been so fatal or so hideous. Blood was its Avator<sup>3</sup> and its seal — the redness and the horror of blood. There were sharp pains, and sudden dizziness, and then profuse bleeding at the pores, with dissolution. The scarlet stains upon the body and especially upon the face of the victim were the pest ban<sup>4</sup> which shut him out from the aid and from the sympathy of his fellow-men. And the whole seizure, progress, and termination of the disease were the incidents of half an hour.

But the Prince Prospero was happy and dauntless and sagacious. When his dominions were half depopulated, he summoned to his presence a thousand hale and light-hearted friends from among the knights and dames of his court, and with these retired to the deep seclusion of one of his castellated abbeys.<sup>5</sup> This was an extensive and magnificent structure, the creation of the prince's own eccentric yet august taste. A strong and lofty wall girdled it in. This wall had gates of iron. The courtiers, having entered, brought furnaces and massy hammers and welded the bolts. They resolved to leave means neither of ingress or egress<sup>6</sup> to the sudden impulses of despair or of frenzy

from within. The abbey was amply provisioned. With such precautions the courtiers might bid defiance to contagion.<sup>7</sup> The external world could take care of itself. In the meantime it was folly to grieve or to think. The prince had provided all the appliances of pleasure. There were buffoons, there were improvisatori,<sup>8</sup> there were ballet-dancers, there were musicians, there was Beauty, there was wine. All these and security were within. Without was the "Red Death."

It was toward the close of the fifth or sixth month of his seclusion, and while the pestilence raged most furiously abroad, that the Prince Prospero entertained his thousand friends at a masked ball of the most unusual magnificence.

It was a voluptuous scene, that masquerade. But first let me tell of the rooms in which it was held. There were seven — an imperial suite. In many palaces, however, such suites form a long and straight vista,<sup>9</sup> while the folding doors slide back nearly to the walls on either hand, so that the view of the whole extent is scarcely impeded. Here the case was very different, as might have been expected from the duke's love of the *bizarre*.<sup>10</sup> The apartments were so irregularly disposed that the vision embraced but little more than one at a time. There was a sharp turn at every twenty or thirty yards, and at each turn a novel effect. To the right and left, in the middle of each wall, a tall and narrow Gothic window looked out upon a closed corridor which pursued the windings of the suite. These windows were of stained glass, whose color varied in accordance with the prevailing hue of the decorations of the chamber into which it opened. That at the eastern extremity was hung, for example, in blue — and vividly blue were its windows. The second chamber was purple in its ornaments and tapestries, and here the panes were purple. The third was green throughout, and so were the casements. The fourth was furnished and lighted with orange — the fifth with white — the sixth with violet. The seventh apartment was closely shrouded in black velvet tapestries, that hung all over the ceiling and down the walls, falling in heavy folds upon a carpet of the same material and hue. But in this chamber only, the color of the windows failed to correspond with the decorations. The panes here were scarlet — a deep blood-color. Now, in no one of the seven apartments was there any lamp or candelabrum<sup>11</sup> amid the profusion of golden ornaments that lay scattered to and fro or depended from the roof. There was no light of any kind emanating

ting from lamp or candle within the suite of chambers. But in the corridors that followed the suite, there stood, opposite to each window, a heavy tripod, bearing a brazier<sup>12</sup> of fire, that projected its rays through the tinted glass and so glaringly illumined the room. And thus were produced a multitude of gaudy and fantastic appearances. But in the western or black chamber the effect of the fire-light that streamed upon the dark hangings through the blood-tinted panes was ghastly in the extreme, and produced so wild a look upon the countenances of those who entered, that there were few of the company bold enough to set foot within its precincts at all.

It was in this apartment, also, that there stood against the western wall a gigantic clock of ebony.<sup>13</sup> Its pendulum swung to and fro with a dull, heavy, monotonous clang; and when the minute hand made the circuit of the face, and the hour was to be stricken, there came from the brazen lungs of the clock a sound which was clear and loud and deep and exceedingly musical, but of so peculiar a note and emphasis that, at each lapse of an hour, the musicians of the orchestra were constrained to pause momentarily in their performance, to hearken to the sound; and thus the waltzers perforce ceased their evolutions; and there was a brief disconcert of the whole gay company; and, while the chimes of the clock yet rang, it was observed that the giddiest grew pale, and the more aged and sedate passed their hands over their brows as if in confused reverie or meditation. But when the echoes had fully ceased, a light laughter at once pervaded the assembly; the musicians looked at each other and smiled as if at their own nervousness and folly, and made whispering vows, each to the other, that the next chiming of the clock should produce in them no similar emotion; and then, after the lapse of sixty minutes (which embrace three thousand and six hundred seconds of the Time that flies), there came yet another chiming of the clock, and then were the same disconcert and tremulousness and meditation as before.

But, in spite of these things, it was a gay and magnificent revel. The tastes of the duke were peculiar. He had a fine eye for colors and effects. He disregarded the *decora*<sup>14</sup> of mere fashion. His plans were bold and fiery, and his conceptions glowed with barbaric lustre. There are some who would have thought him mad. His followers felt that he was not. It was necessary to hear and see and touch him to be *sure* that he was not.

He had directed, in great part, the movable embellishments of the seven chambers upon occasion of this great *fête*; and it was his own guiding taste which had given character to the masqueraders. Be sure they were grotesque. There were much glare and glitter and piquancy and phantasm — much of what has been since seen in "Hernani."<sup>15</sup> There were arabesque<sup>16</sup> figures with unsuited limbs and appointments. There were delirious fancies such as the madman fashions. There were much of the beautiful, much of the wanton, much of the *bizarre*, something of the terrible, and not a little of that which might have excited disgust. To and fro in the seven chambers there stalked, in fact, a multitude of dreams. And these — the dreams — writhed in and about, taking hue from the rooms, and causing the wild music of the orchestra to seem as the echo of their steps. And, anon, there strikes the ebony clock which stands in the hall of the velvet. And then for a moment, all is still, and all is silent save the voice of the clock. The dreams are stiff-frozen as they stand. But the echoes of the chime die away — they have endured but an instant — and a light, half-subdued laughter floats after them as they depart. And now again the music swells, and the dreams live, and writhe to and fro more merrily than ever, taking hue from the many tinted windows through which stream the rays from the tripods. But to the chamber which lies most westwardly of the seven, there are now none of the maskers who venture; for the night is waning away; and there flows a ruddier light through the blood-colored panes; and the blackness of the sable drapery appalls; and to him whose foot falls upon the sable carpet there comes from the near clock of ebony a muffled peal more solemnly emphatic than any which reaches *their* ears who indulge in the more remote gayeties of the other apartments.

But these other apartments were densely crowded, in them beat feverishly the heart of life. And the revel went whirlingly on, until at length there commenced the sounding of midnight upon the clock. And then the music ceased, as I have told; and the evolutions of the waltzers were quieted; and there was an uneasy cessation of all things as before. But now there were twelve strokes to be sounded by the bell of the clock; and thus it happened, perhaps, that more of thought crept, with more of time, into the meditations of the thoughtful among those who revelled. And thus, too, it happened, perhaps, that before the last echoes of the last chime had utterly sunk into silence, there

were many individuals in the crowd who had found leisure to become aware of the presence of a masked figure which had arrested the attention of no single individual before. And the rumor of this new presence having spread itself whisperingly around, there arose at length from the whole company a buzz or murmur expressive of disapprobation and surprise — then, finally, of terror, of horror, and of disgust.

In an assembly of phantasms such as I have painted, it may well be supposed that no ordinary appearance could have excited such sensation. In truth, the masquerade license of the night was nearly unlimited; but the figure in question had out-Heroded Herod,<sup>17</sup> and gone beyond the bounds of even the prince's indefinite decorum. There are chords in the hearts of the most reckless which cannot be touched without emotion. Even with the utterly lost, to whom life and death are equally jests, there are matters of which no jests can be made. The whole company, indeed, seemed now deeply to feel that in the costume and bearing of the stranger neither wit nor propriety existed. The figure was tall and gaunt, and shrouded from head to foot in the habiliments of the grave. The mask which concealed the visage was made so nearly to resemble the countenance of a stiffened corpse that the closest scrutiny must have had difficulty in detecting the cheat. And yet all this might have been endured, if not approved, by the mad revellers around. But the mummer<sup>18</sup> had gone so far as to assume the type of the Red Death. His vesture was dabbled in *blood*; and his broad brow, with all the features of the face, was besprinkled with the scarlet horror.

When the eyes of Prince Prospero fell upon this spectral image (which with a slow and solemn movement, as if more fully to sustain its *rôle*, stalked to and fro among the waltzers) he was seen to be convulsed in the first moment with a strong shudder either of terror or distaste; but, in the next, his brow reddened with rage.

“Who dares?” he demanded hoarsely of the courtiers who stood near him — “who dares insult us with this blasphemous mockery? Seize him and unmask him — that we may know whom we have to hang at sunrise from the battlements!”

It was in the eastern or blue chamber in which stood the Prince Prospero as he uttered these words. They rang throughout the seven rooms loudly and clearly; for the prince was a bold and robust man, and the music had become hushed at the waving of his hand.

It was in the blue room where stood the prince, with a group of pale courtiers by his side. At first, as he spoke, there was a slight rushing movement of this group in the direction of the intruder, who, at the moment, was also near at hand, and now, with deliberate and stately step, made closer approach to the speaker. But from a certain nameless awe with which the mad assumptions of the mummer had inspired the whole party, there were found none who put forth hand to seize him; so that, unimpeded, he passed within a yard of the prince's person; and, while the vast assembly, as if with one impulse, shrank from the centres of the rooms to the walls, he made his way uninterrupted, but with the same solemn and measured step which had distinguished him from the first, through the blue chamber to the purple — through the purple to the green — through the green to the orange — through this again to the white — and even thence to the violet, ere a decided movement had been made to arrest him. It was then, however, that the Prince Prospero, maddening with rage and the shame of his own momentary cowardice, rushed hurriedly through the six chambers, while none followed him on account of a deadly terror that had seized upon all. He bore aloft a drawn dagger, and had approached, in rapid impetuosity, to within three or four feet of the retreating figure, when the latter, having attained the extremity of the velvet apartment, turned suddenly and confronted his pursuer. There was a sharp cry — and the dagger dropped gleaming upon the sable carpet, upon which, instantly afterward, fell prostrate in death the Prince Prospero. Then, summoning the wild courage of despair, a throng of the revellers at once threw themselves into the black apartment, and, seizing the mummer, whose tall figure stood erect and motionless within the shadow of the ebony clock, gasped in unutterable horror at finding the grave ceremonials and corpse-like mask which they handled with so violent a rudeness, untenanted by any tangible form.

And now was acknowledged the presence of the Red Death. He had come like a thief in the night. And one by one dropped the revellers in the blood-bedewed halls of their revel, and died each in the despairing posture of his fall. And the life of the ebony clock went out with that of the last of the gay. And the flames of the tripods expired. And Darkness and the Red Death held illimitable dominion over all.

## NOTES TO POE

## THE RAVEN

FOR facts connected with the publication of "The Raven," and also for a statement of Poe's poetical principles, see the preceding sketch.

In a paper entitled "The Philosophy of Composition," the poet has given us a rather incredible description of the method he pursued in the composition of "The Raven." Whatever may be thought of the truthfulness of the description (his word for it is hardly sufficient), it throws much light on the structure of the poem. The following notes are chiefly an abridgment of Poe's analysis, which the student would do well to read in full.

The story in prose Poe gives as follows: "A raven, having learned by rote the single word 'Nevermore,' and having escaped from the custody of its owner, is driven at midnight, through the violence of a storm, to seek admission at a window from which a light still gleams, — the chamber-window of a student, occupied half in poring over a volume, half in dreaming of a beloved mistress deceased. The casement being thrown open at the fluttering of the bird's wings, the bird itself perches on the most convenient seat out of the immediate reach of the student, who, amused by the incident and the oddity of the visitor's demeanor, demands of it, in jest and without looking for a reply, its name. The raven addressed answers with its customary word, 'Nevermore' — a word which finds immediate echo in the melancholy heart of the student, who, giving utterance aloud to certain thoughts suggested by the occasion, is again startled by the fowl's repetition of 'Nevermore.' The student now guesses the state of the case, but is impelled, by the human thirst for self-torture, and in part by superstition, to propound such queries to the bird as will bring him, the lover, the most of the luxury of sorrow, through the anticipated answer 'Nevermore.' "

After having decided to write a poem, the first thing to be determined, Poe tells us, was its length. In order to secure unity of impression, it should not be too long to be read at a single sitting. Furthermore, it ought not to extend beyond the limits of the soul to bear intense emotion. From these considerations, he reached the conclusion, so he says, that his poem should consist of about one hundred lines. It contains, in fact, a hundred and eight.

As to the impression or effect to be conveyed, Poe held that "Beauty is the sole legitimate province of the poem." The *tone* of its highest manifestation is one of *sadness*. "Beauty of whatever kind, in its supreme development, invariably excites the sensitive soul to tears. Melancholy is thus the most legitimate of all the poetical tones."

By his usual ratiocination Poe reached the conclusion that "the death of a beautiful woman is, unquestionably, the most poetical topic in the world;

and equally is it beyond doubt that the lips best suited for such topic are those of a bereaved lover."

As to the metre, "the feet employed throughout (trochees) consist of a long syllable followed by a short : the first line of the stanza consists of eight of these feet — the second of seven and a half (in effect two-thirds) — the third of eight — the fourth of seven and a half — the fifth the same — the sixth three and a half. Now, each of these lines, taken individually, has been employed before, and what originality the 'Raven' has, is in their *combination into stanza*; nothing even remotely approaching this combination has ever been attempted. The effect of this originality of combination is aided by other unusual, and some altogether novel effects, arising from an extension of the application of the principles of rhyme and alliteration."

1. In order to obtain "artistic piquancy," he adopted the *refrain*. But, he says, "I resolved to diversify, and so heighten, the effect, by adhering, in general, to the monotone of sound, while I continually varied that of thought; that is to say, I determine to produce continuously novel effects, by the variation of the application of the *refrain* — the *refrain* itself remaining, for the most part, unvaried."

2. "I made the night tempestuous, first to account for the Raven's seeking admission, and secondly, for the effect of contrast with the (physical) serenity within the chamber."

3. Deeming a close *circumscription of space* necessary for the effect aimed at, he determined "to place the lover in his chamber — in a chamber rendered sacred to him by memories of her who had frequented it. The room is represented as richly furnished — this in mere pursuance of the ideas I have already explained on the subject of Beauty, as the sole true poetical thesis."

4. "The *locale* being thus determined, I had now to introduce the bird — and the thought of introducing him through the window was inevitable. The idea of making the lover suppose, in the first instance, that the flapping of the wings of the bird against the shutter is a 'tapping' at the door, originated in a wish to increase, by prolonging, the reader's curiosity, and in a desire to admit the incidental effect arising from the lover's throwing open the door, finding all dark, and thence adopting the half-fancy that it was the spirit of his mistress that knocked."

5. "About the middle of the poem, also, I have availed myself of the force of contrast, with a view of deepening the ultimate impression. For example, an air of the fantastic — approaching as nearly to the ludicrous as was admissible — is given to the Raven's entrance. He comes in 'with many a flirt and flutter.'

'Not the least obeisance made he — not a moment stopped or stayed he,  
But with mien of lord or lady, perched above my chamber door.'

In the two stanzas which follow, the design is more obviously carried out."

6. "I made the bird alight on the bust of Pallas, also for the effect of contrast between the marble and the plumage — it being understood that the bust was absolutely *suggested* by the bird — the bust of *Pallas* being chosen, first, as most in keeping with the scholarship of the lover, and, secondly, for the sonorosity of the word *Pallas* itself."

7. When Poe had resolved upon the refrain, he had to decide upon the character of the word to be so used. That it must be sonorous, and susceptible of protracted emphasis, admitted no doubt; "and" — thus continues the veracious narrative — "these considerations inevitably led me to the long *o* as the most sonorous vowel, in connection with *r* as the most producible consonant.

"The sound of the *refrain* being thus determined, it became necessary to select a word embodying this sound, and at the same time in the fullest possible keeping with that melancholy which I had predetermined as the tone of the poem. In such a search it would have been absolutely impossible to overlook the word 'Nevermore.' In fact, it was the very first which presented itself."

The next *desideratum* was a pretext for the continuous use of the one word "nevermore." Its monotonous use by a *human* being would not, he thought, be readily reconciled with the exercise of reason. "Here, then, immediately arose the idea of a *non-reasoning* creature capable of speech; and, very naturally, a parrot, in the first instance, suggested itself, but was superseded forthwith by a Raven, as equally capable of speech, and infinitely more in keeping with the intended *tone*."

8. "I had now to combine the two ideas, of a lover lamenting his deceased mistress, and a Raven continuously repeating the word 'Nevermore.' . . . And here it was that I saw at once the opportunity afforded for the effect on which I had been depending — that is to say, the effect of the *variation of application*. I saw that I could make the first query propounded by the lover — the first query, to which the Raven should reply 'Nevermore' — a commonplace one — the second less so, — the third still less, and so on — until at length the lover, startled from his original *nonchalance* by the melancholy character of the word itself — by its frequent repetition — and by a consideration of the ominous reputation of the fowl that uttered it — is at length excited to superstition, and wildly propounds queries of a far different character, — queries whose solution he has passionately at heart — propounds them half in superstition and half in that species of despair which delights in self-torture — propounds them not altogether because he believes in the prophetic or demoniac character of the bird (which, reason assures him, is merely repeating a lesson learned by rote), but because he experiences a frenzied pleasure in so modelling his questions as to receive from the expected 'Nevermore' the most delicious because the most intolerable of sorrow. Perceiving the opportunity thus afforded me — or, more strictly, thus forced upon me in the progress of the construction — I first established in mind the climax, or concluding query — that query to which

'Nevermore' should be in the last place an answer — that query in reply to which this word 'Nevermore' should involve the utmost conceivable amount of sorrow and despair.

"Here then the poem may be said to have its beginning — at the end, where all works of art should begin, for it was here, at this point of my pre-considerations, that I first put pen to paper in the composition of the stanza: —

"‘Prophet,’ said I, ‘thing of evil! prophet still, if bird or devil!

By that heaven that bends above us — by that God we both adore,’ etc.

"I composed this stanza at this point, first, that, by establishing the climax, I might the better vary and graduate, as regards seriousness and importance, the preceding queries of the lover; and secondly, that I might definitely settle the rhythm, the metre, and the length and general arrangement of the stanza — as well as graduate the stanzas which were to precede, so that none of them might surpass this in rhythmical effect."

9. "It will be observed that the words 'from out my heart' involve the first metaphorical expression in the poem. They, with the answer 'Nevermore,' dispose the mind to seek a moral in all that has been previously narrated. The reader begins now to regard the Raven as emblematical — but it is not until the very last line of the very last stanza that the intention of making him emblematical of *Mournful and Never-ending Remembrance* is permitted distinctly to be seen."

10. It is almost ungrateful, at this point, to indicate any slight defects in the poem, such as the wretched rhymes in the sixth stanza, and the impossibility that the Raven's shadow should fall on the floor, as described in the last stanza.

After reading the analysis Poe has given us of "The Raven," it is not surprising to learn that he regarded it as "the greatest poem that ever was written."

### THE MASQUE OF THE RED DEATH

For a characterization of Poe's genius as a writer of tales, see the preceding sketch.

"The Masque of the Red Death" is one of his shorter tales. It illustrates both his constructive genius and his method in prose fiction. Like all his better work, it is wrought out with great care.

In writing his stories, he always began, as he tells us, with the consideration of an *effect* to be produced; and he then contrived both incident and tone to that one end. Speaking of the literary artist, he says: "If his very initial sentence tend not to the outbringing of this effect, then he has failed in his first step. In the whole composition there should be no word written of which the tendency, direct or indirect, is not to the one pre-established design.

And by such means, with such care and skill, a picture is at length painted which leaves in the mind of him who contemplates it with a kindred art, a sense of the fullest satisfaction." Without a clear understanding of Poe's principles and methods, as thus set forth, we shall not be able fully to appreciate the admirable art and genius of his work.

1. This is the French form of the word, now commonly Anglicized into *mask*.
2. This disease seems to be one of Poe's inventions.
3. Now spelled *avatar* = incarnation. In Sanscrit the word means *a descent*, and is specially applied to the descent upon earth of a Hindu deity in a manifest shape.
4. *Pest ban* = plague curse or interdiction.
5. *Castellated abbeys* seem to be a reminiscence of Poe's sojourn in England. Such reminiscences frequently occur in his writings.
6. Explain *ingress* and *egress* etymologically.
7. Discriminate between *contagion* and *infection*. What is the etymology of *contagion*?
8. Explain *improvisatori*. From what language?
9. Exact force of *vista*.
10. Etymology and force of *bizarre*. It will be remembered that Poe was a good French scholar — a fact which he took no pains to conceal. He sometimes quoted German and Hebrew — languages that he did not understand.
11. Etymology and meaning of *candelabrum*.
12. What is a *brazier*?
13. What is *ebony*, and why so called?
14. *Decora* = outward proprieties.
15. "*Hernani*" is one of Victor Hugo's most popular dramas in the romantic style. It contains several fantastic scenes.
16. In 1840 Poe published in Philadelphia a collection of his prose fiction with the title, "Tales of the Grotesque and Arabesque." It is regarded as a happily descriptive title. Can you paraphrase it, and bring out his idea?
17. Explain the phrase *out-Heroded Herod*. The reference is to Herod the Great, who obtained the title "King of Judea," 40 B.C. His long reign was stained with cruelties and atrocities of a character almost without parallel in history. "The lightest shade of suspicion sufficed as the ground for his wholesale butcheries. Of these, the one with which we are best acquainted is the slaughter of the infants at Bethlehem."
18. *Mummers* = maskers.

## XI

## SELECTION FROM EMERSON

ART<sup>1</sup>

BECAUSE the soul is progressive, it never quite repeats itself, but in every act attempts the production of a new and fairer whole. This appears in works both of the useful and fine arts,<sup>2</sup> if we employ the popular distinction of works according to their aim either at use or beauty. Thus in our fine arts, not imitation, but creation,<sup>3</sup> is the aim. In landscapes the painter should give the suggestion of a fairer creation than we know. The details, the prose of nature, he should omit, and give us only the spirit and splendor. He should know that the landscape has beauty for his eye because it expresses a thought which is to him good: and this because the same power which sees through his eyes is seen in that spectacle;<sup>4</sup> and he will come to value the expression of nature and not nature itself, and so exalt in his copy the features that please him. He will give the gloom of gloom and the sunshine of sunshine. In a portrait he must inscribe the character and not the features, and must esteem the man who sits to him as himself only an imperfect picture or likeness of the aspiring original within.

What is that abridgment and selection we observe in all spiritual activity but itself the creative impulse? for it is the inlet of that higher illumination which teaches to convey a larger sense by simpler symbols. What is a man but nature's finer success in self-explication?<sup>5</sup> What is a man but a finer and compacter landscape than the horizon figures; nature's eclecticism? and what is his speech, his love of painting, love of nature, but a still finer success? all the weary miles and tons of space and bulk left out, and the spirit or moral of it contracted into a musical word, or the most cunning stroke of the pencil<sup>6</sup>?

But the artist must employ the symbols in use in his day and nation to convey his enlarged sense to his fellow-men. Thus the new in art is always formed out of the old. The Genius of the Hour always sets his ineffaceable seal on the work and gives it an inexpressible charm

for the imagination. As far as the spiritual character of the period overpowers the artist and finds expression in his work, so far it will always retain a certain grandeur, and will represent to future beholders the Unknown, the Inevitable, the Divine.<sup>7</sup> No man can quite exclude this element of Necessity from his labor. No man can quite emancipate himself from his age and country, or produce a model in which the education, the religion, the politics, usages, and arts of his times shall have no share. Though he were never so original, never so wilful and fantastic, he cannot wipe out of his work every trace of the thoughts amidst which it grew. The very avoidance betrays the usage he avoids. Above his will and out of his sight he is necessitated by the air he breathes and the idea on which he and his contemporaries live and toil, to share the manner of his times, without knowing what that manner is. Now that which is inevitable in the work has a higher charm than individual talent can ever give, inasmuch as the artist's pen or chisel seems to have been held and guided by a gigantic hand<sup>8</sup> to inscribe a line in the history of the human race. This circumstance gives a value to the Egyptian hieroglyphics, to the Indian, Chinese and Mexican idols, however gross and shapeless. They denote the height of the human soul in that hour, and were not fantastic, but sprung from a necessity as deep as the world. Shall I now add that the whole extant product of the plastic arts has herein its highest value, *as history*: as a stroke drawn in the portrait of that fate,<sup>9</sup> perfect and beautiful, according to whose ordinations all beings advance to their beatitude?

Thus, historically viewed, it has been the office of art to educate the perception of beauty. We are immersed in beauty,<sup>10</sup> but our eyes have no clear vision. It needs, by the exhibition of single traits, to assist and lead the dormant taste. We carve and paint, or we behold what is carved and painted, as students of the mystery of Form. The virtue of art lies in detachment, in sequestering one object from the embarrassing variety. Until one thing comes out from the connection of things, there can be enjoyment, contemplation, but no thought. Our happiness and unhappiness are unproductive. The infant lies in a pleasing trance, but his individual character and his practical power depend on his daily progress in the separation of things, and dealing with one at a time. Love and all the passions concentrate all existence around a single form. It is the habit of certain minds to give an all-excluding fulness to the object, the thought, the word they

alight upon, and to make that for the time the deputy of the world. These are the artists, the orators, the leaders of society. The power to detach, and to magnify by detaching, is the essence of rhetoric in the hands of the orator and the poet. This rhetoric, or power to fix the momentary eminency of an object, so remarkable in Burke, in Byron, in Carlyle,—the painter and sculptor exhibit in color and in stone. The power depends on the depth of the artist's insight of that object he contemplates. For every object has its roots in central nature,<sup>11</sup> and may of course be so exhibited to us to represent the world. Therefore each work of genius is the tyrant of the hour, and concentrates attention on itself. For the time, it is the only thing worth naming, to do that,—be it a sonnet, an opera, a landscape, a statue, an oration, the plan of a temple, of a campaign, or of a voyage of discovery. Presently we pass to some other object, which rounds itself into a whole as did the first; for example, a well-laid garden: and nothing seems worth doing but the laying out of gardens. I should think fire the best thing in the world, if I were not acquainted with air, and water, and earth. For it is the right and property of all natural objects, of all genuine talents, of all native properties whatsoever, to be for their moment the top of the world. A squirrel leaping from bough to bough and making the wood but one wide tree for his pleasure, fills the eye not less than a lion, is beautiful, self-sufficing, and stands then and there for nature.<sup>12</sup> A good ballad draws my ear and heart whilst I listen, as much as an epic has done before. A dog, drawn by a master, or a litter of pigs, satisfies and is a reality not less than the frescoes of Angelo. From this succession of excellent objects learn we at last the immensity of the world, the opulence of human nature, which can run out to infinitude in any direction. But I also learn that what astonished and fascinated me in the first work, astonished me in the second work also; that excellence of all things is one.

The office of painting and sculpture seems to be merely initial. The best pictures can easily tell us their last secret. The best pictures are rude draughts of a few of the miraculous dots and lines and dyes which make up the ever-changing "landscape with figures" amidst which we dwell. Painting seems to be to the eye what dancing is to the limbs. When that has educated the frame to self-possession, to nimbleness, to grace, the steps of the dancing-master are better forgotten; so painting teaches me the splendor of color and the expression

of form, and as I see many pictures and higher genius in the art, I see the boundless opulence of the pencil, the indifference in which the artist stands free to choose out of the possible forms. If he can draw every thing, why draw any thing? and then is my eye opened to the eternal picture which nature paints in the street, with moving men and children, beggars and fine ladies, draped in red and green and blue and gray; long-haired, grizzled, white-faced, black-faced, wrinkled, giant, dwarf, expanded, elfish, — capped and based by heaven, earth, and sea.<sup>13</sup>

A gallery of sculpture teaches more austerely the same lesson. As picture teaches the coloring, so sculpture the anatomy of form. When I have seen fine statues and afterwards enter a public assembly, I understand well what he meant who said, "When I have been reading Homer, all men look like giants." I too see that painting and sculpture are gymnastics of the eye, training to the niceties and curiosities of its function. There is no statue like this living man, with his infinite advantage over all ideal sculpture, of perpetual variety. What a gallery of art have I here! No mannerist made these varied groups and diverse original single figures. Here is the artist himself improvising, grim and glad, at his block. Now one thought strikes him, now another, and with each moment he alters the whole air, attitude, and expression of his clay. Away with your nonsense of oil and easels, of marble and chisels; except to open your eyes to the witchcraft of eternal art, they are hypocritical rubbish.<sup>14</sup>

The reference of all production at last to an aboriginal Power explains the traits common to all works of the highest art, that they are universally intelligible; that they restore to us the simplest states of mind; and are religious. Since what skill is therein shown is the reappearance of the original soul, a jet of pure light, it should produce a similar impression to that made by natural objects. In happy hours, nature appears to us one with art; art perfected, — the work of genius. And the individual in whom simple tastes and susceptibility to all the great human influences overpower the accidents of a local and special culture, is the best critic of art.<sup>15</sup> Though we travel the world over to find the beautiful, we must carry it with us, or we find it not. The best of beauty is a finer charm than skill in surfaces, in outlines, or rules of art can ever teach, namely, a radiation from the work of art, of human character,<sup>16</sup> — a wonderful expression through stone, or canvas,

or musical sound, of the deepest and simplest attributes of our nature, and therefore most intelligible at last to those souls which have these attributes. In the sculptures of the Greeks, in the masonry of the Romans, and in the pictures of the Tuscan and Venetian masters, the highest charm is the universal language they speak. A confession of moral nature, of purity, love, and hope, breathes from them all. That which we carry to them, the same we bring back more fairly illustrated in the memory. The traveller who visits the Vatican and passes from chamber to chamber through galleries of statues, vases, sarcophagi, and candelabra, through all forms of beauty cut in the richest materials, is in danger of forgetting the simplicity of the principles out of which they all sprung, and that they had their origin from thoughts and laws in his own breast. He studies the technical rules on these wonderful remains, but forgets that these works were not always thus constellated; that they are the contributions of many ages and many countries; that each came out of the solitary workshop of one artist, who toiled perhaps in ignorance of the existence of other sculpture, created his work without other model save life, household life, and the sweet and smart of personal relations, of beating hearts, and meeting eyes; of poverty and necessity and hope and fear. These were his inspirations, and these are the effects he carries home to your heart and mind. In proportion to his force, the artist will find in his work an outlet for his proper character. He must not be in any manner pinched or hindered by his material, but through his necessity of imparting himself the adamant will be wax in his hands, and will allow an adequate communication of himself, in his full stature and proportion. Not a conventional nature and culture need he cumber himself with, nor ask what is the mode in Rome or in Paris, but that house and weather and manner of living which poverty and the fate of birth have made at once so odious and so dear, in the gray unpainted wood cabin, on the corner of a New Hampshire farm, or in the log hut of the backwoods, or in the narrow lodging where he has endured the constraints and seeming of a city poverty,—will serve as well as any other condition as the symbol of a thought which pours itself indifferently through all.<sup>17</sup>

I remember when in my younger days I had heard of the wonders of Italian painting, I fancied the great pictures would be great strangers; some surprising combination of color and form; a foreign wonder, barbaric pearl and gold, like the spontoons and standards of the

militia, which plays such pranks in the eyes and imaginations of schoolboys. I was to see and acquire I knew not what. When I came at last to Rome and saw with eyes the pictures, I found that genius left to novices the gay and fantastic and ostentatious, and itself pierced directly to the simple and true; that it was familiar and sincere; that it was the old, eternal fact I had met already in so many forms; unto which I had lived; that it was the plain *you and me* I knew so well, — had left at home in so many conversations. I had the same experience already in a church at Naples. There I saw that nothing was changed with me but the place, and said to myself, — ‘Thou foolish child, hast thou come out hither, over four thousand miles of salt water, to find that which was perfect to thee there at home?’ — that fact I saw again in the Academmia at Naples, in the chambers of sculpture, and yet again when I came to Rome and to the paintings of Raphael, Angelo, Sacchi, Titian, and Leonardo da Vinci. “What, old mole! workest thou in the earth so fast?” It had travelled by my side: that which I fancied I had left in Boston was here in the Vatican, and again at Milan and at Paris, and made all travelling ridiculous as a treadmill.<sup>18</sup> I now require this of all pictures, that they domesticate me, not that they dazzle me. Pictures must not be too picturesque. Nothing astonishes men so much as common sense and plain dealing. All great actions have been simple, and all great pictures are.

The Transfiguration, by Raphael, is an eminent example of this peculiar merit. A calm benignant beauty shines over all this picture, and goes directly to the heart. It seems almost to call you by name. The sweet and sublime face of Jesus is beyond praise, yet how it disappoints all florid expectations! This familiar, simple, home-speaking countenance is as if one should meet a friend. The knowledge of picture-dealers has its value, but listen not to their criticism when your heart is touched by genius. It was not painted for them, it was painted for you; for such as had eyes capable of being touched by simplicity and lofty emotions.

Yet when we have said all our fine things about the arts, we must end with a frank confession that the arts, as we know them, are but initial. Our best praise is given to what they aimed and promised, not to the actual result. He has conceived meanly of the resources of man, who believes that the best age of production is past. The real value of the Iliad or the Transfiguration is as signs of power; billows

or ripples they are of the great stream of tendency; tokens of the everlasting effort to produce, which even in its worst estate the soul betrays. Art has not come to its maturity if it do not put itself abreast with the most potent influences of the world, if it is not practical and moral, if it do not stand in connection with the conscience, if it do not make the poor and uncultivated feel that it addresses them with a voice of lofty cheer.<sup>19</sup> There is higher work for Art than the arts. They are abortive births of an imperfect or vitiated instinct. Art is the need to create; but in its essence, immense and universal, it is impatient of working with lame or tired hands, and of making cripples and monsters, such as all pictures and statues are. Nothing less than the creation of man and nature is its end. A man should find in it an outlet for his whole energy. He may paint and carve only as long as he can do that. Art should exhilarate, and throw down the walls of circumstance on every side, awakening in the beholder the same sense of universal relation and power which the work evinced in the artist, and its highest effect is to make new artists.

Already History is old enough to witness the old age and disappearance of particular arts. The art of sculpture is long ago perished to any real effect. It was originally an useful art, a mode of writing, a savage's record of gratitude or devotion, and among a people possessed of a wonderful perception of form this childish carving was refined to the utmost splendor of effect. But it is the game of a rude and youthful people, and not the manly labor of a wise and spiritual nation. Under an oak-tree loaded with leaves and nuts, under a sky full of eternal eyes, I stand in a thoroughfare. Cut in the works of our plastic arts, and especially of sculpture, creation is driven into a corner. I cannot hide from myself that there is a certain appearance of paltriness, as of toys and the trumpery of a theatre, in sculpture. Nature transcends all our moods of thought, and its secret we do not yet find. But the gallery stands at the mercy of our moods, and there is a moment when it becomes frivolous. I do not wonder that Newton, with an attention habitually engaged on the paths of planets and suns, should have wondered what the Earl of Pembroke found to admire in "stone dolls." Sculpture may serve to teach the pupil how deep is the secret of form, how purely the spirit can translate its meanings into that eloquent dialect. But the statue will look cold and false before that new activity which needs to roll through all things, and is

impatient of counterfeits and things not alive. Picture and sculpture are the celebrations and festivities of form. But true art is never fixed, but always flowing. The sweetest music is not in the oratorio, but in the human voice when it speaks from its instant life tones of tenderness, truth, or courage. The oratorio has already lost its relation to the morning, to the sun, and the earth, but that persuading voice is in tune with these. All works of art should not be detached, but extempore performances. A great man is a new statue in every attitude and action. A beautiful woman is a picture which drives all beholders nobly mad. Life may be lyric or epic, as well as a poem or a romance.

A true announcement of the law of creation, if a man were found worthy to declare it, would carry art up into the kingdom of nature, and destroy its separate and contrasted existence.<sup>20</sup> The fountains of invention and beauty in modern society are all but dried up. A popular novel, a theatre, or a ballroom makes us feel that we are all paupers in the almshouse of this world, without dignity, without skill or industry. Art is as poor and low. The old tragic Necessity, which lowers on the brows even of the Venuses and the Cupids of the antique, and furnishes the sole apology for the intrusion of such anomalous figures into nature,—namely, that they were inevitable; that the artist was drunk with a passion for form which he could not resist, and which vented itself in these fine extravagances,—no longer dignifies the chisel or the pencil.<sup>21</sup> But the artist and the connoisseur now seek in art the exhibition of their talent, or an asylum from the evils of life. Men are not well pleased with the figure they make in their own imaginations, and they flee to art, and convey their better sense in an oratorio, a statue, or a picture. Art makes the same effort which a sensual prosperity makes; namely, to detach the beautiful from the useful, to do up the work as unavoidable, and, hating it, pass on to enjoyment. These solaces and compensations, this division of beauty from use, the laws of nature do not permit. As soon as beauty is sought, not from religion and love but for pleasure, it degrades the seeker. High beauty is no longer attainable by him in canvas or in stone, in sound, or in lyrical construction; an effeminate, prudent, sickly beauty, which is not beauty, is all that can be formed; for the hand can never execute anything higher than the character can inspire.

The art that thus separates is itself first separated. Art must not

be a superficial talent, but must begin farther back in man. Now men do not see nature to be beautiful, and they go to make a statue which shall be. They abhor men as tasteless, dull, and inconvertible, and console themselves with color-bags and blocks of marble. They reject life as prosaic, and create a death which they call poetic. They despatch the day's weary chores, and fly to voluptuous reveries. They eat and drink, that they may afterwards execute the ideal. Thus is art vilified; the name conveys to the mind its secondary and bad senses; it stands in the imagination as somewhat contrary to nature, and struck with death from the first. Would it not be better to begin higher up, — to serve the ideal before they eat and drink; to serve the ideal in eating and drinking, in drawing the breath, and in the functions of life? Beauty must come back to the useful arts, and the distinction between the fine and the useful arts be forgotten. If history were truly told, if life were nobly spent, it would be no longer easy or possible to distinguish the one from the other. In nature, all is useful, all is beautiful. It is therefore beautiful because it is alive, moving, reproductive; it is therefore useful because it is symmetrical and fair. Beauty will not come at the call of a legislature, nor will it repeat in England or America its history in Greece. It will come, as always, unannounced, and spring up between the feet of brave and earnest men.<sup>22</sup> It is in vain that we look for genius to reiterate its miracles in the old arts; it is its instinct to find beauty and holiness in new and necessary facts, in the field and roadside, in the shop and mill. Proceeding from a religious heart it will raise to a divine use the railroad, the insurance office, the joint-stock company; our law, our primary assemblies, our commerce, the galvanic battery, the electric jar, the prism, and the chemist's retort; in which we seek now only an economical use. Is not the selfish and even cruel aspect which belongs to our great mechanical works, to mills, railways, and machinery, the effect of the mercenary impulses which these works obey? When its errands are noble and adequate, a steamboat bridging the Atlantic between Old and New England, and arriving at its ports with the punctuality of a planet, — is a step of man into harmony with nature. The boat at St. Petersburg, which plies along the Lena by magnetism, needs little to make it sublime. When science is learned in love, and its powers are wielded by love, they will appear the supplements and continuations of the material creation.

## NOTES TO EMERSON

THE essay on "Art" is taken from the first volume of "Essays." For a general introduction, read the preceding sketch. A more exact title would be "Some Thoughts on Art." In "Society and Solitude" Emerson published a second essay on "Art," from which most of the following notes are taken.

1. The following are Emerson's definitions of art: "The conscious utterance of thought, by speech or action, to any end, is Art." "Art is the spirit's voluntary use and combination of things to serve its end." "Art, universally, is the spirit creative."

2. "The useful arts comprehend not only those that lie next to instinct, as agriculture, building, weaving, etc., but also navigation, practical chemistry, and the construction of all the grand and delicate tools and instruments by which man serves himself; as language, the watch, the ship, the decimal cipher and also the sciences, as far as they are made serviceable to political economy."

"Music, Eloquence, Poetry, Painting, Sculpture, Architecture. This is a rough enumeration of the Fine Arts."

3. "The facts of nature, to possess a serious interest for us upon canvas, require to be heated with poetic fire, transfused, and newly wrought in the crucible of the painter's mind." — VAN DYKE, *Art for Art's Sake*.

4. Here we have Emerson's idealism: "There is but one Reason. The mind that made the world is not one mind, but *the* mind. Every man is an inlet to the same, and to all of the same." All nature, as a manifestation of the infinite Spirit, is full of meaning.

5. This means that man is the crowning point, toward which nature has been climbing through all lower beings, whether animate or inanimate.

6. The fine arts are the summit of man's attainment, as he himself is the summit of nature's attainment.

7. "The Gothic cathedrals were built when the builder and the priest and the people were overpowered by their faith. Love and fear laid every stone. The Madonnas of Raphael and Titian were made to be worshipped." In "The Problem" the same idea is beautifully expressed: —

"The hand that rounded Peter's dome  
And groined the aisles of Christian Rome  
Wrought in a sad sincerity;  
Himself from God he could not free;  
He builded better than he knew: —  
The conscious stone to beauty grew."

8. This, of course, is the universal Spirit, which pervades and moves all things; whose gradual unfolding in nature is the source of all history.

9. Emerson means by fate "the invincible order and unity of the world of spirit, that its methods are perfect and invariable; that justice can never be violated; that the truth is always the same, and always faithful to itself." — COOKE.

10. "Beauty in its largest and profoundest sense is one expression for the universe; God in the all-fair. Truth and goodness and beauty are but different faces of the same All. But beauty in nature is not ultimate. It is the herald of inward and eternal beauty."

11. As a product of the universal Spirit, whose character is reflected alike in great and small. "The true doctrine of the omnipresence is, that God reappears with all his parts in every moss and cobweb. The value of the universe contrives to throw itself into every point." In "Blight" Emerson says: —

"If I know  
Only the herbs and simples of the wood,

. . . .  
O, that were much, and I could be a part  
Of the round day, related to the sun  
And planted world."

Compare Tennyson's —

"Flower in the crannied wall."

12. Similarly in Emerson's "Fable": —

"The mountain and the squirrel  
Had a quarrel,  
And the former called the latter 'Little Prig,'  
Bun replied,  
'You are doubtless very big;  
But all sorts of things and weather  
Must be taken in together,  
To make up a year,  
And a sphere.  
And I think it no disgrace  
To occupy my place.  
If I'm not so large as you,  
You are not so small as I,  
And not half so spry.  
I'll not deny you make  
A very pretty squirrel track;

Talents differ; all is well and wisely put;  
 If I cannot carry forests on my back,  
 Neither can you crack a nut.””

13. “ “Tis the privilege of Art  
 Thus to play its cheerful part,  
 Man on earth to acclimate  
 And bend the exile to his fate,  
 And, moulded of one element  
 With the days and firmament,  
 Teach him on these stairs to climb,  
 And live on even terms with Time;  
 Whilst upper life the slender rill  
 Of human sense doth overfill.””

14. The highest end of human art is to teach man to appreciate the beauty of “eternal art” in the world about us.

15. “The universal Soul is the alone creator of the useful and the beautiful; therefore, to make anything useful or beautiful, the individual must be submitted to the universal Mind.”

16. In the poem “Destiny,” Emerson says:—

“ You must add the untaught strain  
 That sheds beauty on the rose.  
 There is a melody born of melody,  
 Which melts the world into a sea.  
 Toil could never compass it;  
 Art its height could never hit;  
 But a music music-born  
 Well may Jove and Juno scorn.””

17. “To attain sublimity in painting, the thought must be so all-absorbing that it overawes form; it must carry us away with its sudden revelation of might; it must present to us the individual strength of its producer so vividly that in its contemplation we forget the forms of the picture.” — VAN DYKE, *Art for Art's Sake*.

18. In “The Day's Ration,” Emerson says:—

“ Why seek Italy,  
 Who cannot circumnavigate the sea  
 Of thoughts and things at home, but still adjourn  
 The nearest matters for a thousand days.””

19. "Proceeding from absolute mind, whose nature is goodness as much as truth, the great works are always attuned to moral nature. If the earth and sea conspire with virtue more than vice, — so do the masterpieces of art."

20. "We feel in seeing a noble building which rhymes well, as we do in hearing a perfect song, that it is spiritually organic; that it had a necessity in nature for being; was one of the possible forms in the Divine Mind, and is now only discovered and executed by the artist, not arbitrarily composed by him. And so every genuine work of art has as much reason for being as the earth and the sun." In "The Problem" we have the same thought again: —

"Earth proudly wears the Parthenon,  
As the best gem upon her zone,  
And Morning opes with haste her lids  
To gaze upon the Pyramids;  
O'er England's abbeys bends the sky,  
As on its friends, with kindred eye;  
For out of Thought's interior sphere  
These wonders rose to upper air;  
And Nature gladly gave them place,  
Adopted them into her race,  
And granted them an equal date  
With Andes and with Ararat."

21. "Arising out of eternal Reason, one and perfect, whatever is beautiful rests on the foundation of the necessary. Nothing is arbitrary, nothing is insulated in beauty. It depends forever on the necessary and the useful."

22. "Beauty, truth, and goodness are not obsolete; they spring eternal in the breast of man; they are as indigenous in Massachusetts as in Tuscany or the Isles of Greece. And that eternal Spirit, whose triple face they are, moulds from them forever, for his mortal child, images to remind him of the Infinite and Fair."

## XII

SELECTIONS FROM HAWTHORNE  
THE GRAY CHAMPION

THERE was once a time when New England groaned under the actual pressure of heavier wrongs than those threatened ones which brought on the Revolution. James II., the bigoted successor of Charles the Voluptuous, had annulled the charters<sup>1</sup> of all the colonies, and sent a harsh and unprincipled soldier to take away our liberties and endanger our religion. The administration of Sir Edmund Andros lacked scarcely a single characteristic of tyranny:<sup>2</sup> a Governor and Council, holding office from the King, and wholly independent of the country; laws made and taxes levied without concurrence of the people, immediate or by their representatives; the rights of private citizens violated, and the titles of all landed property declared void; the voice of complaint stifled by restrictions on the press; and, finally, disaffection overawed by the first band of mercenary troops that ever marched on our free soil. For two years our ancestors were kept in sullen submission, by that filial love which had invariably secured their allegiance to the mother-country, whether its head chanced to be a Parliament, Protector, or popish Monarch. Till these evil times, however, such allegiance had been merely nominal, and the colonists had ruled themselves, enjoying far more freedom than is even yet the privilege of the native subjects of Great Britain.

At length a rumor reached our shores that the Prince of Orange<sup>3</sup> had ventured on an enterprise the success of which would be the triumph of civil and religious rights and the salvation of New England. It was but a doubtful whisper; it might be false, or the attempt might fail; and, in either case, the man that stirred against King James would lose his head. Still the intelligence produced a marked effect. The people smiled mysteriously in the streets, and threw bold glances at their oppressors; while far and wide there was a subdued and silent

agitation, as if the slightest signal would rouse the whole land from its sluggish despondency. Aware of their danger, the rulers resolved to avert it by an imposing display of strength, and perhaps to confirm their despotism by yet harsher measures. One afternoon in April, 1689, Sir Edmund Andros and his favorite councillors, being warm with wine, assembled the red-coats of the Governor's Guard, and made their appearance in the streets of Boston. The sun was near setting when the march commenced.<sup>4</sup>

The roll of the drum, at that unquiet crisis, seemed to go through the streets less as the martial music of the soldiers than as a muster-call to the inhabitants themselves. A multitude, by various avenues, assembled in King-street, which was destined to be the scene, nearly a century afterwards,<sup>5</sup> of another encounter between the troops of Britain and a people struggling against her tyranny. Though more than sixty years had elapsed since the Pilgrims came, this crowd of their descendants still showed the strong and sombre features of their character, perhaps more strikingly in such a stern emergency than on happier occasions. There were the sober garb, the general severity of mien, the gloomy but undismayed expression, the scriptural forms of speech, and the confidence in Heaven's blessing on a righteous cause, which would have marked a band of the original Puritans when threatened by some peril of the wilderness. Indeed, it was not yet time for the old spirit to be extinct; since there were men in the street, that day, who had worshipped there beneath the trees, before a house was reared to the God for whom they had become exiles. Old soldiers of the Parliament<sup>6</sup> were here too, smiling grimly at the thought that their aged arms might strike another blow against the house of Stuart. Here, also, were the veterans of King Philip's war,<sup>7</sup> who had burned villages and slaughtered young and old with pious fierceness, while the godly souls throughout the land were helping them with prayer. Several ministers were scattered among the crowd, which, unlike all other mobs, regarded them with such reverence, as if there were sanctity in their very garments. These holy men exerted their influence to quiet the people, but not to disperse them. Meantime, the purpose of the Governor, in disturbing the peace of the town at a period when the slightest commotion might throw the country into a ferment, was almost the universal subject of inquiry, and variously explained.

"Satan will strike his master-stroke presently," cried some, "be-

cause he knoweth that his time is short. All our godly pastors are to be dragged to prison! We shall see them at a Smithfield <sup>8</sup> fire in King-street!"

Hereupon, the people of each parish gathered closer round their minister, who looked calmly upwards and assumed a more apostolic dignity, as well befitted a candidate for the highest honor of his profession, the crown of martyrdom. It was actually fancied, at that period, that New England might have a John Rogers <sup>9</sup> of her own, to take the place of that worthy in the Primer.<sup>10</sup>

"The Pope of Rome has given orders for a new St. Bartholomew!" <sup>11</sup> cried others. "We are to be massacred, man and male child!"

Neither was this rumor wholly discredited, although the wiser class believed the Governor's object somewhat less atrocious. His predecessor under the old charter, Bradstreet,<sup>12</sup> a venerable companion of the first settlers, was known to be in town. There were grounds for conjecturing that Sir Edmund Andros intended, at once, to strike terror, by a parade of military force, and to confound the opposite faction, by possessing himself of their chief.

"Stand firm for the old charter Governor!" shouted the crowd, seizing upon the idea. "The good old Governor Bradstreet!"

While this cry was at the loudest, the people were surprised by the well-known figure of Governor Bradstreet himself, a patriarch of nearly ninety, who appeared on the elevated steps of a door, and, with characteristic mildness, besought them to submit to the constituted authorities.

"My children," concluded this venerable person, "do nothing rashly. Cry not aloud, but pray for the welfare of New England, and expect patiently what the Lord will do in this matter!"

The event was soon to be decided. All this time, the roll of the drum had been approaching through Cornhill, louder and deeper, till with reverberations from house to house, and the regular tramp of martial footsteps, it burst into the street. A double rank of soldiers made their appearance, occupying the whole breadth of the passage, with shouldered matchlocks,<sup>13</sup> and matches burning, so as to present a row of fires in the dusk. Their steady march was like the progress of a machine that would roll irresistibly over everything in its way. Next, moving slowly, with a confused clatter of hoofs on the pavement, rode a party of mounted gentlemen, the central figure being Sir Ed-

mund Andros, elderly, but erect and soldier-like. Those around him were his favorite councillors, and the bitterest foes of New England. At his right hand rode Edward Randolph, our arch-enemy, that "blasted wretch," as Cotton Mather calls him, who achieved the downfall of our ancient government, and was followed with a sensible curse, through life and to his grave. On the other side was Bullivant, scattering jests and mockery as he rode along. Dudley came behind, with a downcast look, dreading, as well he might, to meet the indignant gaze of the people, who beheld him, their only countryman by birth, among the oppressors of his native land. The captain of a frigate in the harbor, and two or three civil officers under the Crown, were also there. But the figure which most attracted the public eye, and stirred up the deepest feeling, was the Episcopal clergyman of King's Chapel, riding haughtily among the magistrates in his priestly vestments, the fitting representative of prelacy and persecution, the union of church and state, and all those abominations which had driven the Puritans to the wilderness.<sup>14</sup> Another guard of soldiers, in double rank, brought up the rear.

The whole scene was a picture of the condition of New England; and its moral, the deformity of any government that does not grow out of the nature of things and the character of the people. On one side, the religious multitude, with their sad visages and dark attire: and on the other, the group of despotic rulers, with the high-churchman in the midst, and here and there a crucifix at their bosoms, all magnificently clad, flushed with wine, proud of unjust authority, and scoffing at the universal groan. And the mercenary soldiers, waiting but the word to deluge the street with blood, showed the only means by which obedience could be secured.

"O Lord of Hosts," cried a voice among the crowd, "provide a Champion for thy people!"

This ejaculation was loudly uttered, and served as a herald's cry, to introduce a remarkable personage. The crowd had rolled back, and were now huddled together nearly at the extremity of the street, while the soldiers had advanced no more than a third of its length. The intervening space was empty — a paved solitude, between lofty edifices which threw almost a twilight shadow over it. Suddenly there was seen the figure of an ancient man, who seemed to have emerged from among the people, and was walking by himself along the centre of the

street, to confront the armed band. He wore the old Puritan dress, a dark cloak and a steeple-crowned hat, in the fashion of at least fifty years before, with a heavy sword upon his thigh, but a staff in his hand, to assist the tremulous gait of age.<sup>15</sup>

When at some distance from the multitude, the old man turned slowly round, displaying a face of antique majesty, rendered doubly venerable by the hoary beard that descended on his breast. He made a gesture at once of encouragement and warning, then turned again and resumed his way.

"Who is this gray patriarch?" asked the young men of their sires.

"Who is this venerable brother?" asked the old men among themselves.

But none could make reply. The fathers of the people, those of fourscore years and upwards, were disturbed, deeming it strange that they should forget one of such evident authority, whom they must have known in their early days, the associate of Winthrop,<sup>16</sup> and all the old Councillors, giving laws, and making prayers, and leading them against the savage. The elderly men ought to have remembered him, too, with locks as gray in their youth as their own were now. And the young! How could he have passed so utterly from their memories — that hoary sire, the relic of long-departed times, whose awful benediction had surely been bestowed on their uncovered heads in childhood?

"Whence did he come? What is his purpose? Who can this old man be?" whispered the wondering crowd.

Meanwhile, the venerable stranger, staff in hand, was pursuing his solitary walk along the centre of the street. As he drew near the advancing soldiers, and as the roll of their drum came full upon his ear, the old man raised himself to a loftier mien, while the decrepitude of age seemed to fall from his shoulders, leaving him in gray but unbroken dignity. Now he marched onward with a warrior's step, keeping time to the military music. Thus the aged form advanced on one side, and the whole parade of soldiers and magistrates on the other, till, when scarcely twenty yards remained between, the old man grasped his staff by the middle, and held it before him like a leader's truncheon.

"Stand!" cried he.

The eye, the face, and attitude of command; the solemn yet warlike peal of that voice, fit either to rule a host in the battle-field or be

raised to God in prayer, were irresistible. At the old man's word and outstretched arm, the roll of the drum was hushed at once, and the advancing line stood still. A tremulous enthusiasm seized upon the multitude. That stately form, combining the leader and the saint, so gray, so dimly seen, in such an ancient garb, could only belong to some old champion of the righteous cause, whom the oppressor's drum had summoned from his grave. They raised a shout of awe and exultation, and looked for the deliverance of New England.

The Governor, and the gentlemen of his party, perceiving themselves brought to an unexpected stand, rode hastily forward, as if they would have pressed their snorting and affrighted horses right against the hoary apparition. He, however, blenched not a step, but glancing his severe eye round the group, which half encompassed him, at last bent it sternly on Sir Edmund Andros. One would have thought that the dark old man was chief ruler there, and that the Governor and Council, with soldiers at their back, representing the whole power and authority of the Crown, had no alternative but obedience.

"What does this old fellow here?" cried Edward Randolph, fiercely. "On, Sir Edmund! Bid the soldiers forward, and give the dotard the same choice that you give all his countrymen — to stand aside or be trampled on!"

"Nay, nay, let us show respect to the good grandsire," said Bullivant, laughing. "See you not, he is some old round-headed dignitary who hath lain asleep these thirty years and knows nothing of the change of times? ~~Doubtless~~, he thinks to put us down with a proclamation in Old Noll's<sup>17</sup> name!"

"Are you mad, old man?" demanded Sir Edmund Andros, in loud and harsh tones. "How dare you stay the march of King James's Governor?"

"I have staid the march of a King himself, ere now," replied the gray figure, with stern composure.

"I am here, Sir Governor, because the cry of an oppressed people hath disturbed me in my secret place; and beseeching this favor earnestly of the Lord, it was vouchsafed me to appear once again on earth, in the good old cause of his saints. And what speak ye of James? There is no longer a popish tyrant on the throne of England, and by to-morrow noon his name shall be a by-word in this very street where ye would make it a word of terror. Back, thou that wast a Governor,

back! With this night thy power is ended — to-morrow, the prison! — back, lest I foretell the scaffold!"

The people had been drawing nearer and nearer, and drinking in the words of their champion, who spoke in accents long disused, like one unaccustomed to converse, except with the dead of many years ago. But his voice stirred their souls. They confronted the soldiers, not wholly without arms, and ready to convert the very stones of the street into deadly weapons. Sir Edmund Andros looked at the old man; then he cast his hard and cruel eye over the multitude, and beheld them burning with that lurid wrath, so difficult to kindle or to quench; and again he fixed his gaze on the aged form, which stood obscurely in an open space, where neither friend nor foe had thrust himself. What were his thoughts, he uttered no word which might discover. But whether the oppressor were overawed by the Gray Champion's look, or perceived his peril in the threatening attitude of the people, it is certain that he gave back, and ordered his soldiers to commence a slow and guarded retreat. Before another sunset, the Governor, and all that rode so proudly with him, were prisoners, and long ere it was known that James had abdicated, King William was proclaimed throughout New England.

But where was the Gray Champion? Some reported that when the troops had gone from King-street and the people were thronging tumultuously in their rear, Bradstreet, the aged Governor, was seen to embrace a form more aged than his own. Others soberly affirmed that while they marvelled at the venerable grandeur of his aspect, the old man had faded from their eyes, melting slowly into the hues of twilight, till, where he stood, there was an empty space. But all agreed that the hoary shape was gone. The men of that generation watched for his reappearance, in sunshine and in twilight, but never saw him more, nor knew when his funeral passed, nor where his gravestone was.

And who was the Gray Champion? Perhaps his name might be found in the records of that stern Court of Justice which passed a sentence too mighty for the age, but glorious in all after-times for its humbling lesson to the monarch and its high example to the subject. I have heard that whenever the descendants of the Puritans are to show the spirit of their sires, the old man appears again. When eighty years had passed, he walked once more in King street. Five years later, in the twilight of an April morning, he stood on the green, beside the

meeting-house, at Lexington, where now the obelisk of granite, with a slab of slate inlaid, commemorates the first fallen of the Revolution. And when our fathers were toiling at the breastwork on Bunker's Hill, all through that night the old warrior walked his rounds. Long, long may it be ere he comes again! His hour is one of darkness, and adversity, and peril. But should domestic tyranny oppress us, or the invader's step pollute our soil, still may the Gray Champion come: for he is the type of New England's hereditary spirit,<sup>18</sup> and his shadowy march, on the eve of danger, must ever be the pledge that New England's sons will vindicate their ancestry.

---

### FANCY'S SHOW-BOX

#### A MORALITY

WHAT is Guilt? A stain upon the soul. And it is a point of vast interest, whether the soul may contract such stains, in all their depth and flagrancy, from deeds which may have been plotted and resolved upon, but which, physically, have never had existence. Must the fleshly hand and visible frame of man set its seal to the evil designs of the soul, in order to give them their entire validity against the sinner? Or, while none but crimes perpetrated are cognizable before an earthly tribunal, will guilty thoughts — of which guilty deeds are no more than shadows — will these draw down the full weight of a condemning sentence in the supreme court of eternity? In the solitude of a midnight chamber, or in a desert, afar from men, or in a church, while the body is kneeling, the soul may pollute itself even with those crimes which we are accustomed to deem altogether carnal. If this be true, it is a fearful truth.

Let us illustrate the subject by an imaginary example. A venerable gentleman, one Mr. Smith, who had long been regarded as a pattern of moral excellence, was warming his aged blood with a glass or two of generous wine. His children being gone forth about their worldly business, and his grandchildren at school, he sat alone in a deep, luxurious armchair with his feet beneath a richly carved mahogany table. Some old people have a dread of solitude, and when better company may not be had, rejoice even to hear the quiet breathing of a babe, asleep upon the carpet. But Mr. Smith, whose silver hair was the

bright symbol of a life unstained, except by such spots as are inseparable from human nature, had no need of a babe to protect him by its purity, nor of a grown person to stand between him and his own soul. Nevertheless, either Manhood must converse with Age, or Womanhood must soothe him with gentle cares, or Infancy must sport around his chair, or his thoughts will stray into the misty region of the past, and the old man be chill and sad. Wine will not always cheer him. Such might have been the case with Mr. Smith, when, through the brilliant medium of his glass of old Madeira, he beheld three figures entering the room. These were Fancy, who had assumed the garb and aspect of an itinerant showman, with a box of pictures on her back; and Memory, in the likeness of a clerk, with a pen behind her ear, an ink-horn at her buttonhole, and a huge manuscript volume beneath her arm; and lastly, behind the other two, a person shrouded in a dusky mantle which concealed both face and form. But Mr. Smith had a shrewd idea that it was Conscience.

How kind of Fancy, Memory, and Conscience to visit the old gentleman, just as he was beginning to imagine that the wine had neither so bright a sparkle nor so excellent a flavor as when himself and the liquor were less aged! Through the dim length of the apartment, where crimson curtains muffled the glare of sunshine and created a rich obscurity, the three guests drew near the silver-haired old man. Memory, with a finger between the leaves of her huge volume, placed herself at his right hand. Conscience, with her face still hidden in the dusky mantle, took her station on the left, so as to be next his heart; while Fancy set down her picture-box upon the table, with the magnifying-glass convenient to his eye. We can sketch merely the outlines of two or three out of the many pictures which, at the pulling of a string, successively peopled the box with the semblances of living scenes.

One was a moonlight picture; in the background, a lowly dwelling; and in front, partly shadowed by a tree, yet besprinkled with flakes of radiance, two youthful figures, male and female. The young man stood with folded arms, a haughty smile upon his lip, and a gleam of triumph in his eye, as he glanced downward at the kneeling girl. She was almost prostrate at his feet, evidently sinking under a weight of shame and anguish, which hardly allowed her to lift her clasped hands in supplication. Her eyes she could not lift. But neither her agony, nor

the lovely features on which it was depicted, nor the slender grace of the form which it convulsed, appeared to soften the obduracy of the young man. He was the personification of triumphant scorn. Now, strange to say, as old Mr. Smith peeped through the magnifying-glass, which made the objects start out from the canvas with magical deception, he began to recognize the farm-house, the tree, and both the figures of the picture. The young man, in times long past, had often met his gaze within the looking-glass; the girl was the very image of his first love — his cottage-love — his Martha Burroughs! Mr. Smith was scandalized. “Oh, vile and slanderous picture!” he exclaims. “When have I triumphed over ruined innocence? Was not Martha wedded in her teens to David Tompkins, who won her girlish love, and long enjoyed her affection as a wife? And ever since his death, she has lived a reputable widow!” Meantime, Memory was turning over the leaves of her volume, rustling them to and fro with uncertain fingers, until, among the earlier pages, she found one which had reference to this picture. She reads it, close to the old gentleman’s ear; it is a record merely of sinful thought, which never was embodied in an act; but, while Memory is reading, Conscience unveils her face, and strikes a dagger to the heart of Mr. Smith. Though not a death-blow, the torture was extreme.

The exhibition proceeded. One after another, Fancy displayed her pictures, all of which appeared to have been painted by some malicious artist, on purpose to vex Mr. Smith. Not a shadow of proof could have been adduced, in any earthly court, that he was guilty of the slightest of those sins which were thus made to stare him in the face. In one scene, there was a table set out, with several bottles, and glasses half filled with wine, which threw back the dull ray of an expiring lamp. There had been mirth and revelry, until the hand of the clock stood just at midnight, when Murder stepped between the boon companions. A young man had fallen on the floor, and lay stone dead, with a ghastly wound crushed into his temple, while over him, with a delirium of mingled rage and horror in his countenance, stood the youthful likeness of Mr. Smith. The murdered youth wore the features of Edward Spencer! “What does this rascal of a painter mean?” cries Mr. Smith, provoked beyond all patience. “Edward Spencer was my earliest and dearest friend, true to me as I to him, through more than half a century. Neither I, nor any other, ever

murdered him. Was he not alive within five years, and did he not, in token of our long friendship, bequeath me his gold-headed cane, and a mourning ring?" Again had Memory been turning over her volume, and fixed at length upon so confused a page, that she surely must have scribbled it when she was tipsy. The purport was, however, that, while Mr. Smith and Edward Spencer were heating their young blood with wine, a quarrel had flashed up between them, and Mr. Smith, in deadly wrath, had flung a bottle at Spencer's head. True, it missed its aim, and merely smashed a looking-glass; and the next morning, when the incident was imperfectly remembered, they had shaken hands with a hearty laugh. Yet, again, while Memory was reading, Conscience unveiled her face, struck a dagger to the heart of Mr. Smith, and quelled his remonstrance with her iron frown. The pain was quite excruciating.

Some of the pictures had been painted with so doubtful a touch, and in colors so faint and pale, that the subjects could barely be conjectured. A dull, semi-transparent mist had been thrown over the surface of the canvas, into which the figures seemed to vanish, while the eye sought most earnestly to fix them. But in every scene, however dubiously portrayed, Mr. Smith was invariably haunted by his own lineaments, at various ages, as in a dusty mirror. After poring several minutes over one of these blurred and almost indistinguishable pictures, he began to see that the painter had intended to represent him, now in the decline of life, as stripping the clothes from the backs of three half-starved children. "Really, this puzzles me!" quoth Mr. Smith, with the irony of conscious rectitude. "Asking pardon of the painter, I pronounce him a fool, as well as a scandalous knave. A man of my standing in the world, to be robbing little children of their clothes! Ridiculous!" But while he spoke, Memory had searched her fatal volume, and found a page, which, with her sad, calm voice, she poured into his ear. It was not altogether inapplicable to the misty scene. It told how Mr. Smith had been grievously tempted, by many devilish sophistries, on the ground of a legal quibble, to commence a lawsuit against three orphan children, joint heirs to a considerable estate. Fortunately, before he was quite decided, his claims had turned out nearly as devoid of law as of justice. As Memory ceased to read, Conscience again thrust aside her mantle, and would have struck her victim with the envenomed dagger, only that he strug-

gled, and clasped his hands before his heart. Even then, however, he sustained an ugly gash.

Why should we follow Fancy through the whole series of those awful pictures? Painted by an artist of wondrous power, and terrible acquaintance with the secret soul, they embodied the ghosts of all the never-perpetrated sins that had glided through the lifetime of Mr. Smith. And could such beings of cloudy fantasy, so near akin to nothingness, give valid evidence against him, at the day of judgment? Be that the case or not, there is reason to believe, that one truly penitential tear would have washed away each hateful picture, and left the canvas white as snow. But Mr. Smith, at a prick of Conscience too keen to be endured, bellowed aloud, with impatient agony, and suddenly discovered that his three guests were gone. There he sat alone, a silver-haired and highly venerated old man, in the rich gloom of the crimson-curtained room, with no box of pictures on the table, but only a decanter of most excellent Madeira. Yet his heart still seemed to fester with the venom of the dagger.

Nevertheless, the unfortunate old gentleman might have argued the matter with Conscience, and alleged many reasons wherefore she should not smite him so pitilessly. Were we to take up his cause, it should be somewhat in the following fashion. A scheme of guilt, till it be put in execution, greatly resembles a train of incidents in a projected tale. The latter, in order to produce a sense of reality in the reader's mind, must be conceived with such proportionate strength by the author as to seem, in the glow of fancy, more like truth, past, present, or to come, than purely fiction. The prospective sinner, on the other hand, weaves his plot of crime, but seldom or never feels a perfect certainty that it will be executed. There is a dreaminess diffused about his thoughts; in a dream, as it were, he strikes the death-blow into his victim's heart, and starts to find an indelible blood stain on his hand. Thus a novel-writer, or a dramatist, in creating a villain of romance, and fitting him with evil deeds, and the villain of actual life, in projecting crimes that will be perpetrated, may almost meet each other half-way between reality and fancy. It is not until the crime is accomplished that guilt clenches its gripe upon the guilty heart and claims it for its own. Then, and not before, sin is actually felt and acknowledged, and, if unaccompanied by repentance, grows a thousandfold more virulent by its self-consciousness. Be it consid-

ered, also, that men often overestimate their capacity for evil. At a distance, while its attendant circumstances do not press upon their notice, and its results are dimly seen, they can bear to contemplate it. They may take the steps which lead to crime, impelled by the same sort of mental action as in working out a mathematical problem, yet be powerless with compunction at the final moment. They knew not what deed it was that they deemed themselves resolved to do. In truth, there is no such thing in man's nature as a settled and full resolve, either for good or evil, except at the very moment of execution. Let us hope, therefore, that all the dreadful consequences of sin will not be incurred unless the act have set its seal upon the thought.

Yet, with the slight fancy-work which we have framed, some sad and awful truths are interwoven. Man must not disclaim his brotherhood, even with the guiltiest, since, though his hand be clean, his heart has surely been polluted by the flitting phantoms of iniquity. He must feel that when he shall knock at the gate of heaven, no semblance of an unspotted life can entitle him to entrance there. Penitence must kneel, and Mercy come from the footstool of the throne, or that golden gate will never open!

## NOTES TO HAWTHORNE

## THE GRAY CHAMPION

THIS and the following selection are taken from the first series of "Twice-Told Tales," published in 1837. The first story illustrates Hawthorne's fondness for New England themes, and his imaginative method of treating them; the second, his sense of human sin, and his manner of probing the heart. In both will be found his peculiar grace of style.

Of the "Twice-Told Tales" Hawthorne says, in a bit of self-criticism: "They have the pale tint of flowers that blossomed in too retired a shade,—the coolness of a meditative habit, which diffuses itself through the feeling and observation of every sketch. Instead of passion, there is sentiment; and, even in what purport to be pictures of actual life, we have allegory, not always so warmly dressed in its habiliments of flesh and blood, as to be taken into the reader's mind without a shiver."

1. This was done in 1686.
2. The colonists gave vent to their feelings by calling him "the tyrant of New England." For further illustrations of this paragraph, consult a good history.
3. The Prince of Orange, upon the invitation of a number of English statesmen, entered England with an army, and succeeded in dethroning James II. This movement is known in history as the Revolution of 1688.
4. This appearance seems to be an invention of Hawthorne's, in order to furnish occasion for the incidents that follow.
5. A reference, of course, to the "Boston Massacre," which took place March 5, 1770. "King-street" is now called State Street.
6. This refers to the Civil War in England, a struggle between the Parliament and Charles I (1642-1646), which resulted in the beheading of the king, Jan. 30, 1649.
7. This war between the colonists and the confederated Indians (1675-1676) was carried on with great fierceness and determination on both sides.
8. Smithfield was a locality in London, where a number of Puritans suffered martyrdom.
9. John Rogers was burned at Smithfield in 1555, the first martyr under the reign of "Bloody Mary." In 1537, under the name of John Matthew, he published "Matthew's Bible," a compilation from Coverdale's and Tyndale's versions.

10. This was the "New England Primer," which for a century and a half was the first book in religion and morals as well as in learning and literature.

11. For an account of the massacre of Protestants in Paris on St. Bartholomew's Day, Aug. 24, 1572, consult a good encyclopædia.

12. Simon Bradstreet was governor of Massachusetts in 1679-1686, and again in 1689-1692.

13. The matchlocks were fired by means of slow-burning match-cords which were lighted at one or both ends when carried into action.

14. To hold an Anglican service, Andros forcibly took possession of the Old South Meeting-house. This will explain the bitter feeling of the people.

15. According to an old tradition, when the town of Hadley was attacked in King Philip's War, and the settlers were irresolute for want of a leader, "a venerable man, unknown to all, appeared suddenly in the streets, took command of the people, gave military orders that led to the defeat of the Indians, and then disappeared as suddenly as he came. It was afterwards supposed that this mysterious person was William Goffe, who had been a general in Cromwell's army, and had been compelled to flee from England as a 'regicide' for having been one of the judges who sentenced Charles I to death." It was this mysterious appearance that Hawthorne here makes use of, changing the time and place of the event.

16. John Winthrop landed in Massachusetts in 1630, and served repeatedly as colonial governor.

17. "Old Noll" was a nickname of Oliver Cromwell.

18. It is characteristic of Hawthorne's genius, thus to make the Gray Champion symbolize New England independence and courage. This single stroke gives a deeper meaning to the entire story.

#### FANCY'S SHOW-BOX

This story, as we learn from Julian Hawthorne's excellent biography of his father, possesses a peculiar personal interest. It was suggested by a bitter experience. Hawthorne had been ensnared in the toils of a false and malicious woman, by whom he was induced to believe that a friend of his had grossly insulted her. In his sudden burst of indignation Hawthorne sent him a challenge. Fortunately, the friend in question was acquainted with the dangerous character of the woman; and after fully vindicating his innocence, and convincing Hawthorne of her perfidy, he generously demanded a renewal of their friendship. This, of course, was as generously granted.

Unfortunately, this was not the end of the matter. Shortly afterwards another friend of Hawthorne's, Cilley by name, received a challenge, which he was not bound by the so-called "code of honor" to accept. But while he was hesitating, some one said to him, "If Hawthorne was so ready to fight a

duel without stopping to ask questions, you certainly need not hesitate." Hawthorne was considered a model of honorable and manly conduct, and this argument was decisive. Cilley accepted the challenge, met his antagonist and was killed.

When Hawthorne learned these facts, he was smitten with remorse. He saw that it was Cilley's high esteem for him that led to his fatal decision. "Had I not sought to take the life of my friend," was the burden of his meditation, "this other friend would still be alive." And he felt as if he were almost as much responsible for his friend's death as the man that shot him.

It was under these circumstances that "*Fancy's Show-Box*" was written. "In it the question is discussed, whether the soul may contract the stains of guilt, in all their depth and flagrancy, from deeds which may have been plotted and resolved upon, but which physically have never had an existence. The conclusion is reached, that 'it is not until the crime is accomplished that guilt clinches its gripe upon the guilty heart and claims it for its own. . . . There is no such thing, in man's nature, as a settled and full resolve, either for good or evil, except at the very moment of execution.' Nevertheless, 'man must not disclaim his brotherhood with the guiltiest; since, though his hand be clean, his heart has surely been polluted by the flitting phantoms of iniquity. He must feel that, when he shall knock at the gate of Heaven, no semblance of an unspotted life can entitle him to entrance there. Penitence must kneel, and Mercy come from the footstool of the throne, or that golden gate will never open!' Those who wish to obtain more than a superficial glimpse into Hawthorne's heart cannot do better than to ponder every part of this little story."

## XIII

## SELECTIONS FROM LONGFELLOW

## A PSALM OF LIFE

TELL me not, in mournful numbers,  
    Life is but an empty dream! —  
For the soul is dead that slumbers,  
    And things are not what they seem.

Life is real! Life is earnest!  
    And the grave is not its goal;  
Dust thou art, to dust returnest,  
    Was not spoken of the soul.

Not enjoyment, and not sorrow,  
    Is our destined end or way;  
But to act, that each to-morrow  
    Finds us farther than to-day.

Art is long, and Time is fleeting,  
    And our hearts, though stout and brave,  
Still, like muffled drums, are beating  
    Funeral marches to the grave.

In the world's broad field of battle,  
    In the bivouac of Life,  
Be not like dumb, driven cattle!  
    Be a hero in the strife!

Trust no Future, howe'er pleasant!  
    Let the dead Past bury its dead!  
Act, — act in the living Present!  
    Heart within, and God o'erhead!

Lives of great men all remind us  
 We can make our lives sublime,  
 And, departing, leave behind us  
 Footprints on the sands of time ;

Footprints, that perhaps another,  
 Sailing o'er life's solemn main,  
 A forlorn and shipwrecked brother,  
 Seeing, shall take heart again.

Let us, then, be up and doing,  
 With a heart for any fate ;  
 Still achieving, still pursuing,  
 Learn to labor and to wait.

---

### FOOTSTEPS OF ANGELS

WHEN the hours of day are numbered,  
 And the voices of the night  
 Wake the better soul, that slumbered,  
 To a holy, calm delight ;

Ere the evening lamps are lighted,  
 And like phantoms grim and tall,  
 Shadows from the fitful firelight  
 Dance upon the parlor wall ;

Then the forms of the departed  
 Enter at the open door ;  
 The beloved, the true-hearted,  
 Come to visit me once more ;

He, the young and strong, who cherished  
 Noble longings for the strife,  
 By the roadside fell and perished,  
 Weary with the march of life !

They, the holy ones and weakly,  
 Who the cross of suffering bore,  
 Folded their pale hands so meekly,  
 Spake with us on earth no more !

And with them the Being Beauteous,  
 Who unto my youth was given,  
 More than all things else to love me,  
 And is now a saint in heaven.

With a slow and noiseless footstep  
 Comes that messenger divine,  
 Takes the vacant chair beside me,  
 Lays her gentle hand in mine.

And she sits and gazes at me  
 With those deep and tender eyes;  
 Like the stars, so still and saint-like,  
 Looking downward from the skies.

Uttered not, yet comprehended,  
 Is the spirit's voiceless prayer,  
 Soft rebukes, in blessings ended,  
 Breathing from her lips of air.

Oh, though oft depressed and lonely,  
 All my fears are laid aside,  
 If I but remember only  
 Such as these have lived and died.

### THE SKELETON IN ARMOR

“SPEAK ! speak ! thou fearful guest !  
 Who, with thy hollow breast  
 Still in rude armor drest,  
 Comest to daunt me !  
 Wrapt not in Eastern balms,  
 But with thy fleshless palms  
 Stretched, as if asking alms,  
 Why dost thou haunt me ?”

Then from those cavernous eyes  
 Pale flashes seemed to rise,  
 As when the Northern skies  
 Gleam in December ;

And, like the water's flow  
 Under December's snow,  
 Came a dull voice of woe  
 From the heart's chamber.

“I was a Viking old !  
 My deeds, though manifold,  
 No Skald <sup>1</sup> in song has told,  
 No Saga <sup>2</sup> taught thee !  
 Take heed, that in thy verse  
 Thou dost the tale rehearse,  
 Else dread a dead man's curse ;  
 For this I sought thee.

“Far in the Northern Land,  
 By the wild Baltic's strand,  
 I, with my childish hand,  
 Tamed the gerfalcon ;  
 And, with my skates fast-bound,  
 Skimmed the half-frozen Sound,<sup>3</sup>  
 That the poor whimpering hound  
 Trembled to walk on.

“Oft to his frozen lair  
 Tracked I the grisly bear,  
 While from my path the hare  
 Fled like a shadow ;  
 Oft through the forest dark  
 Followed the were-wolf's <sup>4</sup> bark,  
 Until the soaring lark  
 Sang from the meadow.

“But when I older grew,  
 Joining a corsair's crew,  
 O'er the dark sea I flew  
 With the marauders.  
 Wild was the life we led ;  
 Many the souls that sped,  
 Many the hearts that bled,  
 By our stern orders.

“Many a wassail-bout  
Wore the long Winter out ;  
Often our midnight shout  
Set the cocks crowing,  
As we the Berserk’s <sup>5</sup> tale  
Measured in cups of ale,  
Draining the oaken pail,  
Filled to o’erflowing.

“Once as I told in glee  
Tales of the stormy sea,  
Soft eyes did gaze on me,  
Burning yet tender ;  
And as the white stars shine  
On the dark Norway pine,  
On that dark heart of mine  
Fell their soft splendor.

“I wooed the blue-eyed maid,  
Yielding, yet half afraid,  
And in the forest’s shade  
Our vows were plighted.  
Under its loosened vest  
Fluttered her little breast,  
Like birds within their nest  
By the hawk frightened.

“Bright in her father’s hall  
Shields gleamed upon the wall,  
Loud sang the minstrels all,  
Chanting his glory ;  
When of old Hildebrand <sup>6</sup>  
I asked his daughter’s hand,  
Mute did the minstrels stand  
To hear my story.

“While the brown ale he quaffed,  
Loud then the champion laughed,  
And as the wind-gusts waft  
The sea-foam brightly,

So the loud laugh of scorn,  
Out of those lips unshorn,  
From the deep drinking-horn  
Blew the foam lightly.

“She was a Prince’s child,  
I but a Viking wild,  
And though she blushed and smiled,  
I was discarded !  
Should not the dove so white  
Follow the sea-mew’s flight,  
Why did they leave that night  
Her nest unguarded ?

“Scarce had I put to sea,  
Bearing the maid with me,  
Fairest of all was she  
Among the Norsemen !  
When on the white sea-strand,  
Waving his armèd hand,  
Saw we old Hildebrand,  
With twenty horsemen.

“Then launched they to the blast,  
Bent like a reed each mast,  
Yet we were gaining fast,  
When the wind failed us ;  
And with a sudden flaw  
Came round the gusty Skaw,<sup>7</sup>  
So that our foe we saw  
Laugh as he hailed us.

“And as to catch the gale  
Round veered the flapping sail,  
‘Death !’ was the helmsman’s hail,  
‘Death without quarter !’  
Mid-ships with iron keel  
Struck we her ribs of steel ;  
Down her black hulk did reel  
Through the black water !

“As with his wings aslant,  
Sails the fierce cormorant,  
Seeking some rocky haunt,  
With his prey laden, —  
So toward the open main,  
Beating to sea again,  
Through the wild hurricane,  
Bore I the maiden.

“Three weeks we westward bore,  
And when the storm was o'er,  
Cloud-like we saw the shore  
Stretching to leeward ;  
There for my lady's bower  
Built I the lofty tower,  
Which, to this very hour,  
Stands looking seaward.

“There lived we many years ;  
Time dried the maiden's tears ;  
She had forgot her fears,  
She was a mother ;  
Death closed her mild blue eyes,  
Under that tower she lies ;  
Ne'er shall the sun arise  
On such another !

“Still grew my bosom then,  
Still as a stagnant fen !  
Hateful to me were men,  
The sunlight hateful !  
In the vast forest here,  
Clad in my warlike gear,  
Fell I upon my spear,  
Oh, death was grateful !

“Thus, seamed with many scars,  
Bursting these prison bars,  
Up to its native stars  
My soul ascended !

There from the flowing bowl  
 Deep drinks the warrior's soul,  
*Skoal!*<sup>8</sup> to the Northland! *skoal!*"  
 Thus the tale ended.

---

### THE ARSENAL AT SPRINGFIELD

THIS is the Arsenal. From floor to ceiling,  
 Like a huge organ, rise the burnished arms;  
 But from their silent pipes no anthem pealing  
 Startles the villages with strange alarms.  
 Ah! what a sound will rise, how wild and dreary,  
 When the death-angel touches those swift keys!  
 What loud lament and dismal Miserere<sup>1</sup>  
 Will mingle with their awful symphonies!

I hear even now the infinite fierce chorus,  
 The cries of agony, the endless groan,  
 Which, through the ages that have gone before us,  
 In long reverberations reach our own.

On helm and harness rings the Saxon hammer,<sup>2</sup>  
 Through Cimbric<sup>3</sup> forest roars the Norseman's song,  
 And loud amid the universal clamor,  
 O'er distant deserts sounds the Tartar gong.

I hear the Florentine, who from his palace  
 Wheels out his battle-bell with dreadful din,  
 And Aztec priests upon their teocallis<sup>4</sup>  
 Beat the wild war-drums made of serpent's skin;  
 The tumult of each sacked and burning village;  
 The shout that every prayer for mercy drowns;  
 The soldier's revels in the midst of pillage;  
 The wail of famine in beleaguered towns;  
 The bursting shell, the gateway wrenched asunder,  
 The rattling musketry, the clashing blade;  
 And ever and anon, in tones of thunder  
 The diapason of the cannonade.

Is it, O man, with such discordant noises,  
 With such accursed instruments as these,  
 Thou drownest Nature's sweet and kindly voices,  
 And jarrest the celestial harmonies?

Were half the power that fills the world with terror,  
 Were half the wealth bestowed on camps and courts,  
 Given to redeem the human mind from error,  
 There were no need of arsenals and forts:

The warrior's name would be a name abhorred!  
 And every nation, that should lift again  
 Its hand against a brother, on its forehead  
 Would wear forevermore the curse of Cain! <sup>5</sup>

Down the dark future, through long generations,  
 The echoing sounds grow fainter and then cease;  
 And like a bell, with solemn, sweet vibrations,  
 I hear once more the voice of Christ say, "Peace!" <sup>6</sup>

Peace! and no longer from its brazen portals  
 The blast of War's great organ shakes the skies!  
 But beautiful as songs of the immortals,  
 The holy melodies of love arise.

### THE BUILDING OF THE SHIP

"BUILD me straight, O worthy Master!<sup>1</sup>  
 Staunch and strong, a goodly vessel,  
 That shall laugh at all disaster,  
 And with wave and whirlwind wrestle!"

The merchant's word  
 Delighted the Master heard;  
 For his heart was in his work, and the heart  
 Giveth grace unto every Art.  
 A quiet smile played round his lips,  
 As the eddies and dimples of the tide  
 Play round the bows of ships,  
 That steadily at anchor ride.

And with a voice that was full of glee,  
He answered, "Ere long we will launch  
A vessel as goodly, and strong, and staunch,  
As ever weathered a wintry sea!"  
And first with nicest skill and art,  
Perfect and finished in every part,  
A little model the Master wrought,  
Which should be to the larger plan  
What the child is to the man,  
Its counterpart in miniature;  
That with a hand more swift and sure  
The greater labor might be brought  
To answer to his inward thought.  
And as he labored, his mind ran o'er  
The various ships that were built of yore;  
And above them all, and strangest of all,  
Tower'd the Great Harry,<sup>2</sup> crank <sup>3</sup> and tall,  
Whose picture was hanging on the wall,  
With bows and stern raised high in air,  
And balconies hanging here and there,  
And signal lanterns and flags afloat,  
And eight round towers, like those that frown  
From some old castle, looking down  
Upon the drawbridge and the moat.  
And he said with a smile, "Our ship, I wis,  
Shall be of another form than this!"  
It was of another form, indeed;  
Built for freight, and yet for speed,  
A beautiful and gallant craft;  
Broad in the beam, that the stress of the blast,  
Pressing down upon sail and mast,  
Might not the sharp bows overwhelm;  
Broad in the beam, but sloping aft  
With graceful curve and slow degrees,  
That she might be docile to the helm,  
And that the currents of parted seas,  
Closing behind, with mighty force,  
Might aid and not impede her course.

In the ship-yard stood the Master,  
With the model of the vessel,  
That should laugh at all disaster,  
And with wave and whirlwind wrestle !

Covering many a rood of ground,  
Lay the timber piled around ;  
Timber of chestnut, and elm, and oak,  
And scattered here and there, with these,  
The knarred <sup>4</sup> and crooked cedar knees ;  
Brought from regions far away,  
From Pascagoula's <sup>5</sup> sunny bay,  
And the banks of the roaring Roanoke ! <sup>6</sup>  
Ah ! what a wondrous thing it is  
To note how many wheels of toil  
One thought, one word, can set in motion !  
There's not a ship that sails the ocean,  
But every climate, every soil,  
Must bring its tribute, great or small,  
And help to build the wooden wall !

The sun was rising o'er the sea,  
And long the level shadows lay,  
As if they, too, the beams would be  
Of some great airy argosy,  
Framed and launched in a single day.  
That silent architect, the sun,  
Had hewn and laid them every one,  
Ere the work of man was yet begun.  
Beside the Master, when he spoke,  
A youth, against an anchor leaning,  
Listened, to catch his slightest meaning.  
Only the long waves, as they broke  
In ripples on the pebbly beach,  
Interrupted the old man's speech.

Beautiful they were, in sooth,  
The old man and the fiery youth !

The old man, in whose busy brain  
Many a ship that sailed the main  
Was modelled o'er and o'er again ; —  
The fiery youth, who was to be  
The heir of his dexterity,  
The heir of his house, and his daughter's hand,  
When he had built and launched from land  
What the elder head had planned.

“Thus,” said he, “will we build this ship !  
Lay square the blocks upon the slip,<sup>7</sup>  
And follow well this plan of mine.  
Choose the timbers with greatest care ;  
Of all that is unsound beware ;  
For only what is sound and strong  
To this vessel shall belong.  
Cedar of Maine and Georgia pine  
Here together shall combine.  
A goodly frame, and a goodly fame,  
And the UNION be her name !  
For the day that gives her to the sea  
Shall give my daughter unto thee !”

The Master’s word  
Enraptured the young man heard ;  
And as he turned his face aside,  
With a look of joy and a thrill of pride,  
Standing before  
Her father’s door,  
He saw the form of his promised bride.  
The sun shone on her golden hair,  
And her cheek was glowing fresh and fair,  
With the breath of morn and the soft sea air  
Like a beauteous barge was she,  
Still at rest on the sandy beach,  
Just beyond the billow’s reach ;  
But he  
Was the restless, seething, stormy sea !  
Ah, how skilful grows the hand

That obeyeth Love's command !  
It is the heart, and not the brain,  
That to the highest doth attain.  
And he who followeth Love's behest  
Far excelleth all the rest !

Thus with the rising of the sun  
Was the noble task begun,  
And soon throughout the ship-yard's bounds  
Were heard the intermingled sounds  
Of axes and of mallets, plied  
With vigorous arms on every side ;  
Plied so deftly and so well,  
That, ere the shadows of evening fell,  
The keel <sup>8</sup> of oak for a noble ship,  
Was lying ready, and stretched along  
The blocks, well placed upon the slip.  
Happy, thrice happy, every one  
Who sees his labor well begun,  
And not perplexed and multiplied,  
By idly waiting for time and tide !

And when the hot, long day was o'er,  
The young man at the Master's door  
Sat with the maiden calm and still,  
And within the porch, a little more  
Removed beyond the evening chill,  
The father sat, and told them tales  
Of wrecks in the great September gales,  
Of pirates coasting the Spanish Main,  
And ships that never came back again,  
The chance and change of a sailor's life,  
Want and plenty, rest and strife,  
His roving fancy, like the wind,  
That nothing can stay and nothing can bind,  
And the magic charm of foreign lands,  
With shadows of palms, and shining sands,  
Where the tumbling surf,

O'er the coral reefs of Madagascar,  
Washes the feet of the swarthy Lascar,<sup>9</sup>  
As he lies alone and asleep on the turf.  
And the trembling maiden held her breath  
At the tales of that awful, pitiless sea,  
With all its terror and mystery,  
The dim, dark sea, so like unto Death,  
That divides and yet unites mankind !  
And whenever the old man paused, a gleam  
From the bowl of his pipe would awhile illumine  
The silent group in the twilight gloom,  
And thoughtful faces, as in a dream ;  
And for a moment one might mark  
What had been hidden by the dark,  
That the head of the maiden lay at rest,  
Tenderly, on the young man's breast !

Day by day the vessel grew,  
With timbers fastened strong and true,  
Stemson <sup>10</sup> and keelson and sternson-knee,  
Till, framed with perfect symmetry,  
A skeleton ship rose up to view !  
And around the bows and along the side  
The heavy hammers and mallets plied,  
Till after many a week, at length,  
Wonderful for form and strength,  
Sublime in its enormous bulk,  
Loomed aloft the shadowy hulk !  
And around it columns of smoke, upwreathing,  
Rose from the boiling, bubbling, seething  
Caldron, that glowed,  
And overflowed  
With the black tar, heated for the sheathing.  
And amid the clamors  
Of clattering hammers,  
He who listened heard now and then  
The song of the Master and his men : —

"Build me straight, O worthy Master,  
Staunch and strong, a goodly vessel,  
That shall laugh at all disaster,  
And with wave and whirlwind wrestle!"

With oaken brace and copper band,  
Lay the rudder on the sand  
That, like a thought, should have control  
Over the movement of the whole ;  
And near it the anchor, whose giant hand,  
Would reach down and grapple with the land,  
And immovable and fast  
Hold the great ship against the bellowing blast !  
And at the bows an image stood,  
By a cunning artist carved in wood,  
With robes of white, that far behind  
Seemed to be fluttering in the wind.  
It was not shaped in a classic mould,  
Not like a Nymph or Goddess of old,  
Or Naiad rising from the water,  
But modelled from the Master's daughter !  
On many a dreary and misty night,  
'Twill be seen by the rays of the signal light,  
Speeding along through the rain and the dark,  
Like a ghost in its snow-white sark,  
The pilot of some phantom bark,  
Guiding the vessel, in its flight,  
By a path none other knows aright !

Behold, at last,  
Each tall and tapering mast  
Is swung into its place ;  
Shrouds and stays  
Holding it firm and fast !

Long ago,  
In the deer-haunted forests of Maine,  
When upon mountain and plain  
Lay the snow,

They fell,— those lordly pines !  
Those grand, majestic pines !  
'Mid shouts and cheers  
The jaded steers,  
Panting beneath the goad,  
Dragged down the weary, winding road  
Those captive kings so straight and tall,  
To be shorn of their streaming hair,  
And naked and bare,  
To feel the stress and the strain  
Of the wind and the reeling main,  
Whose roar  
Would remind them forevermore  
Of their native forests they should not see again.

And everywhere  
The slender, graceful spars  
Poise aloft in the air,  
And at the mast-head,  
White, blue, and red,  
A flag unrolls the stripes and stars.  
Ah ! when the wanderer, lonely, friendless,  
In foreign harbors shall behold  
That flag unrolled,  
'Twill be as a friendly hand  
Stretched out from his native land,  
Filling his heart with memories sweet and endless !

All is finished ! and at length  
Has come the bridal day  
Of beauty and of strength.  
To-day the vessel shall be launched !  
With fleecy clouds the sky is blanched,  
And o'er the bay,  
Slowly, in all his splendors dight,  
The great sun rises to behold the sight.  
The ocean old,  
Centuries old,  
Strong as youth, and as uncontrolled,

Paces restless to and fro,  
Up and down the sands of gold.  
His beating heart is not at rest ;  
And far and wide,  
With ceaseless flow,  
His beard of snow  
Heaves with the heaving of his breast.  
He waits impatient for his bride.  
There she stands,  
With her foot upon the sands,  
Decked with flags and streamers gay,  
In honor of her marriage day,  
Her snow-white signals fluttering, blending,  
Round her like a veil descending,  
Ready to be  
The bride of the gray old sea.

On the deck another bride  
Is standing by her lover's side.  
Shadows from the flags and shrouds,  
Like the shadows cast by clouds,  
Broken by many a sudden fleck,  
Fall around them on the deck.

The prayer is said,  
The service is read,  
The joyous bridegroom bows his head ;  
And in tears the good old Master  
Shakes the brown hand of his son,  
Kisses his daughter's glowing cheek  
In silence, for he cannot speak,  
And ever faster  
Down his own the tears begin to run.  
The worthy pastor —  
The shepherd of that wandering flock,  
That has the vessel for its wold,  
That has the ocean for its fold,  
Leaping ever from rock to rock —  
Spake, with accents mild and clear,

Words of warning, words of cheer,  
But tedious to the bridegroom's ear.  
He knew the chart  
Of all the sailor's heart,  
All its pleasures and its griefs,  
All its shallows and rocky reefs,  
All those secret currents, that flow  
With such resistless undertow,  
And lift and drift, with terrible force,  
The will from its moorings and its course.  
Therefore he spake, and thus said he:—

"Like unto ships far off at sea,  
Outward or homeward bound, are we.  
Before, behind, and all around,  
Floats and swings the horizon's bound,  
Seems at its distant rim to rise  
And climb the crystal wall of the skies,  
And then again to turn and sink,  
As if we could slide from its outer brink.  
Ah! it is not the sea,  
It is not the sea that sinks and shelves,  
But ourselves  
That rock and rise  
With endless and uneasy motion,  
Now touching the very skies,  
Now sinking into the depths of ocean.  
Ah! if our souls but poise and swing  
Like the compass in its brazen ring,  
Ever level and ever true  
To the toil and the task we have to do,  
We shall sail securely, and safely reach  
The Fortunate Isles,<sup>11</sup> on whose shining beach  
The sights we see, and the sounds we hear,  
Will be those of joy and not of fear!"

Then the Master,  
With a gesture of command,  
Waved his hand;

And at the word,  
Loud and sudden there was heard,  
All around them and below,  
The sound of hammers, blow on blow,  
Knocking away the shores and spurs.  
And see! she stirs!  
She starts, — she moves, — she seems to feel  
The thrill of life along her keel,  
And, spurning with her foot the ground,  
With one exulting, joyous bound,  
She leaps into the ocean's arms!

And lo! from the assembled crowd  
There rose a shout, prolonged and loud,  
That to the ocean seemed to say,  
“Take her, O bridegroom, old and gray,  
Take her to thy protecting arms,  
With all her youth and all her charms!”

How beautiful she is! How fair  
She lies within those arms, that press  
Her form with many a soft caress  
Of tenderness and watchful care!  
Sail forth into the sea, O ship!  
Through wind and wave, right onward steer!  
The moistened eye, the trembling lip,  
Are not the signs of doubt or fear.

Sail forth into the sea of life,  
O gentle, loving, trusting wife,  
And safe from all adversity  
Upon the bosom of that sea  
Thy comings and thy goings be!  
For gentleness and love and trust  
Prevail o'er angry wave and gust;  
And in the wreck of noble lives  
Something immortal still survives!

Thou, too, sail on, O ship of State !  
Sail on, O UNION, strong and great !  
Humanity with all its fears,  
With all the hopes of future years,  
Is hanging breathless on thy fate !  
We know what Master <sup>12</sup> laid thy keel,  
What Workmen wrought thy ribs of steel,  
Who made each mast, and sail, and rope,  
What anvils rang, what hammers beat,  
In what a forge and what a heat  
Were shaped the anchors of thy hope !  
Fear not each sudden sound and shock,  
'Tis of the wave and not the rock ;  
'Tis but the flapping of the sail,  
And not a rent made by the gale !  
In spite of rock and tempest's roar,  
In spite of false lights on the shore,  
Sail on, nor fear to breast the sea !  
Our hearts, our hopes, are all with thee,  
Our hearts, our hopes, our prayers, our tears,  
Our faith triumphant o'er our fears,  
Are all with thee — are all with thee !

## NOTES TO LONGFELLOW

FOR a general introduction to each poem, consult the preceding sketch.

The poems selected are all well known. It is probable that the student is already familiar with them. But there is a great deal of superficial reading; and it is possible that a careful study will not only reveal new beauty in each poem, but also lead to a higher appreciation of the poet's genius and art.

## A PSALM OF LIFE

Of this poem Mr. Longfellow said: "I kept it some time in manuscript, unwilling to show it to any one, it being a voice from my inmost heart, at a time when I was rallying from depression." His first wife died in 1835, and the poem was published in 1838. Before its publication the poet read it to his college class at the close of a lecture on Goethe.

The poem is the message of courage and hope that the psalmist's heart brought to him. Under the temporary shock and depression of bereavement, he felt that life is empty, that immortality is a fiction, and that duty is a phantom. It is a feeling that at times comes to most men.

With the second stanza begins the strong, earnest voice of the psalmist's heart. It corrects his despairing view of life. With a reference to the story of man's creation in Genesis, it declares the truth of man's immortality. It then points out the true end of life, the spirit in which duty is to be met, and the beneficent influence of heroic example. It concludes with the practical exhortation, "learn to labor and to wait."

The "Psalm of Life" is a good specimen of Longfellow's didactic poetry. It is a short sermon or moral lecture in verse, with an introduction, argument, and conclusion. No word or phrase should be passed without determining its meaning, and the successive steps of the argument should be pointed out. It is safe to say that there is a great deal more in the poem than most readers find.

## FOOTSTEPS OF ANGELS

The original title of this poem was "Evening Shadows." The reference in the fourth stanza is to the poet's brother-in-law, George W. Pierce, of whom he wrote long afterwards, "I have never ceased to feel that in his death something was taken from my own life which could never be restored." Longfellow received the news of his death at Heidelberg on Christmas Eve 1835, less than a month after the death of his wife, who is tenderly referred to in the closing

stanzas. This poem exhibits not only the true-hearted character of the poet, but also the sound moral tone of all his poetry. The verse is simple and clear throughout.

#### THE SKELETON IN ARMOR

This is an admirable ballad. In its main features it was no doubt suggested by Coleridge's "Ancient Mariner." It was built up from the slenderest foundation of fact, and may fairly be regarded as one of Longfellow's most imaginative pieces. It is artistically wrought out in all its parts, and the verse shows more vigor than usual. The stanzas are compact, and the epithets happily chosen.

The historic groundwork is found in the Round Tower of Newport and the Fall River skeleton. The theory of the Norse origin of the tower is accepted. The bold Viking says,—

"Thére for my lady's bower  
Built I the lofty tower,  
Which, to this very hour,  
Stands looking seaward."

In digging down a hill near Fall River, a skeleton was discovered in a sitting posture. On the breast was a plate of brass, evidently intended for protective armor. The origin of the skeleton, though probably that of an Indian, has not been definitely determined. In the poem, however, it is the skeleton of the suicide Viking,—

"In the vast forest here,  
Clad in my warlike gear,  
Fell I upon my spear,  
Oh, death was grateful!"

Much of the beauty of the poem will be lost without a vivid conception of the wild life of the Vikings. Who were they? Where did they live? Their daring spirit is well exhibited in the poem. The "wassail-bouts" and minstrel songs introduce us to the castle-life of the mediæval period. Almost every stanza presents a clear-cut and interesting picture. "To old-fashioned people," says Stedman, "this heroic ballad is worth a year's product of what I may term Kensington-stitch verse."

1. *Skald* = an ancient Scandinavian minstrel, the equivalent of *bard* among Celtic peoples.

2. *Saga* = a Scandinavian myth, or heroic story; in a wider sense, a legend.

3. *The Sound* is a sea-passage between Sweden and the island of Zealand in Denmark. In its narrowest part it is three miles wide.

4. *Werewolf* = a person who, according to mediæval superstition, became voluntarily or involuntarily a wolf, and in that form practised cannibalism. Otherwise spelled *werwolf*.

5. *Berserk* = in Norse legend a warrior who fought with frenzied fury, known as the "berserker rage."

6. *Hildebrand* was a common name in the legendary lore of the Teutonic race.

7. *The Skaw* is a cape at the northeastern extremity of Jutland in Denmark.

8. *Skoal*. — Of this word Longfellow said: "In Scandinavia, this is the customary salutation when drinking a health. I have slightly changed the orthography of the word, in order to preserve the correct pronunciation."

#### THE ARSENAL AT SPRINGFIELD

In 1777 General Washington selected Springfield as a suitable location for an arsenal. Small arms were manufactured there a few years later, and since then it has become a large factory and repository.

In 1843, when on his wedding journey, Longfellow visited the arsenal in company with his bride and Charles Sumner. "While Mr. Sumner was endeavoring," says Mr. Samuel Longfellow, "to impress upon the attendant that the money expended upon those weapons of war would have been much better spent upon a large library, Mrs. Longfellow pleased her husband by remarking how like an organ looked the ranged and shining gun-barrels which covered the walls from floor to ceiling, and suggesting what mournful music Death would bring from them. 'We grew quite warlike against war,' she wrote, 'and I urged H. to write a peace poem.'" The poem was written some months later.

The subject took deep hold upon the poet. The poem is written with extraordinary energy. Like nearly all of Longfellow's verse, it has a moral purpose. It teaches the religion of humanity. It consists of an introduction, a rapid review of war scenes in successive ages and different countries, mournful reflections on the wrong and curse of war, and concludes with the cheering prophecy of the reign of universal peace.

1. *Miserere* = a musical composition adapted to the Fifty-first Psalm. It is the first word of that Psalm in the Latin version, and means *have mercy*. The *miserere* is of frequent occurrence in the services of the Roman Church, and is one of the most expressive chants in the whole range of sacred music.

2. *Saxon hammer* = a weapon of attack in war used by the Saxons and others during the Middle Ages. The hammer usually had one blunt face, with a sharp point on the opposite side.

3. *Cimbric* = pertaining to the Cimbri, an ancient people of central Europe. The peninsula of Jutland was named from them, the *Cimbric Chersonese*.

4. *Teocalli* = a structure of earth and stone or brick, used as a temple or place of worship by the Aztecs and other aborigines of America. It was generally a solid, four-sided, truncated pyramid, built terrace-wise, with the temple proper on the platform at the summit.

5. *Curse of Cain*. See Gen. iv. 11-15.

6. *Peace*. See Mark iv. 39.

### THE BUILDING OF THE SHIP

As already indicated, the form of this poem is borrowed from Schiller's "Song of the Bell"; and it is scarcely inferior to the work of the great German. The poet's heart was in his work; and the metre and rhythm are in excellent keeping with the thought and sentiment. He had probably learned something of ship-building in Portland. The successive pictures presented by the poem have been compared to instantaneous photographs. The felling of the giant pines and the terrors and mysteries of the sea are admirably described. The human element is no less interesting. The ship-builder, with his conscious skill and integrity, is a fine portrait. The love-story interwoven with the main narrative gives the poem an air of tenderness. The name of the vessel suggests the American Union, and the poem concludes with a noble burst of patriotic feeling. It has been pronounced "the freshest and most stirring of our national poems."

1. *Master* = proprietor of a ship-yard.

2. *Great Harry* = the first war-ship of the British navy, built in 1438.

3. *Crank* = liable to careen or be capsized.

4. *Knarred* = gnarled, knotty.

5. *Pascagoula Bay* is in the southeastern part of Mississippi. The river of the same name, which empties into the bay, runs through a sandy region of pine forests.

6. *Roanoke* = a river of Virginia and North Carolina, emptying into Albemarle Sound. It rises in the Alleghany Mountains, and in its course in Virginia may, with some justice, be characterized as "roaring."

7. *Slip* = an inclined plane on the bank of a river or harbor, intended for ship-building.

8. *Keel* = the principal timber in a ship, extending from stem to stern at the bottom.

9. *Lascar* = a native sailor employed in European vessels in East India.

10. *Stemson* = a piece of curved timber fixed on the after part of the apron inside. The lower end is scarfed into the keelson, and receives the scarf of the stem, through which it is bolted. — *Keelson* = a beam running lengthwise above

the keel of the ship, and bolted to the middle of the floor-frames, in order to stiffen the vessel. — *Sternson* = the end of a ship's keelson, to which the stern-post is bolted.

11. *The Fortunate Isles*, according to the ancients, were located off the western coast of Africa. Their name is due to their remarkable beauty, and the abundance of all things desirable which they were supposed to contain. By some they are identified with the Canaries.

12. *Master* = Washington. The *workmen* referred to in the next line are the statesmen who assisted in organizing our government.

## XIV

## SELECTIONS FROM LOWELL

## WHAT MR. ROBINSON THINKS

GUVENER B.<sup>1</sup> is a sensible man ;

He stays to his home an' looks arter his folks ;  
He draws his furrer ez straight ez he can,  
An' into nobody's tater-patch pokes ; —

But John P.

Robinson he

Sez he wont vote fer Guvener B.

My ! aint it terrible ? What shall we du ?

We can't never choose him o' course, — thet's flat ;  
Guess we shall hev to come round, (don't you ?)  
An' go in fer thunder an' guns, an' all that ;

Fer John P.

Robinson he

Sez he wont vote fer Guvener B.

Gineral C.<sup>2</sup> is a dreffle smart man :

He's ben on all sides thet give places or pelf,  
But consistency still wuz a part of his plan, —  
He's ben true to *one* party, — an' thet is himself ;

So John P.

Robinson he

Sez he shall vote fer Gineral C. . .

Gineral C. he goes in fer the war ;

He don't vally principle more'n an old cud ;  
Wut did God make us raytional creeturs fer,  
But glory an' gunpowder, plunder an' blood ?

So John P.

Robinson he

Sez he shall vote fer Gineral C.

We were gittin' on nicely up here to our village,<sup>3</sup>

With good old idees o' wut's right an' wut aint;  
We kind o' thought Christ went agin' war an' pillage,  
An' thet eppyletts worn't the best mark of a saint;

But John P.

Robinson he

Sez this kind o' thing's an exploded idee.

The side of our country must ollers be took,

An' President Polk, you know, *he* is our country;  
An' the angel thet writes all our sins in a book

Puts the *debit* to him, an' to us the *per contriy*;

An' John P.

Robinson he

Sez this is his view o' the thing to a T.

Parson Wilbur he calls all these argimunts lies;

Sez they're nothin' on airth but jest *fee, faw, fum*:<sup>5</sup>—  
An' thet all this big talk of our destinies

Is half ov it ign'ance, an' t'other half rum;

But John P.

Robinson he

Sez it aint no sech thing; an', of course, so must we.

Parson Wilbur sez *he* never heerd in his life

Thet th' Apostles rigged out in their swaller-tail coats  
An' marched round in front of a drum an' a fife,

To git some on 'em office, an' some on 'em votes;

But John P.

Robinson he

Sez they didn't know everythin' down in Judee.

Wal, it's a marcy we've gut folks to tell us

The rights an' the wrongs o' these matters, I vow;  
God sends country lawyers, an' other wise fellers,

To drive the world's team wen it gits in a slough;

Fer John P.

Robinson he

Sez the world'll go right, ef he hollers out Gee!

## THE PRESENT CRISIS

WHEN a deed is done for Freedom, through the broad earth's aching breast

Runs a thrill of joy prophetic, trembling on from east to west,  
And the slave, where'er he cowers, feels the soul within him climb  
To the awful verge of manhood, as the energy sublime  
Of a century bursts full-blossomed on the thorny stem of Time.

Through the walls of hut and palace shoots the instantaneous throe,  
When the travail of the Ages wrings earth's systems to and fro ;  
At the birth of each new Era, with a recognizing start,  
Nation wildly looks at nation, standing with mute lips apart,  
And glad Truth's yet mightier man-child leaps beneath the Future's heart.

So the Evil's triumph sendeth, with a terror and a chill,  
Under continent to continent, the sense of coming ill,  
And the slave, where'er he cowers, feels his sympathies with God <sup>1</sup>  
In hot tear-drops ebbing earthward, to be drunk up by the sod,  
Till a corpse crawls round unburied, delving in the nobler clod.

For mankind are one in spirit, and an instinct bears along,  
Round the earth's electric circle, the swift flash of right or wrong ;<sup>2</sup>  
Whether conscious or unconscious, yet Humanity's vast frame  
Through its ocean-sundered fibres feels the gush of joy or shame ; —  
In the gain or loss of one race all the rest have equal claim.<sup>3</sup>

Once to every man and nation comes the moment to decide,  
In the strife of Truth with Falsehood, for the good or evil side ;  
Some great cause, God's new Messiah, offering each the bloom or blight,  
Parts the goats upon the left hand, and the sheep upon the right,  
And the choice goes by forever 'twixt that darkness and that light.

Hast thou chosen, O my people, on whose party thou shalt stand,  
Ere the Doom from its worn sandals shakes the dust against our land ?  
Though the cause of Evil prosper, yet 'tis Truth alone is strong<sup>4</sup>  
And, albeit she wander outcast now, I see around her throng  
Troops of beautiful, tall angels, to enshield her from all wrong.

Backward look across the ages and the beacon-moments see,  
 That, like peaks of some sunk continent, jut through Oblivion's sea ;  
 Not an ear in court or market for the low foreboding cry  
 Of those Crises, God's stern winnowers, from whose feet earth's chaff  
 must fly ;

Never shows the choice momentous till the judgment hath passed by.  
 Careless seems the great Avenger ; history's pages but record  
 One death-grapple in the darkness 'twixt old systems and the Word ;<sup>5</sup>  
 Truth forever on the scaffold, Wrong forever on the throne, —  
 Yet that scaffold sways the future, and, behind the dim unknown,  
 Standeth God within the shadow, keeping watch above his own.

We see dimly in the Present what is small and what is great,  
 Slow of faith how weak an arm may turn the iron helm of fate,  
 But the soul is still oracular ; amid the market's din,  
 List the ominous stern whisper from the Delphic <sup>6</sup> cave within, —  
 "They enslave their children's children who make compromise with  
 sin."

Slavery, the earth-born Cyclops,<sup>7</sup> fellest of the giant brood,  
 Sons of brutish Force and Darkness, who have drenched the earth  
 with blood,  
 Famished in his self-made desert, blinded by our purer day,  
 Gropes in yet unblasted regions for his miserable prey ; —  
 Shall we guide his gory fingers where our helpless children play ?

Then to side with truth is noble when we share her wretched crust,  
 Ere her cause bring fame and profit, and 'tis prosperous to be just ;  
 Then it is the brave man chooses, while the coward stands aside,  
 Doubting in his abject spirit, till his Lord is crucified,  
 And the multitude make virtue of the faith they had denied.

Count me o'er the earth's chosen heroes, — they were souls that stood  
 alone,  
 While the men they agonized for hurled the contumelious stone,  
 Stood serene, and down the future saw the golden beam incline  
 To the side of perfect justice, mastered by their faith divine,  
 By one man's plain truth to manhood and to God's supreme design.<sup>8</sup>

By the light of burning heretics Christ's bleeding feet I track,  
 Toiling up new Calvaries ever with the Cross that turns not back,  
 And these mounts of anguish number how each generation learn'd  
 One new word of that grand *Credo*<sup>9</sup> which in prophet-hearts hath burned  
 Since the first man stood God-conquered with his face to heaven up-  
 turned.

For humanity sweeps onward: where to-day the martyr stands,  
 On the morrow crouches Judas with the silver in his hands;  
 Far in front the cross stands ready and the crackling fagots burn,  
 While the hooting mob of yesterday in silent awe return  
 To glean up the scattered ashes into History's golden urn.

'Tis as easy to be heroes as to sit the idle slaves  
 Of a legendary virtue carved upon our fathers' graves,  
 Worshippers of light ancestral make the present light a crime; —  
 Was the Mayflower launched by cowards, steered by men behind their  
 time?

Turn those tracks toward Past or Future, that make Plymouth Rock  
 sublime?<sup>10</sup>

They were men of present valor, stalwart old iconoclasts,  
 Unconvinced by axe or gibbet that all virtue was the Past's;  
 But we make their truth our falsehood, thinking that hath made us  
 free,  
 Hoarding it in mouldy parchments, while our tender spirits flee  
 The rude grasp of that great Impulse which drove them across the sea.

They have rights who dare maintain them; we are traitors to our sires,  
 Smothering in their holy ashes Freedom's new-lit altar-fires;  
 Shall we make their creed our jailer? Shall we, in our haste to slay,  
 From the tombs of the old prophets steal the funeral lamps away  
 To light up the martyr-fagots round the prophets of to-day?

New occasions teach new duties; Time makes ancient good uncouth;  
 They must upward still, and onward, who would keep abreast of Truth;  
 Lo, before us gleam her camp-fires! we ourselves must Pilgrims be,  
 Launch our Mayflower, and steer boldly through the desperate winter  
 sea,  
 Nor attempt the Future's portal with the Past's blood-rusted key.

## THE VISION OF SIR LAUNFAL

PRELUDE TO PART FIRST<sup>1</sup>

OVER his keys the musing organist,  
 Beginning doubtfully and far away,  
 First lets his fingers wander as they list,  
 And builds a bridge from Dreamland for his lay :  
 Then, as the touch of his loved instrument  
 Gives hope and fervor, nearer draws his theme,  
 First guessed by faint auroral flushes sent  
 Along the wavering vista of his dream.<sup>2</sup>

---

Not only around our infancy  
 Doth heaven with all its splendors lie ;<sup>3</sup>  
 Daily, with souls that cringe and plot,  
 We Sinai climb and know it not.

Over our manhood bend the skies ;  
 Against our fallen and traitor lives  
 The great winds utter prophecies :  
 With our faint hearts the mountain strives ;  
 Its arms outstretched, the druid wood  
 Waits with its benedicite ;  
 And to our age's drowsy blood  
 Still shouts the inspiring sea.

Earth gets its price for what Earth gives us ;  
 The beggar is taxed for a corner to die in,  
 The priest hath his fee who comes and shrives us,  
 We bargain for the graves we lie in ;  
 At the Devil's booth are all things sold,  
 Each ounce of dross costs its ounce of gold ;  
 For a cap and bells our lives we pay,  
 Bubbles we buy with a whole soul's tasking :  
 'Tis heaven alone that is given away,  
 'Tis only God may be had for the asking ;  
 No price is set on the lavish summer ;

June may be had by the poorest comer.<sup>4</sup>

And what is so rare as a day in June?<sup>5</sup>

Then, if ever, come perfect days;  
Then Heaven tries the earth if it be in tune,

And over it softly her warm ear lays:<sup>6</sup>  
Whether we look, or whether we listen,  
We hear life murmur, or see it glisten;  
Every clod feels a stir of might,

An instinct within it that reaches and towers,  
And, groping blindly above it for light,

Climbs to a soul in grass and flowers;  
The flush of life may well be seen

Thrilling back over hills and valleys;  
The cowslip startles in meadows green,

The buttercup catches the sun in its chalice,  
And there's never a leaf nor a blade too mean

To be some happy creature's palace;  
The little bird sits at his door in the sun,

Atilt like a blossom among the leaves,  
And lets his illumined being o'errun

With the deluge of summer it receives;  
His mate feels the eggs beneath her wings,  
And the heart in her dumb breast flutters and sings;  
He sings to the wide world, and she to her nest,—  
In the nice ear of Nature which song is the best?<sup>7</sup>

Now is the high-tide of the year,

And whatever of life hath ebbed away  
Comes flooding back with a rippy cheer,

Into every bare inlet and creek and bay;  
Now the heart is so full that a drop overfills it,

We are happy now because God wills it;<sup>8</sup>  
No matter how barren the past may have been,  
'Tis enough for us now that the leaves are green;  
We sit in the warm shade and feel right well  
How the sap creeps up and the blossoms swell;  
We may shut our eyes, but we cannot help knowing  
That skies are clear and grass is growing;

The breeze comes whispering in our ear,  
That dandelions are blossoming near,<sup>9</sup>

That maize has sprouted, that streams are flowing,  
That the river is bluer than the sky,  
That the robin is plastering his house hard by;  
And if the breeze kept the good news back,  
For other couriers we should not lack;

We could guess it all by yon heifer's lowing, —  
And hark! how clear bold chanticleer,  
Warmed with the new wine of the year,  
Tells all in his lusty crowing!

Joy comes, grief goes, we know not how;  
Everything is happy now,

Everything is upward striving;  
'Tis easy now for the heart to be true  
As for grass to be green or skies to be blue,

'Tis the natural way of living:  
Who knows whither the clouds have fled?

In the unscarred heaven they leave no wake;  
And the eyes forget the tears they have shed,

The heart forgets its sorrow and ache;  
The soul partakes of the season's youth,

And the sulphurous rifts of passion and woe  
Lie deep 'neath a silence pure and smooth,

Like burnt-out craters healed with snow.  
What wonder if Sir Launfal now  
Remembered the keeping of his vow?<sup>10</sup>

#### PART FIRST

##### I

"My golden spurs now bring to me,  
And bring to me my richest mail,  
For to-morrow I go over land and sea  
In search of the Holy Grail;  
Shall never a bed for me be spread,  
Nor shall a pillow be under my head,

Till I begin my vow to keep ;  
Here on the rushes will I sleep,  
And perchance there may come a vision true  
Ere day create the world anew."

Slowly Sir Launfal's eyes grew dim,  
Slumber fell like a cloud on him,  
And into his soul the vision flew.

## II

The crows flapped over by twos and threes,  
In the pool drowsed the cattle up to their knees,  
The little birds sang as if it were  
The one day of summer in all the year,  
And the very leaves seemed to sing on the trees :  
The castle alone in the landscape lay  
Like an outpost of winter, dull and gray :  
'Twas the proudest hall in the North Countree,  
And never its gates might opened be,  
Save to lord or lady of high degree ;  
Summer besieged it on every side,  
But the churlish stone her assaults defied ;  
She could not scale the chilly wall,  
Though around it for leagues her pavilions tall  
Stretched left and right,  
Over the hills and out of sight ;  
Green and broad was every tent,  
And out of each a murmur went  
Till the breeze fell off at night.

## III

The drawbridge dropped with a surly clang,  
And through the dark arch a charger sprang,  
Bearing Sir Launfal, the maiden knight,  
In his gilded mail, that flamed so bright  
It seemed the dark castle had gathered all  
Those shafts the fierce sun had shot over its wall

In his siege of three hundred summers long,  
 And, binding them all in one blazing sheaf,  
     Had cast them forth : so, young and strong,  
 And lightsome as a locust-leaf,  
 Sir Launfal flashed forth in his unscarred mail,  
 To seek in all climes for the Holy Grail.

## IV

It was morning on hill and stream and tree,  
     And morning in the young knight's heart ;  
 Only the castle moodily  
 Rebuffed the gifts of the sunshine free,  
     And gloomed by itself apart ;  
 The season brimmed all other things up  
 Full as the rain fills the pitcher-plant's cup.

## V

As Sir Launfal made morn through the darksome gate,  
     He was 'ware of a leper, crouched by the same,  
 Who begged with his hand and moaned as he sate ;  
     And a loathing over Sir Launfal came ;  
 The sunshine went out of his soul with a thrill,  
     The flesh 'neath his armor 'gan shrink and crawl,  
 And midway its leap his heart stood still  
     Like a frozen waterfall ;  
 For this man, so foul and bent of stature,  
 Rasped harshly against his dainty nature,  
 And seemed the one blot on the summer morn, —  
 So he tossed him a piece of gold in scorn.

## VI

The leper raised not the gold from the dust :  
 "Better to me the poor man's crust,  
 Better the blessing of the poor,  
 Though I turn me empty from his door ;  
 That is no true alms which the hand can hold ;  
 He gives nothing but worthless gold

Who gives from a sense of duty ;  
 But he <sup>11</sup> who gives but a slender mite,  
 And gives to that which is out of sight,  
 That thread of the all-sustaining Beauty  
 Which runs through all and doth all unite, —  
 The hand cannot clasp the whole of his alms,  
 The heart outstretches its eager palms,  
 For a god goes with it and makes it store  
 To the soul that was starving in darkness before.”

PRELUDE TO PART SECOND <sup>12</sup>

Down swept the chill wind from the mountain peak,  
 From the snow five thousand summers old ;  
 On open wold and hill-top bleak  
 It had gathered all the cold,  
 And whirled it like sleet on the wanderer’s cheek ;  
 It carried a shiver everywhere  
 From the unleafed boughs and pastures bare ;  
 The little brook heard it and built a roof <sup>13</sup>  
 ‘Neath which he could house him, winter-proof ;  
 All night by the white stars’ frosty gleams  
 He groined his arches and matched his beams ;  
 Slender and clear were his crystal spars  
 As the lashes of light that trim the stars ;  
 He sculptured every summer delight  
 In his halls and chambers out of sight ;  
 Sometimes his tinkling waters slipt  
 Down through a frost-leaved forest-crypt,  
 Long, sparkling aisles of steel-stemmed trees  
 Bending to counterfeit a breeze ;  
 Sometimes the roof no fretwork knew  
 But silvery mosses that downward grew ;  
 Sometimes it was carved in sharp relief  
 With quaint arabesques of ice-fern leaf ;  
 Sometimes it was simply smooth and clear  
 For the gladness of heaven to shine through, and here

He had caught the nodding bulrush-tops  
And hung them thickly with diamond-drops,  
That crystallised the beams of moon and sun,  
And made a star of every one :  
No mortal builder's most rare device  
Could match this winter-palace of ice ;  
'Twas as if every image that mirrored lay  
In his depths serene through the summer day,  
Each fleeting shadow of earth and sky,  
Lest the happy model should be lost,  
Had been mimicked in fairy masonry  
By the elfin builders of the frost.<sup>14</sup>

Within the hall are song and laughter,  
The cheeks of Christmas grow red and jolly,  
And sprouting is every corbel <sup>15</sup> and rafter  
With lightsome green of ivy and holly ;  
Through the deep gulf of the chimney wide  
Wallows the Yule-log's roaring tide ; <sup>16</sup>  
The broad flame-pennons droop and flap  
And belly and tug as a flag in the wind ;  
Like a locust shrills the imprisoned sap,  
Hunted to death in its galleries blind ;  
And swift little troops of silent sparks,  
Now pausing, now scattering away as in fear,  
Go threading the soot-forest's tangled darks  
Like herds of startled deer.

But the wind without was eager and sharp,  
Of Sir Launfal's gray hair it makes a harp,  
And rattles and wrings  
The icy strings,  
Singing, in dreary monotone,  
A Christmas carol of its own,  
Whose burden still, as he might guess,  
Was — “Shelterless, shelterless, shelterless !”

The voice of the seneschal flared like a torch  
As he shouted the wanderer away from the porch,  
And he sat in the gateway and saw all night  
The great hall-fire, so cheery and bold,

Through the window-slits of the castle old,  
 Build out its piers of ruddy light  
 Against the drift of the cold.

## PART SECOND

## I

There was never a leaf on bush or tree,  
 The bare boughs rattled shudderingly ;  
 The river was dumb and could not speak,  
 For the weaver Winter its shroud had spun ;  
 A single crow on the tree-top bleak

From his shining feathers shed off the cold sun ;  
 Again it was morning, but shrunk and cold,  
 As if her veins were sapless and old,  
 And she rose up decrepitly  
 For a last dim look at earth and sea.

## II

Sir Launfal turned from his own hard gate,  
 For another heir in his earldom sate ;  
 An old, bent man, worn out and frail,  
 He came back from seeking the Holy Grail ;  
 Little he recked of his earldom's loss,  
 No more on his surcoat was blazoned the cross,  
 But deep in his soul the sign he wore,  
 The badge of the suffering and the poor.

## III

Sir Launfal's raiment thin and spare  
 Was idle mail 'gainst the barbèd air,  
 For it was just at the Christmas time ;  
 So he mused, as he sat, of a sunnier clime,  
 And sought for a shelter from cold and snow  
 In the light and warmth of long-ago ;  
 He sees the snake-like caravan crawl  
 O'er the edge of the desert, black and small,

Then nearer and nearer, till, one by one,  
 He can count the camels in the sun,  
 As over the red-hot sands they pass  
 To where, in its slender necklace of grass,  
 The little spring laughed and leapt in the shade.  
 And with its own self like an infant played,  
 And waved its signal of palms.

## IV

“For Christ’s sweet sake, I beg an alms” ; —  
 The happy camels may reach the spring,  
 But Sir Launfal sees only the grawsome thing,  
 The leper, lank as the rain-blanchèd bone,  
 That cowers beside him, a thing as lone  
 And white as the ice-isles of Northern seas  
 In the desolate horror of his disease.

## V

And Sir Launfal said, — “I behold in thee  
 An image of Him who died on the tree ;  
 Thou also hast had thy crown of thorns, —  
 Thou also hast had the world’s buffets and scorns, —  
 And to thy life were not denied  
 The wounds in the hands and feet and side :  
 Mild Mary’s Son, acknowledge me ;  
 Behold, through him, I give to Thee !”

## VI

Then the soul of the leper stood up in his eyes  
 And looked at Sir Launfal, and straightway he  
 Remembered in what a haughtier guise  
 He had flung an alms to leprosie,  
 When he girt his young life up in gilded mail  
 And set forth in search of the Holy Grail.  
 The heart within him was ashes and dust ;  
 He parted in twain his single crust,  
 He broke the ice on the streamlet’s brink,  
 And gave the leper to eat and drink :

'Twas a mouldy crust of coarse brown bread,  
 'Twas water out of a wooden bowl,—  
 Yet with fine wheaten bread was the leper fed,  
 And 'twas red wine he drank with his thirsty soul.

## VII

As Sir Launfal mused with a downcast face,  
 A light shone round about the place ;  
 The leper no longer crouched at his side,  
 But stood before him glorified,  
 Shining and tall and fair and straight  
 As the pillar that stood by the Beautiful Gate,<sup>17</sup> —  
 Himself the Gate whereby men can  
 Enter the temple of God in Man.

## VIII

His words were shed softer than leaves from the pine,  
 And they fell on Sir Launfal as snows on the brine,  
 That mingle their softness and quiet in one  
 With the shaggy unrest they float down upon ;  
 And the voice that was calmer than silence said,  
 "Lo it is I, be not afraid !  
 In many climes, without avail,  
 Thou hast spent thy life for the Holy Grail ;  
 Behold, it is here, — this cup which thou  
 Didst fill at the streamlet for Me but now ;  
 This crust is My body broken for thee,  
 This water His blood that died on the tree ;  
 The Holy Supper is kept, indeed,  
 In whatso we share with another's need :  
 Not what we give, but what we share, —  
 For the gift without the giver is bare ;  
 Who gives himself with his alms feeds three, —  
 Himself, his hungering neighbor, and Me."<sup>18</sup>

## IX

Sir Launfal awoke as from a swound : —  
 "The Grail in my castle here is found !

Hang my idle armor up on the wall,  
Let it be the spider's banquet-hall ;  
He must be fenced with stronger mail  
Who would seek and find the Holy Grail."

## X

The castle gate stands open now,  
And the wanderer is welcome to the hall  
As the hangbird is to the elm-tree bough ;<sup>19</sup>  
No longer scowl the turrets tall,  
The Summer's long siege at last is o'er ;  
When the first poor outcast went in at the door,  
She entered with him in disguise,  
And mastered the fortress by surprise ;  
There is no spot she loves so well on ground,  
She lingers and smiles there the whole year round ;  
The meanest serf on Sir Launfal's land  
Has hall and bower at his command ;  
And there's no poor man in the North Countree  
But is lord of the earldom as much as he.

## NOTES TO LOWELL

THE selections from Lowell are intended to illustrate his different styles of writing. For a general introduction, read the sketch of the poet in Part First.

## WHAT MR. ROBINSON THINKS

This selection is from the first series of the "Biglow Papers." It illustrates Lowell's manner and power as a satirist; and to use the words of a biographer, it "tickled the public amazingly," especially those who were opposed to the Mexican War.

As we learn from the editorial remarks of the Rev. Homer Wilbur, the satire of the verses "was not meant to have any personal, but only a general, application. Of the gentleman upon whose letter they were intended as a commentary Mr. Biglow had never heard, till he saw the letter itself. The position of the satirist is often times one which he would not have chosen, had the election been left to himself. In attacking bad principles, he is obliged to select some individual who has made himself their exponent, and in whom they are impersonate."

1. George N. Briggs (1796-1861), a lawyer, judge, member of Congress, and Whig governor of Massachusetts from 1844 to 1851.

2. Caleb Cushing (1800-1879), a lawyer, statesman, and author of ability and learning. In politics he belonged originally to the Jeffersonian Republican party, then turned Whig, and afterwards, with President Tyler, drifted over to the other side. He advocated the Mexican War in the face of strong opposition from the people of Massachusetts. He commanded a regiment in the war, and rose to the ranks of brigadier-general. While in Mexico he was nominated by the Democrats as governor of Massachusetts. The satire of this and the following stanza was very cutting.

3. Jaalam, where lived Hosea Biglow and Parson Wilbur.

4. *Per contry* = per contra, contrariwise.

5. *Fee, faw, fum* = nonsense.

## THE PRESENT CRISIS

This poem brings Lowell before us as a preacher or reformer. It is written in heroic and prophetic mood. What it lacks in polish, it gains in force. We recognize something of Emerson's philosophy, with which, as we have seen, Lowell was much impressed in early manhood. The poem was written in 1845,

when the question of annexing Texas was before the country. This annexation was opposed by the anti-slavery party on the ground that it would strengthen the South.

1. This is Emersonian, recognizing the presence of God in nature and humanity.

2. This line contains a reference to the electric telegraph, which had been put into operation only a short time before the poem was written.

3. This is a strong assertion of the solidarity of the human race, a truth not yet sufficiently understood.

4. This line recalls Bryant's well-known lines, —

“Truth, crushed to earth, shall rise again;  
The eternal years of God are hers.”

All our great singers have had this same faith in the power of truth.

5. A reference to John i. 1: “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.”

6. The oracle at Delphi in Greece was very celebrated. Consult a good encyclopædia.

7. Cyclops, meaning *round eye*, was the name anciently applied to a fabulous race of giants. The reference throughout this stanza is to Polyphemus of Sicily. According to Homer, when Ulysses landed on this island, he entered the cave of Polyphemus with twelve companions, of whom the gigantic cannibal devoured six. The others expected the same fate; but their cunning leader made Polyphemus drunk, then thrust a burning stake into his single eye, and thus made his escape, leaving the blinded monster to grope about in darkness.

8. Can you name any of the heroes referred to in this stanza?

9. *Credo* = creed; so called, because in Latin the Apostles' Creed begins with this word, meaning “I believe.” The idea here presented, namely, that the creed of humanity is being slowly built up through the ages, is a grand one.

10. The meaning of this line may be given as follows: “Do these tracks, that make Plymouth Rock sublime, turn toward the Past or toward the Future?” The poet's answer is, of course, “Toward the Future.”

#### THE VISION OF SIR LAUNFAL

The following note was prefixed to the first edition published in 1848: “According to the mythology of the Romancers, the San Gréal, or Holy Grail, was the cup out of which Jesus Christ partook the last supper with his disciples. It was brought into England by Joseph of Arimathea, and remained there, an object of pilgrimage and adoration, for many years in the keeping of his lineal descendants. It was incumbent upon those who had charge of it to be chaste in thought, word, and deed; but, one of the keepers having broken this condition, the Holy Grail disappeared. From that time it was a favorite

enterprise of the Knights of Arthur's court to go in search of it. Sir Galahad was at last successful in finding it, as may be read in the seventeenth book of the Romance of King Arthur. Tennyson has made Sir Galahad the subject of one of the most exquisite of his poems.

"The plot (if I may give that name to anything so slight) of the following poem is my own; and, to serve its purposes, I have enlarged the circle of competition in search of the miraculous cup in such a manner as to include not only other persons than the heroes of the Round Table, but also a period of time subsequent to the date of King Arthur's reign."

1. Note how each of the two Preludes is in harmony with the part of the story that follows. Nature is brought into sympathy with Sir Launfal. The great popularity of the poem is due in no small degree to the beautiful descriptions of nature in the Preludes.

2. These opening lines are admirable, both for the picture of the musing organist, and for the melody of the stanza.

3. A reference to the well-known and beautiful passage in Wordsworth's famous Ode:—

"Heaven lies about us in our infancy;  
Shades of the prison-house begin to close  
Upon the growing boy."

In the inspiring lines that follow, Lowell teaches that heaven is continually about us, — bending over our manhood, and speaking encouragement to old age.

4. Observe the contrast in this stanza between "Earth gets its price," with the instances that follow, and —

"Tis heaven alone that is given away."

5. June was the favorite month of Lowell, as May was of the English poets. In the poem, "Under the Willows," which gives name to a volume of his verse, he dwells on the charm of June at considerable length. He says, —

"June is the pearl of our New England year;"  
but —

"May is a pious fraud of the almanac,  
A ghastly parody of real spring."

6. This figure is taken from the musician, who places his ear close to his violin to determine whether it be in tune.

7. "What Lowell loves most in nature," says Stedman, "are the trees and their winged inhabitants, and the flowers that grow untended. The singing of birds, as we learn in both his prose and verse, enraptured him." In his

poem "An Indian-Summer Reverie," in which his love of nature is most fully set forth, we find the following exquisite lines:—

"Meanwhile that devil-may-care, the bobolink,  
Remembering duty, in mid-quaver stops  
Just ere he sweeps o'er rapture's tremulous brink,  
And twixt the windrows most demurely drops."

8. This line illustrates Lowell's deep religious nature. The whole poem, indeed, is suffused with religious feeling. Though discarding something of the creed of his ancestry, he had a strong faith in the presence and love of God.

"Through ways unlooked for and through many lands,  
Far from the rich folds built with human hands,  
The gracious footprints of his love I see."

9. Lowell was fond of the dandelion, which gives name to one of his fine poems:—

"Dear common flower, that grow'st beside the way,  
Fringing the dusty road with harmless gold."

10. Not unlike the musing organist, the poet has been letting his fingers wander as they list. But in these two lines his theme has at length drawn near.

11. Note the solecism in the use of "*he*."

12. This Prelude describes winter, which was a favorite season with Lowell. In "An Indian-Summer Reverie," there are beautiful descriptions of winter scenes. And in his essay, "A Good Word for Winter," we have a delightful presentation of its varied charms. "For my part," he says, "I think Winter a pretty wide-awake old boy, and his bluff sincerity and hearty ways are more congenial to my mood, and more wholesome for me, than any charms of which his rivals are capable."

13. In a letter written in December, 1848, Lowell refers to "the little brook": "Last night I walked to Watertown over the snow, with the new moon before me, and a sky exactly like that in Page's evening landscape. Orion was rising behind me; and, as I stood on the hill just before you enter the village, the stillness of the fields around me was delicious, broken only by the tinkle of a little brook which runs too swiftly for Frost to catch it. My picture of the brook in 'Sir Launfal' was drawn from it."

14. This stanza exemplifies a fine employment of the fancy. Its separate pictures should be clearly brought before the mind. Explain "*crypt*," "*relief*," and "*arabesques*."

15. *Corbel* = a short piece of timber or other material jutting out in a wall as a shoulder-piece.

16. *Yule-log* = Christmas-log; that is, the large log burned in the fire-

place on Christmas Eve. The custom descended from heathen times. From Swedish and Danish *jul*, Christmas.

17. *Beautiful Gate* is apparently a reference to Acts iii. 2, and Josephus ("The Jewish War," Book V, chap. v., 3), where a magnificent column, fifty cubits in height, is described in connection with a gate supposed by some to be the "gate Beautiful" of Scripture.

18. This lesson of human sympathy and love is one that Lowell frequently enforces. In "A Parable," Christ is made to say to the chief priests and rulers and kings: —

"Have ye founded your thrones and altars, then,  
On the bodies and souls of living men?  
And think ye that building shall endure,  
Which shelters the noble and crushes the poor?"

19. In his "My Garden Acquaintances," Lowell devoted a delightful paragraph to the oriole, or hangbird, mentioning especially its nest in the elm.

## XV

## SELECTIONS FROM WHITTIER

## MEMORIES

A BEAUTIFUL and happy girl,  
With step as light as summer air,  
Eyes glad with smiles, and brow of pearl,  
Shadowed by many a careless curl  
Of unconfined and flowing hair,  
A seeming child in everything,  
Save thoughtful brow and ripening charms,  
As Nature wears the smile of Spring  
When sinking into Summer's arms.

A mind rejoicing in the light  
Which melted through its graceful bower,  
Leaf after leaf, dew-moist and bright,  
And stainless in its holy white,  
Unfolding like a morning flower :<sup>1</sup>  
A heart, which, like a fine-toned lute,  
With every breath of feeling woke,  
And, even when the tongue was mute,  
From eye and lip in music spoke.

How thrills once more the lengthening chain  
Of memory, at the thought of thee !  
Old hopes which long in dust have lain,  
Old dreams, come thronging back again,  
And boyhood lives again in me ;  
I feel its glow upon my cheek,  
Its fulness of the heart is mine,  
As when I leaned to hear thee speak,  
Or raised my doubtful eye to thine.

I hear again thy low replies,  
    I feel thy arm within my own,  
And timidly again uprise  
The fringed lids of hazel eyes,  
    With soft brown tresses overblown.  
Ah! memories of sweet summer eves,  
    Of moonlit wave and willowy way,  
Of stars and flowers, and dewy leaves,  
    And smiles and tones more dear than they!

Ere this, thy quiet eye hath smiled  
    My picture of thy youth to see,  
When, half a woman, half a child,  
Thy very artlessness beguiled,  
    And folly's self seemed wise in thee;  
I too can smile, when o'er that hour  
    The lights of memory backward stream,  
Yet feel the while that manhood's power  
    Is vainer than my boyhood's dream.

Years have passed on, and left their trace,  
    Of graver care and deeper thought;  
And unto me the calm, cold face  
Of manhood, and to thee the grace  
    Of woman's pensive beauty brought.  
More wide, perchance, for blame than praise,  
    The school-boy's humble name has flown;  
Thine, in the green and quiet ways  
    Of unobtrusive goodness known.

And wider yet in thought and deed  
    Diverge our pathways, one in youth;  
Thine the Genevan's sternest creed,<sup>2</sup>  
While answers to my spirit's need  
    The Derby dalesman's simple truth.<sup>3</sup>  
For thee, the priestly rite and prayer,  
    And holy day and solemn psalm;  
For me, the silent reverence where  
    My brethren gather, slow and calm.

Yet hath thy spirit left on me  
 An impress Time hath worn not out,  
 And something of myself in thee,  
 A shadow from the past, I see,  
 Lingering; even yet, thy way about ;  
 Not wholly can the heart unlearn  
 That lesson of its better hours,  
 Not yet hath Time's dull footstep worn  
 To common dust that path of flowers.

Thus, while at times before our eyes  
 The shadows melt, and fall apart,  
 And, smiling through them, round us lies  
 The warm light of our morning skies,—  
 The Indian Summer of the heart !  
 In secret sympathies of mind,  
 In founts of feeling which retain  
 Their pure, fresh flow, we yet may find  
 Our early dreams not wholly vain !

### THE SHIP-BUILDERS

THE sky is ruddy in the east,  
 The earth is gray below,  
 And, spectral in the river-mist,  
 The ship's white timbers show.  
 Then let the sounds of measured stroke  
 And grating saw begin ;  
 The broad-axe to the gnarlèd oak,  
 The mallet to the pin !

Hark ! — roars the bellows, blast on blast,  
 The sooty smithy <sup>1</sup> jars,  
 And fire-sparks, rising far and fast,  
 Are fading with the stars.  
 All day for us the smith shall stand  
 Beside that flashing forge ;  
 All day for us his heavy hand  
 The groaning anvil scourge.<sup>2</sup>

From far-off hills, the panting team  
For us is toiling near ;  
For us the raftsmen down the stream  
Their island barges <sup>3</sup> steer.  
Rings out for us the axe-man's stroke  
In forests old and still, —  
For us the century-circled oak  
Falls crashing down his hill.

Up ! — up ! — in nobler toil than ours  
No craftsmen bear a part :  
We make of Nature's giant powers  
The slaves of human Art.  
Lay rib to rib, and beam to beam,  
And drive the treenails <sup>5</sup> free ;  
Nor faithless joint nor yawning seam  
Shall tempt the searching sea !

Where'er the keel of our good ship  
The sea's rough field shall plough, —  
Where'er her tossing spars <sup>6</sup> shall drip  
With salt-spray caught below, —  
That ship must heed her master's beck,  
Her helm obey his hand,  
And seamen tread her reeling deck  
As if they trod the land.

Her oaken ribs the vulture-beak  
Of Northern ice may peel ;  
The sunken rock and coral peak  
May grate along her keel ;  
And know we well the painted shell  
We give to wind and wave,  
Must float, the sailor's citadel,  
Or sink, the sailor's grave !

Ho ! — strike away the bars and blocks,  
And set the good ship free !  
Why lingers on these dusty rocks

The young bride of the sea?  
 Look! how she moves adown the grooves,  
     In graceful beauty now!  
 How lowly on the breast she loves  
     Sinks down her virgin prow!

God bless her! wheresoe'er the breeze  
     Her snowy wing shall fan,  
 Aside the frozen <sup>7</sup> Hebrides,  
     Or sultry Hindostan!  
 Where'er, in mart or on the main,  
     With peaceful flag unfurled,  
 She helps to wind the silken chain  
     Of commerce round the world!

Speed on the ship! — But let her bear  
     No merchandise of sin,  
 No groaning cargo of despair  
     Her roomy hold within;  
 No Lethean drug for Eastern lands,  
     Nor poison-draught for ours;  
 But honest fruits of toiling hands  
     And Nature's sun and showers.<sup>8</sup>

Be hers the Prairie's golden grain,  
     The Desert's golden sand,  
 The clustered fruits of sunny Spain,  
     The spice of Morning-land!  
 Her pathway on the open main  
     May blessings follow free,  
 And glad hearts welcome back again  
     Her white sails from the sea!

#### BARCLAY OF URY

UP the streets of Aberdeen,<sup>1</sup>  
 By the kirk and college green,  
     Rode the Laird of Ury;

Close behind him, close beside,  
Foul of mouth and evil-eyed  
    Pressed the mob in fury.

Flouted him the drunken churl,  
Jeered at him the serving-girl,  
    Prompt to please her master;  
And the begging carlin,<sup>2</sup> late  
Fed and clothed at Ury's gate,  
    Cursed him as he passed her.

Yet with calm and stately mien,  
Up the streets of Aberdeen  
    Came he slowly riding:  
And, to all he saw and heard,  
Answering not with bitter word,  
    Turning not for chiding.

Came a troop with broadswords swinging,  
Bits and bridles sharply ringing,  
    Loose and free and foward:  
Quoth the foremost, "Ride him down!  
Push him! prick him! through the town  
    Drive the Quaker coward!"

But from out the thickening crowd  
Cried a sudden voice and loud:  
    "Barclay! Ho! a Barclay!"  
And the old man at his side  
Saw a comrade, battle tried,  
    Scarred and sunburned darkly;

Who with ready weapon bare,  
Fronting to the troopers there,  
    Cried aloud: "God save us,  
Call ye coward him who stood  
Ankle deep in Lützen's <sup>3</sup> blood,  
    With the brave Gustavus?"

“Nay, I do not need thy sword,  
Comrade mine,” said Ury’s lord ;

“Put it up, I pray thee :  
Passive to his holy will,  
Trust I in my Master still,  
Even though he slay me.

“Pledges of thy love and faith,  
Proved on many a field of death,  
Not by me are needed.”

Marvelled much that henchman bold,  
That his laird, so stout of old,  
Now so meekly pleaded.

“Woe’s the day !” he sadly said,  
With a slowly shaking head,  
And a look of pity ;  
Ury’s honest lord reviled,  
Mock of knave and sport of child,  
In his own good city !

“Speak the word, and master, mine,  
As we charged on Tilly’s <sup>4</sup> line,  
And his Walloon <sup>5</sup> lancers,  
Smiting through their midst we’ll teach  
Civil look and decent speech  
To these boyish prancers !”

“Marvel not, mine ancient friend,  
Like beginning, like the end,”  
Quoth the Laird of Ury ;  
“Is the sinful servant more  
Than his gracious Lord who bore  
Bonds and stripes in Jewry ?

“Give me joy that in his name  
I can bear, with patient frame,  
All these vain ones offer ;  
While for them He suffereth long,  
Shall I answer wrong with wrong,  
Scoffing with the scoffer ?

"Happier I, with loss of all,  
 Hunted, outlawed, held in thrall,  
     With few friends to greet me,  
 Than when reeve <sup>6</sup> and squire were seen,  
 Riding out from Aberdeen,  
     With bared heads to meet me.

"When each good wife, o'er and o'er,  
 Blessed me as I passed her door ;  
     And the snooded <sup>7</sup> daughter,  
 From her casement glancing down,  
 Smiled on him who bore renown  
     From red fields of slaughter.

"Hard to feel the stranger's scoff,  
 Hard the old friend's falling off,  
     Hard to learn forgiving :  
 But the Lord his own rewards,  
 And his love with theirs accords,  
     Warm and fresh and living.

"Through this dark and stormy night  
 Faith beholds a feeble light  
     Up the blackness streaking ;  
 Knowing God's own time is best,  
 In a patient hope I rest  
     For the full day-breaking !"

So the Laird of Ury said,  
 Turning slow his horse's head  
     Towards the Tolbooth prison,  
 Where, through iron grates, he heard  
 Poor disciples of the Word  
     Preach of Christ arisen !

Not in vain, Confessor old,  
 Unto us the tale is told  
     Of thy day of trial ;  
 Every age on him, who strays  
 From its broad and beaten ways,  
     Pours its sevenfold vial.

Happy he whose inward ear  
 Angel comfortings can hear,  
 O'er the rabble's laughter ;  
 And while Hatred's fagots burn,  
 Glimpses through the smoke discern  
 Of the good hereafter.

Knowing this, that never yet  
 Share of Truth was vainly set  
 In the World's wide fallow ;  
 After hands shall sow the seed,  
 After hands from hill and mead  
 Reap the harvests yellow.

Thus, with somewhat of the Seer,  
 Must the moral pioneer  
 From the Future borrow ;  
 Clothe the waste with dreams of grain,  
 And, on midnight's sky of rain,  
 Paint the golden morrow !

### MAUD MULLER

MAUD MULLER on a summer's day  
 Raked the meadow sweet with hay.

Beneath her torn hat glowed the wealth  
 Of simple beauty and rustic health.

Singing, she wrought, and her merry glee  
 The mock-bird echoed from his tree.

But when she glanced to the far-off town,  
 White from its hill-slope looking down,

The sweet song died, and a vague unrest  
 And a nameless longing filled her breast —

A wish, that she hardly dared to own,  
 For something better than she had known.

The Judge rode slowly down the lane,  
Smoothing his horse's chestnut mane.

He drew his bridle in the shade  
Of the apple-trees, to greet the maid,

And asked a draught from the spring that flowed  
Through the meadow across the road.

She stooped where the cool spring bubbled up,  
And filled for him her small tin cup,

And blushed as she gave it, looking down  
On her feet so bare, and her tattered gown.

"Thanks!" said the Judge; "a sweeter draught  
From a fairer hand was never quaffed."

He spoke of the grass and flowers and trees,  
Of the singing birds and the humming-bees;

Then talked of the haying, and wondered whether  
The cloud in the west would bring foul weather.

And Maud forgot her brier-torn gown,  
And her graceful ankles bare and brown;

And listened, while a pleased surprise  
Looked from her long-lashed hazel eyes.

At last, like one who for delay  
Seeks a vain excuse, he rode away.

Maud Muller looked and sighed: "Ah me!  
That I the Judge's bride might be!

"He would dress me up in silks so fine,  
And praise and toast me at his wine.

"My father should wear a broadcloth coat;  
My brother should sail a painted boat.

"I'd dress my mother so grand and gay,  
And the baby should have a new toy each day.

"And I'd feed the hungry and clothe the poor,  
And all should bless me who left our door."

The Judge looked back as he climbed the hill,  
And saw Maud Muller standing still.

"A form more fair, a face more sweet  
Ne'er hath it been my lot to meet.

"And her modest answer and graceful air  
Show her wise and good as she is fair.

"Would she were mine, and I to-day,  
Like her, a harvester of hay :

"No doubtful balance of rights and wrongs,  
Nor weary lawyers with endless tongues,

"But low of cattle and song of birds,  
And health and quiet and loving words."

But he thought of his sisters proud and cold,  
And his mother vain of her rank and gold.

So, closing his heart, the Judge rode on,  
And Maud was left in the field alone.

But the lawyers smiled that afternoon,  
When he hummed in court an old love-tune ;

And the young girl mused beside the well  
Till the rain on the unraked clover fell.

He wedded a wife of richest dower,  
Who lived for fashion as he for power.

Yet oft, in his marble hearth's bright glow,  
He watched a picture come and go ;

And sweet Maud Muller's hazel eyes  
Looked out in their innocent surprise.

Oft, when the wine in his glass was red,  
He longed for the wayside well instead;

And closed his eyes on his garnished rooms  
To dream of meadows and clover-blooms.

And the proud man sighed, with a secret pain,  
"Ah, that I were free again!"

"Free as when I rode that day,  
Where the barefoot maiden raked her hay."

She wedded a man unlearned and poor,  
And many children played round her door.

But care and sorrow, and childbirth pain,  
Left their traces on heart and brain.

And oft, when the summer sun shone hot  
On the new-mown hay in the meadow lot,

And she heard the little spring brook fall  
Over the roadside, through the wall,

In the shade of the apple-tree again  
She saw a rider draw his rein.

And, gazing down with timid grace,  
She felt his pleased eyes read her face.

Sometimes her narrow kitchen walls  
Stretched away into stately halls;

The weary wheel to a spinnet <sup>1</sup> turned,  
The tallow candle an astral <sup>2</sup> burned,

And for him who sat by the chimney lug,  
Dozing and grumbling o'er pipe and mug,

A manly form at her side she saw,  
And joy was duty and love was law.

Then she took up her burden of life again,  
Saying only, "It might have been."

Alas for maiden, alas for Judge,  
For rich repiner and household drudge !

God pity them both ! and pity us all,  
Who vainly the dreams of youth recall.

For of all sad words of tongue or pen,  
The saddest are these : "It might have been!"

Ah, well ! for us all some sweet hope lies  
Deeply buried from human eyes ;

And, in the hereafter, angels may  
Roll the stone from its grave away !

---

### TAULER

TAULER,<sup>1</sup> the preacher, walked, one autumn day,  
Without the walls of Strasburg by the Rhine,  
Pondering the solemn Miracle of Life ;  
As one who, wandering in a starless night,  
Feels, momently, the jar of unseen waves,  
And hears the thunder of an unknown sea,  
Breaking along an unimagined shore.

And as he walked he prayed. Even the same  
Old prayer with which, for half a score of years,  
Morning, and noon, and evening, lip and heart  
Had groaned : "Have pity upon me, Lord !  
Thou seest, while teaching others, I am blind.  
Send me a man who can direct my steps!"

Then, as he mused, he heard along his path  
A sound as of an old man's staff among

The dry, dead linden-leaves ; and, looking up,  
He saw a stranger, weak, and poor, and old.

"Peace be unto thee, father!" Tauler said,  
"God give thee a good day!" The old man raised  
Slowly his calm blue eyes. "I thank thee, son ;  
But *all* my days are good, and none are ill."

Wondering thereat, the preacher spake again,  
"God give thee happy life." The old man smiled,  
"I never am unhappy."

Tauler laid

His hand upon the stranger's coarse gray sleeve :  
"Tell me, O father, what thy strange words mean.  
Surely man's days are evil, and his life  
Sad as the grave it leads to." "Nay, my son,  
Our times are in God's hands, and all our days  
Are as our needs ; for shadow as for sun,  
For cold as heat, for want as wealth, alike  
Our thanks are due, since that is best which is ;  
And that which is not, sharing not his life,  
Is evil only as devoid of good.  
And for the happiness of which I spake,  
I find it in submission to his will,  
And calm trust in the holy Trinity  
Of Knowledge, Goodness, and Almighty Power."  
Silently wondering, for a little space,  
Stood the great preacher, then he spake as one  
Who, suddenly grappling with a haunting thought  
Which long has followed, whispering through the dark  
Strange terrors, drags it, shrieking, into light ;  
"What if God's will consign thee hence to Hell?"

"Then," said the stranger cheerily, "be it so.  
What Hell may be I know not ; this I know, —  
I cannot lose the presence of the Lord :  
One arm, Humility, takes hold upon  
His dear Humanity ; the other, Love,

Clasps his Divinity. So where I go  
He goes ; and better fire-walled Hell with Him  
Than golden-gated Paradise without."

Tears sprang in Tauler's eyes. A sudden light,  
Like the first ray which fell on chaos, clove  
Apart the shadow wherein he had walked  
Darkly at noon. And, as the strange old man  
Went his slow way, until his silver hair  
Set like the white moon where the hills of vine  
Slope to the Rhine, he bowed his head and said :  
" My prayer is answered. God hath sent the man  
Long sought, to teach me, by his simple trust,  
Wisdom the weary schoolmen never knew."

So, entering with a changed and cheerful step  
The city gates, he saw, far down the street,  
A mighty shadow break the light of noon,  
Which tracing backward till its airy lines  
Hardened to stony plinths,<sup>2</sup> he raised his eyes  
O'er broad façade and lofty pediment,<sup>3</sup>  
O'er architrave <sup>4</sup> and frieze and sainted niche,  
Up the stone lace-work chiselled by the wise  
Erwin of Steinbach,<sup>5</sup> dizzily up to where  
In the noon-brightness the great Minster's tower,<sup>6</sup>  
Jewelled with sunbeams on its mural crown,  
Rose like a visible prayer. " Behold !" he said,  
" The stranger's faith made plain before mine eyes.  
As yonder tower outstretches to the earth  
The dark triangle of its shade alone  
When the clear day is shining on its top,  
So, darkness in the pathway of Man's life  
Is but the shadow of God's providence,  
By the great Sun of Wisdom cast thereon ;  
And what is dark below is light in Heaven."

## NOTES TO WHITTIER

For a general introduction to the selections, see the sketch of Whittier.

## MEMORIES

There is great tenderness in this poem. It points to a romance that left a tinge of sadness on the poet's life.

1. This sentence is neither felicitous nor clear. The poet was encumbered by the difficulties of his metre and rhyme. "Leaf after leaf," etc., describes the manner in which the mind unfolded "like a morning flower."

2. *The Genevan* is John Calvin. His theological system is known as Calvinism. Its distinguishing features are: 1. Original sin, or total depravity; 2. Predestination; 3. Particular redemption; 4. Effectual calling; and 5. Perseverance of the saints. To the Quaker poet several of these doctrines appeared "stern."

3. The Derby dalesman is George Fox (born in England in 1624), the founder of the sect of Friends, or Quakers. The most distinctive point of doctrine is their belief in the immediate influence of the Holy Spirit in worship and all other religious acts.

## THE SHIP-BUILDERS

This poem is one of the "Songs of Labor." The object of these songs, as stated in the dedication, is to show,—

"The unsung beauty hid life's common things below."

They were intended to reflect the life of New England, but they are equally applicable to the same labors in all parts of our country.

1. *Smithy* = the shop of a smith. This suggests Longfellow's lines:—

"Under a spreading chestnut-tree  
The village smithy stands."

2. *Scourge* and *forge* will serve to illustrate Whittier's defective rhyme. There are several other instances in this poem; point them out.

3. Explain the phrase *island barges*.

4. Define *Art* as here used.

5. *Treenail* = a long wooden pin used in fastening the planks of a ship to the timbers.

6. *Spars* is a general term for mast, yard, boom, and gaff.

7. This adjective is not well chosen. "Enjoying the benefit of the Gulf Stream, the climate of the Hebrides is peculiarly mild. Snow seldom lies long on the sea-shores or low grounds, and in sheltered spots tender plants are not nipped by winter frosts."

8. In this stanza we discern the uncompromising moralist, who condemns everything that debases society, — the slave-trade, the opium traffic, and the liquor curse.

#### BARCLAY OF URY

In reference to this poem, Whittier has the following note: "Among the earliest converts to the doctrines of Friends in Scotland was Barclay of Ury, an old and distinguished soldier, who had fought under Gustavus Adolphus in Germany. As a Quaker, he became the object of persecution and abuse at the hands of the magistrates and the populace. None bore the indignities of the mob with greater patience and nobleness of soul than this once proud gentleman and soldier. One of his friends, on an occasion of uncommon rudeness, lamented that he should be treated so harshly in his old age who had been so honored before. 'I find more satisfaction,' said Barclay, 'as well as honor, in being thus insulted for my religious principles, than when, a few years ago, it was usual for the magistrates, as I passed the city of Aberdeen, to meet me on the road and conduct me to public entertainment in their hall and then escort me out again, to gain my favor.'"

1. *Aberdeen* is the chief city and seaport in the north of Scotland, at the mouth of the river Dee. It is the seat of Marischal College, referred to in the next line. In 1860 this college, united with King's College, became the University of Aberdeen.

2. *Carlin* = a stout old woman; a Scottish word.

3. *Lützen* is a small town in Saxony. At this point a great battle was fought in 1632 between Gustavus Adolphus and Wallenstein. Victory finally remained with the Swedes.

4. *Tilly* was one of the greatest generals of the seventeenth century. During the Thirty Years' War he was victor in thirty-six battles; but finally he met Gustavus Adolphus, by whom he was defeated.

5. The *Walloons* are descendants of the old Gallic Belgæ, "who held their ground among the Ardennes Mountains when the rest of Gaul was overrun by the German conquerors." They number about two millions in Belgium and Holland.

6. *Reeve* = an officer, steward. A. S. *gerefæ*, steward. Obsolete except in compounds; as, *shire-reeve*, now written *sheriff*.

7. *Snooded* = wearing a snood; that is, a band which binds the hair of a young, unmarried woman. (Scot.)

## MAUD MULLER

This is, perhaps, the most popular of Whittier's poems. It is remarkably clear throughout. It illustrates the thoughtful moral tone of the poet; and the last stanzas, with their touching sadness, seem to have sprung from his own experience. This fact gives them an additional interest. The poet has been mildly criticised for calling the heroine, a plain New England country girl, by the name of Maud; but it is not easy to think of any other name that would have suited better.

1. *Spinet* = a musical instrument resembling the harpsichord, but of smaller size and lighter tone.

2. *Astral* = astral lamp; a lamp with a ring-shaped reservoir so placed that its shadow does not fall directly below the flame.

## TAULER

"The religious element in Whittier's poems," says Underwood, "is something vital and inseparable. The supremacy of moral ideas is indeed inculcated by almost all great poets, and at no time more than in the present. And in almost all modern verse the filial relation of man to his Creator, and the immanence of the Spirit in the human heart, are at least tacitly recognized. The leading poets of America are, one and all, reverent in feeling and tone. But it is quite evident that Whittier alone is religious in a high and inward sense." His deep religious feeling is exhibited in this poem.

1. *John Tauler* (1290-1361) was born at Strasburg, where he spent most of his life. He was one of the most prominent representatives of mediæval German mysticism, and one of the greatest preachers of his time. His words "came home to the heart of both high and low, spreading light everywhere, and justly procuring for him the title of *doctor illuminatus*."

2. *Plinth* = "the square member at the bottom of the base of a column. Also the plain projecting band forming a base of a wall." — CHAMBERS.

3. *Pediment* = the triangular ornamental space over a portico, or over doors, windows, and gates.

4. *Architrave* = the part of an entablature that rests immediately on the column. Above the architrave is the *frieze*. See Dictionary for illustration.

5. *Erwin of Steinbach* was one of the architects of the Strasburg Cathedral, which was four centuries in building.

6. This tower reaches to a height of 465 feet.

## XVI

## SELECTIONS FROM HOLMES

## OLD IRONSIDES

Av, tear her tattered ensign down!  
Long has it waved on high,  
And many an eye has danced to see  
That banner in the sky ;  
Beneath it rung the battle shout,  
And burst the cannon's roar ; —  
The meteor of the ocean air  
Shall sweep the clouds no more !

Her deck, once red with heroes' blood,  
Where knelt the vanquished foe,  
When winds were hurrying o'er the flood  
And waves were white below,  
No more shall feel the victor's tread,  
Or know the conquered knee ; —  
The harpies <sup>2</sup> of the shore shall pluck  
The eagle of the sea.

O better that her shattered hulk  
Should sink beneath the wave ;  
Her thunders shook the mighty deep,  
And there should be her grave ;  
Nail to the mast her holy flag,  
Set every threadbare sail,  
And give her to the god of storms,<sup>3</sup>  
The lightning and the gale.

## THE LAST LEAF

I SAW him once before,  
As he passed by the door,  
    And again  
The pavement stones resound,  
As he totters o'er the ground  
    With his cane.

They say that in his prime,  
Ere the pruning-knife of Time  
    Cut him down,  
Not a better man was found  
By the Crier on his round  
    Through the town.

But now he walks the streets,  
And he looks at all he meets  
    Sad and wan,  
And he shakes his feeble head,  
That it seems as if he said,  
    "They are gone."

The mossy marbles rest  
On the lips that he has prest  
    In their bloom,  
And the names he loved to hear  
Have been carved for many a year  
    On the tomb.

My grandmamma has said —  
Poor old lady, she is dead  
    Long ago —  
That he had a Roman nose,  
And his cheek was like a rose  
    In the snow.

But now his nose is thin,  
And it rests upon his chin  
    Like a staff,

And a crook is in his back,  
 And a melancholy crack  
 In his laugh.

I know it is a sin  
 For me to sit and grin  
 At him here ;  
 But the old three-cornered hat,  
 And the breeches, and all that,  
 Are so queer !

And if I should live to be  
 The last leaf upon the tree  
 In the spring,  
 Let them smile, as I do now,  
 At the old forsaken bough  
 Where I cling.

### THE HEIGHT OF THE RIDICULOUS

I WROTE some lines once on a time  
 In wondrous merry mood,  
 And thought, as usual, men would say  
 They were exceeding good.

They were so queer, so very queer,  
 I laughed as I would die ;  
 Albeit, in the general way,  
 A sober man am I.

I called my servant, and he came ;  
 How kind it was of him  
 To mind a slender man like me,  
 He of the mighty limb !

“These to the printer,” I exclaimed,  
 And, in my humorous way,  
 I added (as a trifling jest)  
 “There’ll be the devil to pay.”

He took the paper, and I watched,  
And saw him peep within;  
At the first line he read, his face  
Was all upon the grin.

He read the next; the grin grew broad,  
And shot from ear to ear;  
He read the third; a chuckling noise  
I now began to hear.

The fourth; he broke into a roar;  
The fifth; his waistband split;  
The sixth; he burst five buttons off,  
And tumbled in a fit.

Ten days and nights, with sleepless eye,  
I watched that wretched man;  
And since, I never dare to write  
As funny as I can.

---

### THE CHAMBERED NAUTILUS

THIS is the ship of pearl, which, poets feign,  
Sails the unshadowed main,—  
The venturous bark that flings  
On the sweet summer wind its purpled wings  
In gulfs enchanted, where the Siren<sup>1</sup> sings,  
And coral reefs lie bare,  
Where the cold sea-maids<sup>2</sup> rise to sun their streaming hair.

Its webs of living gauze no more unfurl;<sup>3</sup>  
Wrecked is the ship of pearl!  
And every chambered cell,  
Where its dim dreaming life was wont to dwell,  
As the frail tenant shaped his growing shell,  
Before thee lies revealed,—  
Its irised ceiling rent, its sunless crypt unsealed!

Year after year beheld the silent toil  
 That spread his lustrous coil ;  
 Still, as the spiral grew,  
 He left the past year's dwelling for the new,  
 Stole with soft step its shining archway through,  
 Built up its idle door,<sup>4</sup>  
 Stretched in his last-found home, and knew the old no more.

Thanks for the heavenly message brought by thee,  
 Child of the wandering sea,  
 Cast from her lap forlorn !  
 From thy dead lips a clearer note is born  
 Than ever Triton <sup>5</sup> blew from wreathèd horn !  
 While on mine ear it rings,  
 Through the deep caves of thought I hear a voice that sings : —  
 Build thee more stately mansions, O my soul,  
 As the swift seasons roll !  
 Leave thy low-vaulted past !  
 Let each new temple, nobler than the last,  
 Shut thee from heaven with a dome more vast,  
 Till thou at length art free,  
 Leaving thine outgrown shell by life's unresting sea !

### CONTENTMENT

LITTLE I ask ; my wants are few ;  
 I only wish a hut of stone,  
 (A *very plain* brown stone will do,) —  
 That I may call my own ; —  
 And close at hand is such a one,  
 In yonder street that fronts the sun.

Plain food is quite enough for me ;  
 Three courses are as good as ten ; —  
 If Nature can subsist on three,  
 Thank Heaven for three. Amen !  
 I always thought cold victual nice ; —  
 My *choice* would be vanilla-ice.

I care not much for gold or land ; —  
 Give me a mortgage here and there, —  
 Some good bank-stock, some note of hand,  
 Or trifling railroad share ; —  
 I only ask that Fortune send  
 A *little* more than I shall spend.

Honors are silly toys, I know,  
 And titles are but empty names ; —  
 I would, *perhaps*, be Plenipo,<sup>1</sup> —  
 But only near St. James<sup>2</sup> : —  
 I'm very sure I should not care  
 To fill our Gubernator's chair.

Jewels are bawbles ; 'tis a sin  
 To care for such unfruitful things ; —  
 One good-sized diamond in a pin, —  
 Some, *not so large*, in rings, —  
 A ruby, and a pearl, or so,  
 Will do for me ; — I laugh at show.

My dame should dress in cheap attire ;  
 (Good, heavy silks are never dear) ; —  
 I own perhaps I *might* desire  
 Some shawls of true Cashmere, —  
 Some marrowy crapes of China silk,  
 Like wrinkled skins on scalded milk.

I would not have the horse I drive  
 So fast that folks must stop and stare :  
 An easy gait — two, forty-five —  
 Suits me ; I do not care ; —  
 Perhaps, for just a *single* *spurt*,  
 Some seconds less would do no hurt.<sup>3</sup>

Of pictures, I should like to own  
 Titians<sup>4</sup> and Raphaels<sup>5</sup> three or four, —  
 I love so much their style and tone, —

One Turner,<sup>6</sup> and no more,  
 (A landscape, — foreground golden dirt, —  
 The sunshine painted with a squirt).

Of books but few, — some fifty score  
 For daily use, and bound for wear ;  
 The rest upon an upper floor ; —  
 Some *little luxury there*  
 Of red morocco's gilded gleam,  
 And vellum rich as country cream.

Busts, cameos, gems, — such things as these,  
 Which others often show for pride,  
*I* value for their power to please,  
 And selfish churls deride ; —  
*One* Stradivarius,<sup>7</sup> I confess,  
*Two* Meerschaums, I would fain possess.

Wealth's wasteful tricks I will not learn,  
 Nor ape the glittering upstart fool ; —  
 Shall not carved tables serve my turn,  
 But *all* must be of buhl?<sup>8</sup>  
 Give grasping pomp its double share, —  
 I ask but *one* recumbent chair.

Thus humble let me live and die,  
 Nor long for Midas' <sup>9</sup> golden touch ;  
 If Heaven more generous gifts deny,  
 I shall not miss them *much*, —  
 Too grateful for the blessing lent  
 Of simple tastes and mind content.

THE DEACON'S MASTERPIECE  
 OR, THE WONDERFUL "ONE-HOSS SHAY"

A LOGICAL STORY

HAVE you heard of the wonderful one-hoss shay,  
 That was built in such a logical way  
 It ran a hundred years to a day,

And then, of a sudden, it — ah, but stay,  
 I'll tell you what happened without delay,  
 Scaring the parson into fits,  
 Frightening people out of their wits, —  
 Have you ever heard of that, I say?

Seventeen hundred and fifty-five,  
*Georgius Secundus* was then alive, —  
 Snuffy old drone from the German hive ;  
 That was the year when Lisbon-town  
 Saw the earth open and gulp her down,  
 And Braddock's army was done so brown,  
 Left without a scalp to its crown.  
 It was on the terrible Earthquake-day  
 That the Deacon finished the one-hoss shay.

Now in building of chaises, I tell you what,  
 There is always *somewhere* a weakest spot, —  
 In hub, tire, felloe, in spring or thill,  
 In panel, or crossbar, or floor, or sill,  
 In screw, bolt, thoroughbrace, — lurking still,  
 Find it somewhere you must and will, —  
 Above or below, within or without, —  
 And that's the reason, beyond a doubt,  
 That a chaise *breaks down*, but doesn't *wear out*.

But the Deacon swore, (as Deacons do,  
 With an "I dew vum," or an "I tell *yeou*,")  
 He would build one shay to beat the taown  
 'n' the keounty 'n' all the kentry raoun' ;  
 It should be so built that it couldn't break daown ;  
 "Fur," said the Deacon, "t's mighty plain  
 That the weakes' place mus' stan' the strain ;  
 'n' the way t' fix it, uz I maintain,  
 Is only jest . . .  
 T' make that place uz strong uz the rest."

So the Deacon inquired of the village folk  
 Where he could find the strongest oak,

That couldn't be split nor bent nor broke, —  
 That was for spokes and floors and sills ;  
 He sent for lancewood to make the thills ;  
 The crossbars were ash, from the straightest trees,  
 The panels of white-wood, that cuts like cheese,  
 But lasts like iron for things like these ;  
 The hubs of logs from the "Settler's ellum," —  
 Last of its timber, — they couldn't sell 'em,  
 Never an axe had seen their chips,  
 And the wedges flew from between their lips,  
 Their blunt ends frizzled like celery-tips ;  
 Step and prop-iron, bolt and screw,  
 Spring, tire, axle, and linchpin too,  
 Steel of the finest, bright and blue ;  
 Thoroughbrace bison-skin, thick and wide ;  
 Boot, top, dasher, from tough old hide  
 Found in the pit when the tanner died.  
 That was the way he "put her through." —  
 "There!" said the Deacon, "naow she'll dew!"

Do! I tell you, I rather guess  
 She was a wonder, and nothing less !  
 Colts grew horses, beards turned gray,  
 Deacon and deaconess dropped away,  
 Children and grandchildren — where were they ?  
 But there stood the stout old one-hoss shay  
 As fresh as on Lisbon-earthquake-day !

EIGHTEEN HUNDRED ; — it came and found  
 The Deacon's masterpiece strong and sound.  
 Eighteen hundred increased by ten ; —  
 "Hahnsum kerridge" they called it then.  
 Eighteen hundred and twenty came ; —  
 Running as usual ; much the same.  
 Thirty and forty at last arrive,  
 And then came fifty, and FIFTY-FIVE.

Little of all we value here  
 Wakes on the morn of its hundredth year

Without both feeling and looking queer.  
 In fact, there's nothing that keeps its youth,  
 So far as I know, but a tree and truth.  
 (This is a moral that runs at large;  
 Take it. — You're welcome. — No extra charge.)

FIRST OF NOVEMBER, — the Earthquake-day —  
 There are traces of age in the one-hoss shay,  
 A general flavor of mild decay,  
 But nothing local, as one may say.  
 There couldn't be, — for the Deacon's art  
 Had made it so like in every part  
 That there wasn't a chance for one to start.  
 For the wheels were just as strong as the thills,  
 And the floor was just as strong as the sills,  
 And the panels just as strong as the floor,  
 And the whipple-tree neither less nor more,  
 And the back-crossbar as strong as the fore,  
 And spring and axle and hub *encore*.  
 And yet, *as a whole*, it is past a doubt,  
 In another hour it will be *worn out!*

First of November, 'Fifty-five !  
 This morning the parson takes a drive.  
 Now, small boys, get out of the way !  
 Here comes the wonderful one-hoss shay,  
 Drawn by a rat-tailed, ewe-necked bay.  
 "Huddup!" said the parson. — Off went they.  
 The parson was working his Sunday's text, —  
 Had got to *fifthly*, and stopped perplexed  
 At what the — Moses — was coming next.  
 All at once the horse stood still,  
 Close by the meet'n'-house on the hill.  
 — First a shiver, and then a thrill,  
 Then something decidedly like a spill, —  
 And the parson was sitting upon a rock,  
 At half past nine by the meet'n'-house clock, —  
 Just at the hour of the Earthquake shock !

— What do you think the parson found,  
When he got up and stared around?  
The poor old chaise in a heap or mound,  
As if it had been to the mill and ground!  
You see, of course, if you're not a dunce,  
How it went to pieces all at once,—  
All at once, and nothing first,—  
Just as bubbles do when they burst.

End of the wonderful one-hoss shay.  
Logic is logic. That's all I say.

## NOTES TO HOLMES

FOR a general introduction to the selections, see the sketch of Holmes.

## OLD IRONSIDES

The interesting circumstances connected with the publication of this poem are mentioned in the sketch of Holmes.

1. This title was popularly conferred on the frigate Constitution in recognition of her numerous victories. She was launched at Boston in 1797. She took a prominent part in the bombardment of Tripoli in 1804, and especially distinguished herself in the War of 1812. "In the course of two years and nine months," says James Fenimore Cooper, "this ship had been in three actions, had been twice critically chased, and had captured five vessels of war. In all her service, her good fortune was remarkable. She never was dismasted, never got ashore, and scarcely ever suffered any of the usual accidents of the sea. Though so often in battle, no very serious slaughter ever took place on board her."

2. *Harpy* = in mythology a fabulous winged monster, ravenous and filthy, having the face of a woman and the body of a vulture, with long claws, and with a face pale with hunger. Hence, one that is rapacious or ravenous; a plunderer.

3. *God of storms* = Neptune, the god of the sea. The symbol of his power was a trident, with which he raised and stilled storms.

## THE LAST LEAF

This poem illustrates the mingled humor and pathos of Holmes. "Is there in all literature," queries his biographer, Morse, "a lyric in which drollery, passing nigh unto ridicule, yet stopping short of it, and sentiment becoming pathos, yet not too profound, are so exquisitely intermingled as in 'The Last Leaf'? To spill into the mixture the tiniest fraction of a drop too much of either ingredient was to ruin all. How skilfully, how daintily, how unerringly Dr. Holmes compounded it, all readers of English know well. It was a light and trifling bit, if you will; but how often has it made the smile and the tear dispute for mastery, in a rivalry which is never quite decided!"

## THE HEIGHT OF THE RIDICULOUS

The poet's comic vein reaches its climax in this bit of extravaganza. There are several personal touches in it. His feelings toward the public were so kindly that he always expected his productions to meet with a favorable reception. He had a good opinion of these lines:—

“And thought, as usual, men would say  
They were exceeding good.”

In the third stanza there is a reference to his slight build.

## THE CHAMBERED NAUTILUS

This selection, as well as the remaining ones, is taken from “The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table.” It is there introduced as follows: “Did I not say to you a little while ago that the universe swam in an ocean of similitudes and analogies? I will not quote Cowley, or Burns, or Wordsworth, just now, to show you what thoughts were suggested to them by the simplest natural objects, such as a flower or a leaf; but I will read you a few lines, if you do not object, suggested by looking at a section of one of those chambered shells to which is given the name of Pearly Nautilus. We need not trouble ourselves about the distinction between this and the Paper Nautilus, the *Argonauta* of the ancients. The name applied to both shows that each has long been compared to a ship, as you may see more fully in Webster's Dictionary, or the ‘Encyclopædia,’ to which he refers. If you will look into Roget's Bridgewater Treatise, you will find a figure of one of these shells and a section of it. The last will show you the series of enlarging compartments successively dwelt in by the animal that inhabits the shell, which is built in a widening spiral. Can you find no lesson in this?”

“The Chambered Nautilus” was a favorite poem with Holmes. “In writing the poem,” he says, “I was filled with a better feeling — the highest state of mental exaltation and the most crystalline clairvoyance, as it seemed to me — I mean that lucid vision of one's thought, and of all forms of expression which will be at once precise and musical, which is the poet's special gift, however large or small in amount or value.”

This poem is the high-water mark of the author's poetic achievement. In this single flight he has not been often surpassed in America.

1. *Siren* = one of three damsels, according to mythology, said to dwell near the island of Capræ, in the Mediterranean, and to sing with such sweetness that they who sailed by forgot their country, and died in an ecstasy of delight.

2. *Sea-maid* = mermaid, a sea nymph with a fish's tail. *Mermaid* is from Fr. *mer*, sea, and Eng. *maid*.

3. "The story of its spreading a sail is as fabulous as the similar story regarding the argonaut." — CHAMBERS.

4. The shell is *camerated*, or divided into chambers, by transverse curved partitions of shelly matter.

5. *Triton* = a fabled sea demigod, the trumpeter of Neptune.

### CONTENTMENT

This poem is introduced in the "Autocrat" as follows: "Should you like to hear what moderate wishes life brings one to at last? I used to be very ambitious, — wasteful, extravagant, and luxurious in all my fancies. Read too much in the 'Arabian Nights.' Must have the lamp, — couldn't do without the ring. Exercise every morning on the brazen horse. Plump down into castles as full of little milk-white princesses as a nest is of young sparrows. All love me dearly at once. Charming idea of *life*, but too high-colored for the reality. I have outgrown all this; my tastes have become exceedingly primitive, — almost, perhaps, ascetic. We carry happiness into our condition, but must not hope to find it there. I think you will be willing to hear some lines which embody the subdued and limited desires of my maturity."

1. *Plenipo* = plenipotentiary; an ambassador or envoy to a foreign Court, furnished with full power to negotiate a treaty or transact other business.

2. *St. James* = the English Court, so called from the Palace of St. James, used for Court purposes.

3. See the sketch of Holmes for a remark on this stanza.

4. *Titian* (1477-1576) was the head of the Venetian school, and one of the greatest painters that ever lived. The number of his works exceeds six hundred.

5. *Raphael* (1483-1520), called by his countrymen "the divine," is ranked by almost universal consent as the greatest of painters.

6. *Turner* (1775-1851) was the greatest of British landscape painters. By his industry and thrift he amassed a fortune of a million dollars.

7. *Stradivarius* (1644-1737) was a distinguished maker of violins. In this connection the following extract from Holmes's biography will be read with interest: "At one time the Doctor was seized with an ardent desire to learn to play upon the violin. I think there was not the slightest reason to suppose that he ever could learn, and certainly he never did; but he used to shut himself up in his little 'study,' beside the front door in the Charles-street house, and fiddle away with surprising industry, and a satisfaction out of all proportion to his achievement. After two or three winters he reached a point at which he could make several simple tunes quite recognizable, and then finally desisted from what would have been a waste of time had it not been a recreation."

8. *Buhl* = a light and complicated figure of brass, unburnished gold, etc., set as an ornament into surfaces of ebony or other dark wood.

9. *Midas* = a Phrygian king, to whom was granted the wish that whatever he touched might turn into gold.

#### THE DEACON'S MASTERPIECE

This is the best-known and the most popular of Holmes's humorous pieces. At the Breakfast Table one morning "the young fellow whom they call John" had proposed some conundrums before the Autocrat made his appearance. The Autocrat disapproved of their trifling character. Then, as introductory to the poem: "I am willing, — I said, to exercise your ingenuity in a rational and contemplative manner. No, I do not proscribe certain forms of philosophical speculation which involve an approach to the absurd or the ludicrous, such as you may find, for example, in the folio of the Reverend Father Thomas Sanchez, in his famous Disputations, 'De Sancto Matrimonio.' I will therefore turn this levity of yours to profit by reading you a rhymed problem, wrought out by my friend the Professor."

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

---

### HISTORY

JUSTIN WINSOR, "Narrative and Critical History of America."  
J. A. DOYLE, "English Colonies in America."  
JOHN FISKE, "Old Virginia and Her Neighbors."  
JOHN ESTEN COOKE, "Virginia" (Am. Commonwealth Series).  
JOHN FISKE, "The Beginnings of New England."  
GEORGE BANCROFT, "History of the United States."  
JAMES SCHOULER, "History of the United States."  
JAMES FORD RHODES, "History of the United States."

### HISTORIES OF AMERICAN LITERATURE

MOSES COIT TYLER, "A History of American Literature."  
C. F. RICHARDSON, "American Literature."  
BARRETT WENDELL, "A Literary History of America."  
EDMUND CLARENCE STEDMAN, "Poets of America."  
H. C. VEDDER, "American Writers of To-day."

### BIOGRAPHICAL CYCLOPÆDIAS

S. A. ALLIBONE, "A Critical Dictionary of British and American Authors."  
APPLETON, "Cyclopædia of American Biography."  
WHITE, "National Cyclopædia of American Biography."  
A. N. MARQUIS, "Who's Who in America."  
POOLE, "Index to Periodical Literature."

### ILLUSTRATIVE SELECTIONS

DUYCKINCK, "Cyclopædia of American Literature."  
STEDMAN and HUTCHINSON, "A Library of American Literature."  
E. C. STEDMAN, "American Anthology."  
G. R. CARPENTER, "American Prose."  
Library of Southern Literature.  
W. J. BRYAN, "The World's Famous Orators."

## BIOGRAPHY

HENRY ADAMS, "John Randolph" (Am. Statesmen Series).  
A. V. G. ALLEN, "Jonathan Edwards" (Am. Religious Leaders Series).  
W. M. BASKERVILLE, "Sidney Lanier" (So. Writers Series).  
H. A. BEERS, "N. P. Willis" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
JOHN BIGELOW, "William Cullen Bryant" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
RICHARD M. BURKE, "Life of Walt Whitman."  
HELEN CAMPBELL, "Anne Bradstreet and Her Time."  
EDWARD CARY, "George William Curtis" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
WILLIAM CLARKE, "Walt Whitman."  
M. D. CONWAY, "Nathaniel Hawthorne" (Great Writers Series).  
G. W. COOKE, "Life, Writings, and Philosophy of Emerson."  
GEO. T. CURTIS, "Life of Daniel Webster."  
BENJAMIN FRANKLIN, "Autobiography."  
RICHARD GARNETT, "Ralph Waldo Emerson" (Great Writers Series).  
PARKE GODWIN, "Life and Works of William Cullen Bryant."  
EDWARD EVERETT HALE, "Lowell and His Friends."  
JULIAN HAWTHORNE, "Nathaniel Hawthorne and His Wife."  
T. W. HIGGINSON, "Margaret Fuller Ossoli" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES, "Memoir of J. L. Motley."  
OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES, "Ralph Waldo Emerson" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
H. VON HOLST, "John C. Calhoun" (Am. Statesmen Series).  
J. H. INGRAM, "Memoir of Poe."  
HENRY JAMES, JR., "Nathaniel Hawthorne" (Eng. Men of Letters Series).  
W. J. LINTON, "John Greenleaf Whittier" (Great Writers Series).  
HENRY CABOT LODGE, "Alexander Hamilton" (Am. Statesmen Series).  
HENRY CABOT LODGE, "Daniel Webster" (Am. Statesmen Series).  
T. R. LOUNSBURY, "James Fenimore Cooper" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
J. T. MORSE, "Benjamin Franklin" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
J. T. MORSE, "Thomas Jefferson" (Am. Statesmen Series).  
J. T. MORSE, "Life and Letters of Oliver Wendell Holmes."  
W. S. PAULDING, "Literary Life of J. K. Paulding."  
S. T. PICKARD, "Life and Letters of Whittier."  
ERIC S. ROBERTSON, "Henry W. Longfellow" (Great Writers Series).  
H. S. SALT, "Henry D. Thoreau" (Great Writers Series).  
F. B. SANBORN, "Henry D. Thoreau" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
JAMES SCHOULER, "Thomas Jefferson" (Makers of America Series).  
ALBERT H. SMYTH, "Bayard Taylor" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
GEORGE TICKNOR, "Life of Prescott."  
W. P. TRENT, "William Gilmore Simms" (Am. Men. of Letters Series).

J. H. TWITCHELL, "John Winthrop" (Makers of America Series).  
F. H. UNDERWOOD, "John Greenleaf Whittier."  
F. H. UNDERWOOD, "James Russell Lowell."  
F. H. UNDERWOOD, "Henry W. Longfellow."  
CHAS. DUDLEY WARNER, "Life of John Smith."  
CHAS DUDLEY WARNER, "Washington Irving" (Am. Men of Letters Series).  
BARRETT WENDELL, "Cotton Mather" (Makers of America Series).  
J. G. WILSON, "Life and Letters of Fitz-Greene Halleck."  
G. E. WOODBERRY, "Edgar Allan Poe" (Am. Men of Letters Series).

#### MISCELLANEOUS

GEO. W. CURTIS, "Literary and Social Essays."  
J. T. FIELDS, "Yesterdays with Authors."  
O. B. FROTHINGHAM, "Transcendentalism in New England."  
F. V. N. PAINTER, "Poets of the South."  
F. V. N. PAINTER, "Poets of Virginia."  
E. P. WHIPPLE, "Recollections of Eminent Men."  
MATTHEW ARNOLD, "Discourses in America."  
JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL, "Emerson the Lecturer."  
G. P. LATHROP, "A Study of Hawthorne."  
HORACE E. SCUDDER, "Men and Letters."



## INDEX

Abbott, Jacob, 113.  
Abbott, John S. C., 113.  
Abbott, Lyman, 307.  
Abolition, agitation for, 127.  
Adams, Henry, 307.  
Adams, John, 73.  
Ade, George, 307.  
"A Forest Hymn," 475.  
Alcott, Amos Bronson, 113.  
Alcott, Louisa May, 307.  
Aldrich, Thomas Bailey, 307; sketch and critique of, 345-347.  
Allen, James Lane, 307.  
Allston, Washington, 113; influence on Irving, 150.  
American Literature, 3; brief period and future development of, 4; favorable conditions for, 5; periods of, 6.  
"Arsenal at Springfield, The," 537.  
"Art," Emerson's essay on, 501.  
Articles of Confederation, 80.  
Atherton, Gertrude F., 307.  
Austin, Jane Goodwin, 307.

Bacheller, Irving, 308.  
Bancroft, George, 114, 131.  
Bangs, John Kendrick, 308.  
"Barclay of Ury," 580.  
Barlow, Joel, 73; his "Columbiad," 87.  
Barr, Amelia Edith, 308.  
Bates, Arlo, 308.  
"Bay Psalm Book," 19.  
Beach, Rex, 308.  
Beecher, Henry Ward, 308.  
Berkeley, Sir William, 14.  
Bierce, Ambrose, 308.  
Billings, Josh. *See* Henry W. Shaw.  
Blair, James, 40.  
Boker, George Henry, 308.  
Boston News-Letter, 43.  
Boyesen, Hjalmar Hjorth, 308.

Brackenridge, Hugh Henry, 74.  
Bradford, William, 9.  
Bradstreet, Anne, 10, 22.  
Brainerd, David, 39.  
"Broken Heart, The," 454.  
Brook Farm, 217, 232.  
Brown, Alice, 309.  
Brown, Charles Brockden, 74, 84.  
Browne, Charles Farrar, 309.  
Bryant, William Cullen, sketch of, 175-191; genius and character, 175; moral element in literature, 175; ancestry, 176; precocity, 177; a youthful satire, 177; the study of law, 178; legal career, 178; love of nature, 179; "Thanatosis," 179; "To a Waterfowl," 180; new source of inspiration, 181; wedded happiness, 181; dissatisfaction with law, 182; "The Death of the Flowers," 182; *The Evening Post*, 183; prose writing, 183; harmless idiosyncrasies, 184; wide travels, 184; public addresses, 185; poetic vocation, 185; first volume, 186; English edition, 187; distinctive qualities, 187; translates the "Iliad" and "Odyssey," 188; country homes, 190; religious spirit, 190; sudden death, 190; illustrative selections, 472-486.  
"Building of the Ship, The," 538.  
Bunner, Henry Cuyler, 309.  
Burdette, Robert J., 309.  
Burnett, Frances Hodgson, 309.  
Burnham, Clara Louise, 309.  
Burroughs, John, 309.  
Byles, Mather, 39.  
Byrd, William, 40.

Cable, George W., 309; sketch of, 366-367.  
Carleton, Will, 309.  
Carman, Bliss, 309.

Cary, Alice and Phœbe, 309.  
 Catherwood, Mary H., 310.  
 Cawein, Madison Julius, 310.  
 "Chambered Nautilus, The," 597.  
 Chambers, Robert W., 310.  
 Channing, William Ellery, 114.  
 Charleston, a literary center, 108.  
 Cheney, John Vance, 310.  
 Chester, George Randolph, 310.  
 Child, Lydia Maria, 114.  
 Churchill, Winston, 310.  
 Civil War, The, a dividing line, 327; and literature, 328.  
 Clarke, James Freeman, 310.  
 Clemens, Samuel L., 310; rugged honesty of, 342; influence of, 343.  
 College of William and Mary, 15; location and purpose of, 15.  
 Colonization, 11; first English settlements, 11.  
 "Columbiad, The," our first epic, 87.  
 Congress, The Continental, 78.  
 Constitution, the framing of, 80.  
 "Contentment," 598.  
 Cooke, John Esten, 114, 137.  
 Cooke, Philip Pendleton, 114.  
 Cooke, Rose Terry, 310.  
 Cooper, James Fenimore, sketch of, 162-174; a national writer, 162; childhood, 163; school and college, 163; naval career, 163; domestic life, 164; first novel, 165; "The Spy," 165; "The Pioneers," 166; a tale of the sea, 166; "The Last of the Mohicans," 167; a New York Club, 168; a sojourn in Europe, 168; literary activity, 168; patriotic spirit, 169; loss of popularity, 169; suits for libel, 170; history of the navy, 170; the Leather-stockings series, 171; last years, 172; character, 172; literary shortcomings, 173; graphic description, 173; illustrative selection, 464-471.  
 Cotton, John, 9.  
 Country, Our, a world power, 330.  
 Craddock, Charles Egbert. *See* Mary N. Murfree.  
 Craigie, Pearl Mary-Teresa, 311.  
 Cranch, Christopher P., 311.  
 Crane, Stephen, 311.  
 Crawford, Francis Marion, 311.  
 Curtis, George William, 114.  
 Dana, Richard Henry, 114.  
 Dana, Richard Henry, Jr., 311.  
 Davies, Samuel, 40.  
 Davis, Richard Harding, 311.  
 "Deacon's Masterpiece, The," 600.  
 "Death of the Flowers," 479.  
 "Declaration of Independence," 423.  
 Deland, Margaret Wade, 311.  
*Dial, The*, 217.  
 Dixon, Thomas, 311.  
 Dodge, Mary A. (Gail Hamilton), 312.  
 Drake, Joseph Rodman, 114, 134.  
 Drama, first American, 50.  
 Dunbar, Paul Lawrence, 312.  
 Dunne, Finley Peter (Mr. Dooley), 312.  
 Dwight, Timothy, 73.

Education, in First Colonial Period, 17; in Second, 42; in First National, 121; since Civil War, 329.  
 Edwards, Jonathan, sketch of, 62-70; a great, austere life, 62; parentage and early training, 63; an observer of nature, 63; at Yale, 63; reading and study, 64; religious experience, 64; preacher and tutor, 64; seventy resolutions, 65; domestic life, 65; pulpit power, 66; "Great Awakening," 66; controversy and resignation, 67; missionary work, 67; "Freedom of the Will," 67; president of Princeton, 68; "History of Redemption," 69; last days, 69; estimate of, 69; illustrative selection, 414-422.  
 Eggleston, Edward, 312; sketch of, 381-384.  
 Eliot, John, 10.  
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo, sketch of, 208-226; a record of thought, 208; relative originality, 208; an idealistic philosopher, 209; his common sense, 210; ancestry and education, 210; teacher and preacher, 210; increasing doubt, 211; a trip abroad, 212; as a lecturer, 212; at Concord, 214; "Nature," 215; Transcendental Club, 215; Transcendentalism, 216; *The Dial*, 217; Brook Farm experiment, 217; first volume of Essays, 218; a simple studious life, 219; bereavement and consolation, 220; second volume of Essays, 220; second visit to England, 221; poetry, 222; a student of nature, 223; estimate of his

poetry, 224; literary method, 225; twilight years, 225; illustrative selection, 501-513.

England, mistaken policy of, 45.

"Evening Wind, The," 480.

Everett, Alexander H., 114.

Everett, Edward, 114.

Expansion, National, 330.

"Fancy's Show Box," 521.

"Federalist, The," 106.

Federalist and Anti-Federalist, 81.

Federation, attempts at, 48.

Field, Eugene, 312.

Fields, James T., 115.

First Colonial Period, 11.

First National Period, 120; growth in population, 120; the Mississippi Valley, 121; Manufacture and Commerce, 121; educational progress, 121; periodical literature, 122; favorable conditions, 122; the West and the South, 123; science and invention, 124; state rights, 126; slavery, 127; agitation for abolition, 127; Unitarian controversy, 128; transcendental movement, 129.

Fiske, John, 312.

"Footsteps of Angels," 531.

Ford, Paul Leicester, 312.

Foster, Stephen Collins, 115.

Fox, John, Jr., 312.

France, purpose of, 45.

Franklin, Benjamin, sketch of, 51-61; popularity of, 51; youth and education, 51; fondness for reading, 52; first literary effort, 52; in Philadelphia, 53; in England, 53; the Junto, 55; self-control and humility, 55; shrewdness and industry, 56; newspaper publisher, 56; "Poor Richard's Almanac," 56; interest in public affairs, 58; honors and educational activity, 58; plan for colonial union, 59; scientific experiments, 59; honors abroad, 60; governor of Pennsylvania, 61; closing years, 61; illustrative selection, 403-413.

Freeman, Mary E. Wilkins, 313.

French, Alice (Octave Thanet), 313.

Frenneau, Philip, 74.

Gale, Zona, 313.

Garland, Hamlin, 313.

Genius and character, 175.

Gilder, Richard Watson, 313.

Glasgow, Ellen A., 313.

Godfrey, Thomas, 40.

Goodrich, Samuel G., 115.

Goodwin, Maud Wilder, 313.

Grant, Robert, 313.

"Gray Champion, The," 514.

Green, Anna Katherine, 313.

Guiney, Louise Imogen, 313.

Hale, Edward Everett, 314; sketch of, 349-351.

Hale, Sarah Josepha, 115.

Halleck, Fitz-Greene, 115, 135.

Hamilton, Alexander, sketch of, 100-110; youthful ambition, 100; education, 101; a colonial patriot, 102; a pamphleteer, 102; resists a mob, 103; a military officer, 103; on Washington's staff, 103; an unpopular leader, 104; as a statesman, 105; marriage and independence, 105; labors in congress, 105; "The Federalist," 106; a forensic victory, 107; secretary of the treasury, 107; a cabinet feud, 108; rank as a publicist, 108; duel and death, 109; estimate of, 109; illustrative selection, 432-438.

Harland, Henry (Sidney Luska), 314.

Harris, Joel Chandler, 314.

Harris, William T., 314.

Harte, Francis Bret, 314; sketch of, 376-378.

Harvard College, 18.

Hawthorne, Julian, 314.

Hawthorne, Nathaniel, sketch of, 227-241; men of genius, 227; ancestry, 228; school days, 229; inclination to literature, 229; reading and observation, 230; study and seclusion, 230; "Twice-told Tales," 231; Boston custom-house, 232; at Brook Farm, 232; "The Blithedale Romance," 233; happy marriage, 234; "Mosses from an Old Manse," 234; portraits from the custom-house, 236; "The Scarlet Letter," 237; "House of the Seven Gables," 237; various literary labors, 238; irksome consular duties, 238; "Our Old Home," 239; travel and observation, 239; deep sense of sin, 239; failing strength and death,

240; character and genius, 240; illustrative selections, 514-529.

Hay, John, 314.

Hayne, Paul Hamilton, 115, 140.

Hearn, Lafcadio, 315.

"Height of the Ridiculous, The," 596.

Henry, O. *See* Sydney Porter.

Heredity, influence of, 100.

Herrick, Robert, 315.

Higginson, Thomas Wentworth, 315.

Hildreth, Richard, 315.

Hobbes, John Oliver. *See* Pearl Mary Teresa Craigie.

Holland, James Gilbert, 115.

Holley, Marietta, 315.

Holmes, Oliver Wendell, sketch of, 293-305; popularity, 293; independent aloofness, 293; versatility, 294; a believer in heredity, 294; "Autobiographical Notes," 295; class of '29, 295; student of medicine, 296; "Old Iron-sides," 296; practising physician, 297; first volume of verse, 297; a worthy helpmate, 298; professor at Harvard, 298; a popular lecturer, 298; "Autocrat of the Breakfast Table," 299; poems of the "Autocrat," 299; the Saturday Club, 300; laureate of Boston, 301; theological interest, 301; "The Professor at the Breakfast Table," 301; "The Poet at the Breakfast Table," 302; two "medicated novels," 302; as writer of biographies, 303; visit to England, 303; "Over the Teacups," 304; last years, 304; his broad sympathies, 305; illustrative selections, 594-608.

Hopkinson, Francis, 74.

Hopkinson, Joseph, 74.

Howard, Blanche Willis, 315.

Howe, Julia Ward, 315.

Howells, William Dean, 315; sketch of, 351-354.

Humor, American, 341.

Hunt, Helen. *See* Helen Fiske Jackson.

Hutchinson, Thomas, 39.

International relations of to-day, 330.

Invention and Science, 124.

Irving, Washington, sketch of, 147-161; our first man of letters, 147; childhood, 147; education and reading, 148; voyage to Europe, 148; genial spirit, 149; influence of Allston, 150; law and literature, 150; a taste of politics, 150; love and constancy, 151; "Knickerbocker's History," 151; business and legislation, 151; not a partisan, 152; merchant and editor, 152; long sojourn in Europe, 153; finds his vocation, 153; "The Sketch-Book," 153; a literary lion, 154; "Bracebridge Hall," 154; "Tales of a Traveller," 155; "Life of Columbus," 155; "Conquest of Granada," 156; secretary of legation, 156; return to America, 157; Sunnyside, 157; literary labors, 158; minister to Spain, 159; "Life of Goldsmith," 159; closing scenes, 160; illustrative selections, 430-463.

Jackson, Helen Fiske, 315.

James, Henry, 316; notable works, 336; style, 337.

Jefferson, Thomas, sketch of, 89-99; his rank, 89; ancestry, 90; at college, 90; legal career, 91; marriage, 91; committee of correspondence, 92; "Rights of British America," 93; in Congress, 93; Declaration of Independence, 94; law of religious freedom, 95; educational system, 95; varied public services, 95; secretary of state, 96; an advocate of State rights, 96; elected president, 96; the University of Virginia, 97; death, 98; estimate of, 98; illustrative selection, 423-431.

Jewett, Sarah Orne, 316.

Johnson, Edward, 10.

Johnston, Mary, 316.

Johnston, Richard Malcolm, 316.

Keller, Helen, 316.

Kennedy, John Pendleton, 116.

Key, Francis Scott, 116.

King, Charles, 316.

King, Grace Elizabeth, 316.

Kirk, Ellen Olney (Henry Hayes), 316.

"Knickerbocker School," 133.

Lanier, Sidney, 316; sketch of, 369-373.

Larcom, Lucy, 316.

Lathrop, George Parsons, 317.

Lawson, John, 40.

Lazarus, Emma, 317.

Leland, Charles Godfrey, 317.

Literary centers, 340.

Literature, importance of, 1; defined, 1; national, 1; restricted sense, 2; artistic, 2; potent influences in, 2; American, 3; of other nations, 4; future development of, 4; broadened literary culture, 5; periods of American, 6; narrow range of, 21.

Livingston, William, 39.

Locke, David Ross (Petroleum V. Nasby), 317.

Lodge, Henry Cabot, 317.

London, Jack, 317.

Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth, sketch of, 242-260; great popularity, 242; beauty of his life, 242; parentage, 243; early environment, 243; college career, 244; literary bent, 244; professor of modern languages, 245; "Outre Mer," 245; "Footsteps of Angels," 245; "Hyperion," 246; home in Cambridge, 246; methods as teacher, 247; a literary group, 248; "Voices of the Night," 248; "Ballads and Other Poems," 249; fundamental characteristics, 250; three notable things, 250; noteworthy volumes, 251; "Evangeline," 252; hostile criticism, 253; prose and poetry, 254; "Resignation," 254; "Hiawatha," 255; parody and ridicule, 255; "Courtship of Miles Standish," 256; some notable pieces, 256; bereavement and toil, 257; "Tales of a Wayside Inn," 257; "The Golden Legend," 258; "New England Tragedies," 259; "The Divine Tragedy," 259; several admirable poems, 259; death and burial, 259; illustrative selections, 530-554.

Lossing, Benson J., 116.

Lowell, James Russell, sketch of, 261-275; more than a writer, 261; New England spirit, 262; distinguished ancestry, 262; career at Harvard, 263; "A Year's Life," 263; editor of *The Pioneer*, 263; second volume of poetry, 264; fundamental beliefs, 264; "The Biglow Papers," 265; "What Mr. Robinson Thinks," 266; "A Fable for Critics," 267; course of lectures, 268; successor to Longfellow, 268; editorial labors, 269; "Fireside Travels," 269; "Under the Willows," 270; commemoration odes, 271; "The Cathedral," 272; wilful caprice, 273; prose writings, 273; as critic, 274; diplomatic career, 275; "Democracy and Other Addresses," 275; death, 275; illustrative selections, 555-575.

Lummis, Charles F., 317.

Luska, Sidney. *See* Henry Harland.

Mabie, Hamilton Wright, 317.

Macaulay, Fannie Caldwell, 317.

MacKaye, Percy, 318.

Madison, James, 74.

"Magnalia Christi," 34; extract from, 394.

Markham, Edwin, 318.

Marshall, John, 75.

Marvel, Ik. *See* Donald G. Mitchell.

"Masque of the Red Death," 490.

Mather, Cotton, sketch of, 30-36; a voluminous writer, 30; ancestry and education, 30; a type of Puritan culture, 31; a minister of the Gospel, 31; married life, 32; literary labors, 33; his "Magnalia Christi," 34; philanthropic labors, 35; work on witchcraft, 35; attitude toward vaccination, 35; disappointed ambition, 36; estimate of, 36; illustrative selection, 394-402.

Mather, Increase, 10.

Matthews, Brander, 318.

McCutcheon, George Barr, 318.

McMaster, John Bach, 318.

Melville, Herman, 318.

"Memories," 576.

Miller, Cincinnatus Heine (Joaquin Miller), 318; sketch of, 378-381.

Mitchell, Donald Grant (Ik Marvel), 318.

Mitchell, Silas Weir, 318.

Moody, William Vaughn, 319.

Moral element in literature, 175.

Morris, George P., 116.

Morris, Gouverneur, 319.

Motley, John Lothrop, 116, 132.

Moulton, Louise Chandler, 319.

Murfree, Mary Noailles, 319; sketch of, 367-369.

Nasby, Petroleum V. *See* David R. Locke.

Nation, growth of, 41; schools and newspapers, 42; sense of future greatness,

43; growing national feeling, 44; attempts at federation, 48; expansion, 120; a world power, 330.

New England, 16; landing of Puritans, 16; religious factor, 16; growth of colony, 17; popular intelligence in, 17; early establishment of schools, 17; literary preëminence of, 19.

Newspapers, in Second Colonial Period, 42; the first newspaper, 42.

Nicholson, Meredith, 319.

Novel, the modern, 332; the historical, 335; the international, 336.

O'Hara, Theodore, 116.

"Old Ironsides," 594.

O'Reilly, John Boyle, 319.

Originality, relative, 208.

Osgood, Frances Sargent, 116.

Ossoli, Margaret Fuller, 116.

Page, Thomas Nelson, 319.

Paine, Thomas, 74.

Palfrey, James Gorham, 116.

Parkman, Francis, 116.

Partington, Mrs. *See* Benjamin P. Shil-laber.

Paulding, James K., 117, 133.

Payne, John Howard, 117.

Percival, James Gates, 117.

Phillips, David Graham, 319.

Philosophy, and literature, 332.

Pinkney, Edward Coate, 117.

Poe, Edgar Allan, sketch of, 192-207; subject of controversy, 192; peculiar place in our literature, 192; parentage, 193; unfortunate rearing, 193; in England, 193; school days in Richmond, 194; at the University, 194; seeking his fortune, 195; at West Point, 195; his poetic principle, 196; imitation, 197; literary career in Baltimore, 198; a prize story, 198; *Southern Literary Mes-senger*, 198; slashing criticism, 199; "Arthur Gordon Pym," 199; quarrel with Burton, 199; editor of *Graham's Magazine*, 200; a violent assumption, 200; manner of life, 201; prose master-pieces, 201; "The Raven," 203; *Broad-way Journal*, 203; choicest poems, 204; poetic elements, 204; social gifts, 205; devotion and poverty, 205; sorrow and death, 206; a life tragedy, 206; illustrative selections, 487-500.

Poetry, its minor place at present, 344. "Poor Richard's Almanac," 56.

Porter, Sydney (O. Henry), 320.

Prentice, George D., 117.

Prescott, William Hickling, 117, 131.

"Present Crisis, The," 557.

Press, The, as educational agency, 329.

Preston, Margaret J., 320.

"Psalm of Life," 530.

Puritans, landing of, 16.

Queen Anne writers, influence of, 49.

"Raven, The," 487.

Read, Thomas Buchanan, 117.

Realism, 333; representatives of, 334.

Reconstruction, 328.

Religion, and literature, 331.

Repllier, Agnes, 320.

Revolutionary Period, 76; two important events, 76; patriotic heroism, 77; British tyranny, 77; spirit of liberty, 78; a group of statesmen, 78; independence, 79; defect of the Confederation, 80; Federalist and Anti-Federalist, 81; new government, 82.

Rice, Alice Hegan, 320.

Rice, Cale Young, 320.

Richmond, a literary center, 136.

Riley, James Whitcomb, 320.

Rinehart, Mary Roberts, 320.

"Rip Van Winkle," 439.

Rives, Amélie, 320.

Roe, Edward Payson, 320.

Romanticism, 333; the new, 335.

Roosevelt, Theodore, 320.

Rowson, Mrs. Susanna, 73.

Ryan, Abram Joseph, 321; sketch of, 373-375.

Sandys, George, 9, 21.

Sangster, Margaret M., 321.

Saxe, John Godfrey, 117.

Schools, established in Massachusetts, 17; in Second Colonial Period, 42; in First National, 121; since Civil War, 329.

Science, and invention, 124; scientific spirit, 125.

Scollard, Clinton, 321.

Scudder, Horace E., 321.  
 Seawell, Molly Elliot, 321.  
 Second Colonial Period, 41; national growth, 41; a guiding destiny, 41; schools and newspapers in, 42; growth of national feeling, 44; mistaken policy of England, 45; purpose of France, 45; a long struggle, 46; first steps towards union, 47; conditions favorable to literature, 48; influence of Queen Anne writers, 49.  
 Second National Period, 326; an era of transition, 326; diffusive critical literature, 326; homogeneous development, 327; war and reconstruction, 328; favorable conditions, 328; the press and schools, 329; a world power, 330; international relations, 330; social progress, 331; religion and literature, 331; influence of philosophy, 332.  
 Sedgwick, Catherine Maria, 117.  
 Seton, Ernest Thompson, 321.  
 Sewall, Samuel, 39.  
 Shaw, Henry Wheeler, 321.  
 Sherman, Frank Dempster, 321.  
 Shillaber, Benjamin P., 321.  
 "Ship-Builders, The," 578.  
 Short Story, The, 338; leading exponents of, 339.  
 Sigourney, Lydia Huntly, 117.  
 Simms, William Gilmore, 118, 138.  
 Sinclair, Upton, 321.  
 "Skeleton in Armor, The," 532.  
 Slavery, 127.  
 Smith, Captain John, sketch of, 24-29; his youth, 24; travel and adventure, 25; success and misfortune, 25; at Jamestown, 26; dissension and misfortune, 27; contemporary estimate, 27; explorations in New England, 28; an extraordinary man, 29; illustrative selection, 387-393.  
 Smith, Francis Hopkinson, 322.  
 Smith, Samuel F., 322.  
 Social progress, 331.  
 Spalding, John Lancaster, 322.  
 Sparks, Jared, 118.  
 Spofford, Harriet Prescott, 322.  
 State Rights, 126.  
 Stedman, Edmund Clarence, 322; sketch of, 354-357.  
 Stith, William, 40.  
 Stockton, Francis R., 322; sketch of, 359-361.  
 Stoddard, Richard Henry, 322; sketch of, 357-359.  
 Story, William Wetmore, 322.  
 Stowe, Harriet Beecher, 118.  
 Strachey, William, 9.  
 Stuart, Ruth McEnergy, 322.  
 Tabb, John B., 322.  
 Tarbell, Ida M., 323.  
 Tarkington, Newton Booth, 323.  
 "Tauler," 588.  
 Taylor, Bayard, 118.  
 Terhune, Mary Virginia (Marion Harland), 323.  
 "Thanatopsis," 472.  
 Thanet, Octave. *See* Alice French.  
 Thaxter, Celia, 323.  
 Thomas, Edith M., 323.  
 Thompson, John R., 118.  
 Thompson, Maurice, 323.  
 Thoreau, Henry David, 118.  
 Timrod, 118; sketch of, 143.  
 "To a Waterfowl," 474.  
 "To the Fringed Gentian," 478.  
 Tourgée, Albion Winegar, 323.  
 Transcendentalism, 216.  
 Transcendental movement, 129.  
 Trent, William P., 323.  
 Trowbridge, John T., 323.  
 Trumbull, John, 73; his "McFingal," 85.  
 Twain, Mark. *See* Samuel L. Clemens.  
 Union, first steps towards, 48  
 Unitarian controversy, 128.  
 Van Dyke, Henry, 312.  
 Virginia, 12; cavalier tone, 13; unfavorable literary conditions, 13; population agricultural, 14.  
 "Vision of Sir Launfal, The," 560.  
 Wallace, Lewis, 324.  
 Ward, Artemus. *See* Charles Farrar Browne.  
 Ward, Elizabeth Stuart Phelps, 324.  
 Ware, William, 118.  
 Warner, Charles Dudley, 324; sketch of, 347-349.  
 Washington, George, 75.

Wharton, Edith J., 324.  
 "What Mr. Robinson Thinks," 555.  
 Wheatley, Phillis, 73.  
 Whipple, E. P., 324.  
 Whitaker, Alexander, 9.  
 White, Richard Grant, 324.  
 White, Steward Edward, 324.  
 White, William Allen, 324.  
 Whitman, Walt, 324; sketch and critique of, 361-365.  
 Whitney, Adeline D. T., 324.  
 Whittier, John Greenleaf, sketch of, 277-292; the Burns of New England, 277; ancestry and early home, 277; poetic fire lighted, 278; poet and cobbler, 279; newspaper editing, 279; at Hartford, 280; anti-slavery movement, 280; mob violence, 281; "Voices of Freedom," 281; intense democracy, 282; "Songs of Labor," 282; a hidden romance, 283; a bard of faith, 283; contributions to the *National Era*, 284; "The Last Walk in Autumn," 285; prose writing, 285; "Home Ballads," 285; the Civil War, 286; "Snow-bound," 287; "The Tent on the Beach," 289; declining years, 290; characteristics of his poetry, 290; personal traits, 291; closing scene, 291; illustrative selections, 576-588.

Wiggin, Kate Douglas (Mrs. Geo. C. Riggs), 325.  
 Wigglesworth, Michael, 39.  
 Wilcox, Ella Wheeler, 325.  
 Wilde, Richard Henry, 118.  
 Willis, Nathaniel P., 118.  
 Wilson, Alexander, 74.  
 Wilson, Augusta Jane Evans, 325.  
 Wilson, Woodrow, 325.  
 Winter, William, 325.  
 Winthrop, John, 9.  
 Wirt, William, 75.  
 Wister, Owen, 325.  
 Women, as writers, 344; a New England group of, 351.  
 Woodberry, George Edward, 325.  
 Woodworth, Samuel, 119.  
 Woolson, Constance Fenimore, 325.  
 Wright, Harold Bell, 325.  
 "Yankee Doodle," 86.







LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 017 165 738 6 •